

モブに敵 しゆ世界は 世界です

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS.

03

三嶋与夢
イラスト／孟達



Table of Contents

Table of Contents.....	2
Illustrations	4
Prologue.....	12
Part 2	26
Chapter 1: Elven Village	37
Part 2	53
Part 3	67
Chapter 2: Secret of the Ruins	80
Chapter 3: Fate	109
Chapter 4: The Other Side.....	145
Chapter 5: False Saint	188
Chapter 6: Bond	229
Chapter 7: Destiny	261
Chapter 8: Departure	307
Chapter 9: Devil	336
Chapter 10 – Livia’s Power.....	363
Chapter 11: The Power of Love	405
Chapter 12: A Cruel Truth	436
Chapter 13: Game Clear	464
Epilogue	493
Extra Story – Rude and Rauda.....	534
Afterword	539
Short Story – Marie Route	542
Short Story – Marie Route The Second	595
Credits.....	707

Download all your fav Light Novels at

Just Light Novels

Illustrations

モブに敵は世界です

乙女ゲー世界は03

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FIGHT FOR MORE

三島与夢
イラスト／孟達





リオン——私の夫になれ

そんなお前だから惚れた。
お前が欲しい。

絶対に放しません

リオンさんだから、
私は好きになつたんです。

知らないぞ。愛想が尽きて
婚約なんかじなれば
よかつた、

なんて思うかもしないよ

『この馬鹿。泣き疲れるくらいなら歩けばよかつたんだ』

文句を言いたいマリエだったが、涙が流れる。

背負われた自分は安堵して眠っていた。

涎を垂らし、兄の服が汚れる。

どうせ文句を言うのだろうと思つていたら、

『何で俺に頼るかな』

少しだけ嬉しそうな兄の顔を見て、

マリエは胸元に手を当てて握りしめた。

そうだ。兄は——口は悪いが優しかったと、マリエは思い出す。

THE WORLD OF OTOMIE GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR WORKS.

登場人物紹介

ヘルトラウダ・セラ・ファンオース

ファンオース公国の第二王女。第一王女であるヘルトルーデの実の妹。よく似た姉妹だが、魔笛の扱いに関して言えばヘルトラウダの方が優れている。



ファンオース公国

カイル

少し生意気なマリエの専属使用人。ハーフエルフだが、見た目はエルフと変わらない。仕事はこなすが、生意気でマリエに甘えているところがある。



ダニエル・フォウ・ダーランド

リオンの友人その1。スポーツをしているためか筋肉質で、短髪の好青年。健康的な小麦色の肌をしている。



ホルファート王国

カラ・フォウ・ウェイン

準男爵家の次女。寄親であったオフリー伯爵家が空賊と繋がっていたことが判明し取りつぶしなったため、何の後ろ盾も無くなり学園では王国の裏切り者として蔑みの対象となっている。



レイモンド・フォウ・アーキン

リオンの友人その2。眼鏡をかけたインテリ風の色白な男子。少し口が悪く扱われた性格で、インドア派。



CHARACTERS

プロローグ	007
第01話 「エルフの里」	030
第02話 「遺跡の秘密」	072
第03話 「因縁」	101
第04話 「裏側」	137
第05話 「偽りの聖女」	179
第06話 「絆」	220
第07話 「運命」	249
第08話 「出陣」	299
第09話 「魔人」	315
第10話 「リビアの力」	340
第11話 「愛の力」	378
第12話 「残酷な真実」	407
第13話 「ゲームクリア」	433
エピローグ	460
番外編 「ルーデとラウダ」	499

GC NOVELS

乙女ゲー世界は★03 THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS. モブに厳しい世界です

2019年4月3日初版発行

著者 みしま よむ
三嶋与夢

イラスト モンダ
孟達

発行人 武内静夫

編集 伊藤正和

装丁 森昌史

印刷所 株式会社平河工業社

発行 株式会社マイクロマガジン社

〒104-0041 東京都中央区新富1-3-7 ヨドコウビル
〔販売部〕TEL 03-3206-1641/FAX 03-3551-1208
〔編集部〕TEL 03-3551-9563/FAX 03-3297-0180
<http://micromagazine.net/>

ISBN978-4-89637-864-1 C0093

©2019 Mishima Yomu ©MICRO MAGAZINE 2019 Printed in Japan

本書は小説投稿サイト「小説家になろう」(<http://syosetu.com/>)に掲載されていたものを、
加筆の上書籍化したものです。

定価はカバーに表示しております。

乱丁、落丁本の場合は送料弊社負担にてお取り替えいたしますので、販売営業部宛にお送りください。

本書の無断転載は、著作権法上の例外を除き、禁じられています。

この物語はフィクションであり、実在の人物、団体、地名などとは一切関係ありません。

ファンレター、作品のご感想をお待ちしています!

宛 先

〒104-0041 東京都中央区新富1-3-7 ヨドコウビル

株式会社マイクロマガジン社 GCノベルズ編集部「三嶋与夢先生」係「孟達先生」係

右の二次元コードまたはURL (<http://micromagazine.net/me/>) を
ご利用の上、本書に関するアンケートにご協力ください。

- ご協力いただいた方全員に、書き下ろし特典をプレゼント!
- スマートフォンにも対応しています（一部対応していない機種もあります）。
- サイトへのアクセス、登録メール送信時の際にかかる通信費はご負担ください。



THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS.



The World of Otome Games

Prologue

What is love?

I, “Leon Fou Baltfault”, am an honest, slightly reserved youth who’s been thinking about such philosophical matters.

I also happen to be an ordinary schoolboy who had reincarnated into “that” otome game, the one I had been forced to play against my will during my previous life.

I’m a virtuous guy who loves peace, but in this otome game world, I’m just a mob who doesn’t stand out that much.

At least, that’s what it was supposed to be!

For some reason, I’ve been promoted to a viscount.

Being of the lower fourth rank within the royal court, I’m in quite the grandiose situation.

While still being a student, a very opportune position as a lower fourth ranked viscount awaits me.

Due to that—I’ve been worried about matters relating to love.

Sometimes, there’s the cliche where love will solve everything in a story, and there’s no doubt that the otome game follows that pattern.

Love determines everything.

Even Luxon, the supposedly undefeatable endgame boss, would have been defeated by the love between the protagonist and the male capture targets, resulting in a happy ending.

All matters are resolved by love.

Love is a big deal in this world.

A force more potent than any weapon.

An influence more potent than any diplomatic endeavor.

Domestic affairs will resolve themselves as long as love is there to help.

Love is a big deal. Love is supreme! Love will save the world!

—In this world, love is the ultimate weapon.

On that topic,

“Why did things come to this?”

[It's all your own doing, Master.]

I'm not in the wrong at all, and yet my accomplice “Luxon” was being cold.

It took the form of a metallic sphere with one red eye.

Its main body is a spaceship equipped with an AI.

The softball-sized sphere is an extension of it—a mere computer terminal.

By all rights, it's supposed to be more respectful to me, its master.

However, this thing is way too harsh towards me.

Still, it's quite capable, so I keep it nearby since it's a frightening thing that will do who knows what while spouting “Exterminate the new humans!” if I take my eyes off it.

Good grief, nothing but incompetents all around me.

Now then, stopping my escapism, I glanced at a pile of letters piling up on my desk.

The amount of letters sent to my dorm had reached the point where they made a mountain.

“It’s quite the new experience to have this much of a turnaround happen.”

The senders of those letters were girls from the academy’s advanced class.

Though the contents of the letters were pretty condescending, there were some braver ones who wrote something like “make preparations for a tea ceremony three days from now.”

The girls who ignored my invitations for tea ceremonies up until now had made a complete 180 the moment I got promoted and wrote letters to take the initiative.

“—This is too much.”

This situation is pretty discomforting.

It’s a little amusing to think that the girls who took no notice of me up until now were suddenly trying to get closer to me.

However, the fact of the matter is that this is not ideal.

—Pull back. It’s normal to pull back here. This is discomforting.

[Your promotion was made final prior to winter break.]

During the school trip in the second semester, troops from the Fanoss Principality had attacked.

I managed to drive them away somehow, but the actions I took during that time ended up with me being promoted.

Due to that, the girls made a frightening turnabout when I came back to the academy.

It's especially frightening now that I'm going from the second semester into the third semester.

"They're not attracted to my own self, but to my status and property. How low of them."

[This is a matter of marriages between nobles, so there's not much meaning to ones own self in the first place. In fact, take a look at this letter.]

—A single letter floated up.

I took it to look over its contents.

It seems that Luxon's able to check the contents of a letter without opening the envelope.

What a convenient thing.

"Is there something interesting written here? Whoa."

When I looked at the contents of the letter, they were yet again terrible.

Written inside were someone's conditions for marriage, including the construction of a residence in the royal capital that can hold about ten people and to also look after her troublesome lovers.

Are the girls who present such harsh conditions sane?

Then again, I'm dealing with the academy's girls.

Women domineer over men—this is the reality of "that otome game".

When the game world became a reality, things were so harsh that I felt the strange urge to laugh.

[All the girls are quite awful. Just whose child are they are planning to give birth to?]

“If I were to get married, I would want to produce a heir and then just live a free life. It’s not like I’m asking for something unusual. I mean, my father’s legal wife is doing the same.”

Are these kinds of things even allowed?

—Unfortunately, this world indeed allows such things.

This really is a cruel world.

[It’s odd that marriages are this bizarre. Considering that males are few in number, it wouldn’t be strange if marriage was male-dominated. I’ve noticed that it’s particularly bad for those of the baron and viscount ranks.]

The ranks above and below those don’t have it as bad.

In fact, most marriages for earl families and above are under quite normal conditions.

I can’t say that they’re all like that though. There are some bad households too.

“This is an otome game, right? No matter how deeply I think about it, I won’t find an answer.”

Could it be that? Could it be the fact that the girls walk around with sub-race exclusive servants?

When trying to implement that setting into the world, could it have created this kind of inconsistent reality?

This is going nowhere. Thinking about it won't bring up any answers.

That being the case, I'd rather not think about it.

After dumping the pile of letters into the trash, Luxon spoke to me.

[Oh? You're not going to invite anyone to a tea ceremony?
Considering who you are, I was thinking that you'd take the time to
be naggy and make some snide remarks towards the girls who
proposed a tea ceremony with you.]

"Just who do you think I am? Such a kind and ordinary person like me
would never do such a thing."

[By all means, I'd like to hear what your definition of an ordinary
person is. I think that what the general public believes an ordinary
person is and what you believe an ordinary person is are different.]

"You're being noisy. Whatever, let's finish this."

Certainly, I thought about being naggy and making some snide
remarks, but in the first place, it would be troublesome having to
hold a tea ceremony for those girls who made a complete 180.

Despite how things look, I'm busy.

I have to make some tea for Livia—the protagonist of this otome
game world, known officially as "Oliva."

I also have to do the same with Anjie—the daughter of a duke,
known officially as "Anjelica Rafua Redgrave."

Furthermore, I'm also anticipating that I'll have to make tea for the
second year student Clarice and the third year student Deirdre.
Those two helped me out with some things, so I wouldn't be able to
refuse if they asked me for some tea.

I also got some high-class tea leaves and a tea set, making it tough for me to refuse.

Huh? Now that I think about it, the only people I'm having tea with are girls.

—Well, whatever.

Leaving that aside, there's one bigger problem.

I have suspicions that "Marie Fou Lafuan" is someone who reincarnated here, just like me—she's the youngest daughter of a poor viscount family, but has been officially recognized as a saint.

Normally, if one knew about that otome game, they absolutely wouldn't snatch away the title of the saint.

After all, in order to defeat the final boss—Livia's own power is necessary.

It's become evident that I have to take measures against Marie, who disregarded such risks and impersonated as the saint.

"Seriously, why did things turn out this way?"

[Isn't this your own doing, Master?]

Is this thing planning to make all of this my responsibility?



One girl sat on a bench with a gloomy aura.

Her navy blue, long hair was fairly disheveled.

There were noticeable stains and tears on her uniform.

Her name was "Cara Fou Wein."

Her household was that of a semi-baron's, being classified as a knight household under the Holfault Kingdom.

She was formerly under the guardianship of the Olfery earl household, but the Olfery household had been destroyed.

The head of the family and the heir were executed for joining forces with sky pirates.

The other family members were deprived of their status and assets.

The Olfery household's daughter, who Cara had followed, disappeared from the academy.

The households who were closely under their guardianship had also disappeared. Practically all people related to the Olfery earl household had disappeared from the academy.

Even so, Cara remained in the school.

Perhaps it could be said that she was left behind.

Though the fact of the matter was that her household had no relation to the sky pirates, there were other factors contributing to her situation.

A group of girls happened to pass by Cara, who hung her head.

“Look, it’s the traitor.”

“What a disgrace to the nobles. She should just hurry up and vanish.”

“She was involved with sky pirates, so why is she still in this academy?”

—Her situation served as a sort of warning.

Given no option to quit school, Cara had to accept her current position.

“I—I...”

From Cara’s point of view, a follower like herself had no right of veto.

She knew very well about the Olfery household’s conduct, and also knew that they would dispose of anyone who made the mistake of opposing them.

However, now that the Olfery family been torn apart, she was being treated as a traitor.

“What was I supposed to do? What could I have done?”

She couldn’t defy the Olfery household’s daughter.

It was obvious that she would have suffered a bitter fate if she did.

If she betrayed them, it was highly likely that she would be crushed and have further revenge await her.

Under such circumstances, what could she have done?

(Even I had to put up with that woman. And yet...)

While weeping and thinking of such things, a small girl approached the group.

She was someone acknowledged by the temple as a saint—Marie.

(She sure has a lot of followers.)

Marie never had a single follower up until recently, but after becoming a saint, people gathered around her.

As a saint and as the former crown prince’s lover, Marie was someone to be sought after.

It was inevitable that noble children would draw closer to her.

The girls who had badmouthed Marie before were now praising her.

“Marie, you’re as lovely as ever today.”

“As usual, your clothing today is superb. You have such good taste.”

“Marie, a new cafe opened up. Would you like to visit it together?”

The girls in the academy made a complete 180.

Furthermore, exclusive servants and boys accompanied those girls, resulting in there being many people around Marie.

Under such a situation, Marie—

“Sheesh, didn’t I say that you could address me casually?”

—was having a lot of fun.

“But, doing such a thing would be too much.”

While the girls were bewildered, Marie made a smile.

“I prohibit addressing me so politely. I mean, aren’t we already close friends?”

“Marie, such benevolence you possess!”

“Jeez, I said to stop that~.”

Cara looked at Marie, who was asking the girls to stop while enjoying her time, and cast her eyes downward.

(They’re going to bully me again if they don’t go away soon.)

Cara, who had put Marie’s lovers Brad and Greg into a trap, had stayed away from Marie for fear of retaliation from her.

A girl, seeing Cara, made a loud voice.

“Oh my, it’s the one whose been a disgrace to us nobles.”

Cara, whose shoulders quivered, quickly attempted to flee, but was blocked by the boys.

“You’re still in this academy?”

“How can someone like you call yourself a noble?”

“How truly annoying.”

Normally, the boys would be reserved in front of the girls, but were allowed to do as they pleased with Cara and began taking the offensive.

People gradually gathered and surrounded Cara.

The people around laughed at her as she became frightened and curled herself into a ball.

As she quivered and shook, Marie then approached.

When Marie’s hand approached Cara, the latter closed her eyes and braced herself for an impact.

However, no matter how long she waited, she didn’t feel a slap, nor did anything happen to her.

As she nervously opened her eyes, she saw Marie smiling while reaching a hand out to her.

“Huh? U, um?”

“You must be Cara. A lot had happened, but let’s be friends.”

The surrounding people were surprised at what Marie said and advised her against it.

“Marie, this is the girl who led Brad and Greg into a trap. Besides, she’s a traitor connected to sky pirates.”

Marie shook her head towards that.

“There must be some reason for why she’s here. It seems that she already apologized as well, so it’s fine. Besides, it’s not good for everyone to gang up on someone and bully them.”

The people around her went silent.



After speaking, Marie took Cara's hand.

The small Marie grasped Cara's hand while making an expression of respect.

"So, Cara. You and I should be friends."

Cara was delighted. She shed tears while nodding towards Marie, who seemed to be sparkling.

"R, right."



Part 2

(As if anyone could forgive you.)

Marie kept a smile in front of the weeping Cara.

While mouthing some lip service, she harbored malicious thoughts on the inside.

(It seems that Brad and Greg took care of it, but I do like how that mob guy got caught up in the trap. If you become my follower, that mob will certainly be furious.)

That mob guy—was Leon.

A man with a sharp tongue who always interfered with her plans and resembled her older brother.

Marie hated Leon since looking at him brought back memories of her older brother.

(If it means seeing him get frustrated, I wouldn't mind forgiving Cara. All things considered, I'm such a good woman for forgiving a bad girl such as her!)

She had snatched away the capture targets of the otome game from the protagonist, Olivia, also known as Livia.

She also snatched away the exclusive servant Kyle, along with the position and fame of being a saint.

Those were all things she had to do for the sake of her livelihood, but Leon was an obstacle to her entire plan.

(That mob guy is giving me a hard time. But, it's my time to shine from now on. I'll be sure to get my revenge.)

Marie wasn't too sure about the details, but in this world—the saint was a special existence for the Holfaul Kingdom.

In particular, if a commoner were to be selected as the saint, then they would be able to marry the crown prince.

There are items that can only the saint can use, and those could enhance Marie's power.

(I took the status of a saint from that naive Olivia, but I will resolve everything in her place, so it should be no problem. Now then, I wonder how I should torment that mob? At any rate, now that the people who once made light of me are now trying to get on my good side—this feels a little nice!)

The girls had looked at her with hostility before, but they were now trying to butter her up.

Marie was enjoying her current situation.

(It's great knowing that the people who looked down on me, thinking that I'm a poor match for Julian and the others or that I'm just a poor noble, are now trying to earn my approval! At this rate, I'll rise to the top of the world.)

Her aim was the crown princess. She pondered about how to make Julian the crown prince again as a first order of business.

Chris then appeared. "Chris Fier Arkwright"—a young man who had blue hair, blue eyes, a dignified countenance, and wore glasses.

"Marie, this is where you were?"

Marie felt at ease when Chris approached her in delight.

The surrounding followers, particularly the girls, blushed and felt charmed when looking at Chris.

“What’s the matter?”

“I’m here to deliver a letter sent to you, Marie.”

Marie, after saying her thanks and taking the letter, widened her eyes upon seeing who the sender was.

“What’s wrong, Marie?”

“I, it’s nothing. I, I suddenly remembered some business I have to take care of, so I’ll be heading off.”

Not listening to the surrounding people’s attempts to stop her, Marie dashed away to find a place where she could be alone.

Upon hiding in a place away from plain sight, she opened the envelope with trembling hands.

“C, calm down. It’ll be fine. I’m already the saint. I don’t know what my household is going to do, but I will protect everyone.”

The letter was sent from her parents.

Upon taking out the letter and reading its contents, Marie crumbled down.

“Why is this happening?!”

Clutching the letter while weeping, Marie couldn’t help but scream.

The contents of the letter stated that her parents would use her name to repay the huge debt that they accumulated.

Marie had not been blessed in her second life.

Her other siblings also used Marie’s name to do as they pleased.

Marie’s feelings, which had reached their peak just before, now plummeted to their lowest.

“I hate debt!”

Marie, who had a disdain for debt after her experience in her previous life, continued crying.



I was walking in the academy building with Livia.

Livia, who had light brown bobbed hair, walked while clutching her textbooks and notebooks.

“It’s troublesome having to move between classes.”

Most of the classes at the academy are a pain since we have to keep moving to each one.

I had hoped that the teachers would be the ones moving between classrooms, like how it was in my previous life.

Livia looked at me with her blue eyes.

“Leon, aren’t you tired?”

She looked at my condition, worried that I perhaps might be tired out.

Amidst the many heartless women in the academy, this girl gives me comfort.

Furthermore, she’s the protagonist of that otome game.

Livia was supposed to be the one chosen as the saint, not Marie.

“I suddenly got a lot of invitations, so it’s been a pain having to reject all of them.”

When I talked about my troubles with the girls who changed their minds about me, Livia seemed just a bit delighted.

“You’re a hero after all, Leon.”

—I’ve been labeled as a hero who defeated the army from the Fanoss Principality.

Due to that, I’ve been promoted despite my wishes.

“I’m not cut out for being a hero though.”

“Are there any women who interest you?”

“None. Maybe next year.”

I hate girls who make a complete 180 and try to get on my good side.

“Though, I heard that your reputation will worsen if you don’t hold a tea ceremony, Leon.”

“My reputation? If it worsens, that’s absolutely fine. Being treated like a hero is strange. Besides, having a tea ceremony with you and Anjie is all I need.”

When I mentioned that she was enough, Livia’s cheeks turned slightly red while seeming glad.

However, that soon changed into a blank look, perhaps remembering something.

“—But, you invited Clarice and Deirdre to tea as well, right?”

When Livia said that as if to question me, I turned my face away from her gaze.

“Hahaha! Enough of that, we’ll be late for class if we don’t hurry.”

“Leon, you’re just running away.”

Livia was amazed at how I dodged the question with a smile, but was then puzzled she spotted a crowd in the hallway.

“What’s happening?”

Everyone was focusing on a bulletin board in front of them.

There were lot of things attached to the board, but it’s strange that a crowd would gather.

“Curious, isn’t it? Want to take a quick peek?”

When peeking at the bulletin board through the gaps between people, there was a poster about studying abroad.

Its contents stated that they were recruiting students to study in the Alzer Republic.

“—It’s about studying abroad in some foreign location. It seems to be for a year.”

“A foreign place? This academy really has a lot going for it.”

The impressed Livia seemed a bit interested.

However, I didn’t think that people would gather around a study abroad poster.

As I tried to leave, I pushed my way through the crowd until I spotted my friend, “Raymond Fou Arkin”. He had a slightly tired expression.

“You’re interested in studying abroad too?”

When I called out to him, Raymond readjusted his glasses and looked at me.

“Leon? Wait, you were talking about studying abroad?”

I pointed towards the bulletin board for Raymond, who didn’t seem to be feigning ignorance.

“You weren’t looking at the study abroad poster?”

“Nope. The crowd here is gathering due to the establishment of bodyguards.”

“Bodyguards?”

People were gathering here because of a bodyguard recruitment?

Though, it's not like the academy would be a place to recruit bodyguards for royalty.

“Bodyguarding who?”

“Well, wouldn't it be the saint?”

According to Raymond, the royal palace and temple were preparing bodyguards for that annoying Marie.

“Though they're forming a bodyguard squad for the saint, it seems that there's something unique this time.”

“Unique? What?”

“Well, you see—the saint is Marie, right? Her lovers are quite special people, to the point that not only the temple, but the royal palace is also involved with the process of forming the squad.”

Livia seemed to understand.

“—This has to do with his Highness Julian and the others, doesn't it?”

Raymond nodded.

“Right. In short, people are making a big deal out of the fact that his Highness Julian didn't go wrong with the woman he chose. There are even rumors that his Highness will return to being the crown prince and that the saint will become the crown princess.”

—During the finale of that otome game, the protagonist became the saint, earned the recognition of the people around her, and became united with the capture targets in marriage.

It seems that the same is happening despite Marie being the saint now.

What an annoying girl.

“So the people who want to gain connections with her are trying to be her bodyguards. However, I didn’t think you’d be interested, Raymond.”

When I said that, Raymond made a bitter smile.

“It’s kind of for a different reason though. I’m not saying I don’t have ulterior motives, but I’ve been thinking about some special measures.”

Special measures? I guess I’ll listen to what he means by that.

“The saint’s bodyguards are chosen by knights. Not the temple’s knights, but formal knights.”

“So they’re not entrusting it to the temple.”

“Right. Because of that, if one were to become a bodyguard, they would have the title of a knight. That’s not all! It seems that they can even have a bride, regardless of bloodline.”

“—Raymond, do you mean...”

“Yeah, I do. While being recognized as a knight in the royal palace, their wife doesn’t have to be the daughter of a noble.”

The temple’s knights aren’t formal knights.

They had some nobles, but they were comprised of commoners.

Some of them were nobles who were tired of marriage-searching and became temple knights.

In many cases, they're badmouthed as dropouts, but they're treated as formal knights.

Furthermore, since the people being enlisted as Marie's bodyguards are considered temple knights, it seems that it doesn't matter where their wives originate from.

In other words, they're not stripped of their status in noble society while also being able to escape from their marriage-searching.

When I looked at the boys gathering around the bulletin board, they were all being serious.

"I would immediately apply if it weren't for that girl being the one I have to bodyguard!"

I couldn't help but feel frustrated.

Raymond answered me in a calm manner.

"Well, as a feudal lord, you wouldn't be able to apply, Leon. Though I'm in the same boat, heirs can't be bodyguards."

"—What? That frustration was for nothing."

Now that I think about it, it would be a precarious situation having a heir be Marie's bodyguard.

Such a position doesn't seem temporary, so it wouldn't be a job suitable for a boy who will succeed a household eventually.

Raymond also seemed frustrated.

"All things considered, you seem to hate the saint, don't you Leon?"

"I would absolutely loathe being her bodyguard."

While Raymond was shocked, Livia noticed a person approaching.
“Leon.”

Feeling a tug on my sleeve, I turned around to see Anjie walking over with a serious look.

She seemed a bit tense and uneasy about something.

I had a bad feeling, but while shrugging it off and telling myself that it would be fine, Anjie spoke.

“This is where you were? Leon—I got in touch with my home just a while ago.”

Raymond soon hid behind my back once Anjie came.

Since Anjie’s the daughter of a duke, people can’t help but see her as someone untouchable.

“Got in touch?”

Anjie, seeing a worried Livia, gave her a slight smile.

These two are quite close friends, but—according to that otome game, Anjie was supposed to be the villainess, the protagonist’s love rival and foe.

She has sparkling blond hair and fierce red eyes.

Anjie has a sort of aura around her, something that overwhelms the surrounding people.

That aura softens when Livia’s with her.

“Don’t worry. It’s not anything bad.”

Despite having said that, Anjie was nervous.

“What happened?”

Anjie looked straight at my face.

Her scarlet eyes looked as if they could swallow me whole.

Also, it's a bit difficult having her look this way when her ample chest is in my line of sight.

—It's actually a bit troubling that both of them have quite the chests.

“Leon, this is serious.”

While thinking that I perhaps revealed my thoughts, I broke into a cold sweat as Anjie spoke.

“You’ve been tentatively placed as the saint’s bodyguard.”

“—Say what?”

I responded with confusion.

Chapter 1: Elven Village

There was a conference room in the royal palace.

The chief vassal and other involved officials gathered there, discussing the matter of the saint's bodyguards.

The people unanimously voiced their complaints about the temple.

"The priests are getting carried away."

"Are they planning to take the budget for the saints bodyguards out of the royal palace's funds?"

"There's also the matter of his Highness Julian and his crew. If we make the mistake of rejecting the plan, we won't know how they'll react."

They viewed Marie becoming the saint as a problem.

They believed that of all people, the most troublesome woman had become the saint.

That was due to Marie getting a hold of the former crown prince and one by one, ensnaring the heirs of other prestigious noble households.

It seemed that the temple was supporting Julian, who fell in love with the saint, and were planning to have him become the crown prince again.

It was obvious that they were trying to seize power.

Within the meeting venue, Anjie's father Vince also happened to be present.

Vince was a duke, but due to Julian losing his position, his faction shrunk. He appeared to the meeting, but had little influence.

He watched over the meeting and its course of events.

A noble of the royal court, “Bernard Fier Atlee,” whispered to Vince in a low voice.

Bernard, who was plump and had a characteristic small mustache, sought confirmation from Vince.

“Is this really alright?”

“Even if I were to oppose, it wouldn’t change the decision. You already know that—Minister.”

Bernard worked as a minister.

He was an earl who distanced himself from the rising faction, a faction centered around the marquis named “Malcom Fou Frampton.”

Furthermore, he was Clarice’s father.

“I personally feel a bit awkward about it since I’m indebted to him, but it’s a fact that he’s the only suitable person. I can’t help but give him my approval.”

“He’s neither under my guardianship, nor is he my pupil. There’s no need to worry about it.”

As they were speaking, Frampton opened his mouth.

In response, the nobles shut their mouths.

Frampton, a slim marquis, was tall and had deep wrinkles on his face.

His nose was long and his beard reached down to his chest.

His facial features were profound and his eyes were large, as if they would pop out.

(He seems quite unwell. A lot must have happened.)

Though he tried to hide some of his tiredness with makeup, Vince could perceive his state.

“It seems that all opinions have been brought out. Now then, I would like to make this venue’s opinion the opinion of the royal palace, but are there any objections?”

When Frampton glanced around, nobody offered any opposition.

Vince was the same.

(—What a farce.)

He already knew that this had turned into a meeting within the faction.

Frampton looked at Vince, narrowed his eyes, and made a smile.

It was the face of someone convinced of their victory.

“There’s something I’d like to say about the duke Redgrave household, but we’re here to talk about the kingdom. I want you all to understand that.”

“Even when I didn’t voice any opposition?”

After Vince replied, a young noble from Frampton’s faction stood up and announced the matter of the decision.

“Well then—Viscount Leon Fou Baltfault will be appointed as the commanding officer of the saint’s bodyguards.”

The surrounding people voiced some complaints, all towards Leon.

“That promoted guy as a bodyguard of the saint?”

“At least we can track his whereabouts by finding where the bodyguards are.”

“The issue is that guy’s lost item. Shouldn’t we get a hold of it before the temple double-crosses us?”

“You mean getting a hold of a treasure he obtained from an adventure? That goes against national policy.”

“Perhaps if he were to relinquish it of his own accord.”

“Would that really be okay though?”

Those who were alert about Marie raised voices of concern about Leon’s disposition.

In a short period of time, prestigious nobles had successively been ensnared by her.

Next, Leon might be the one who’s ensnared.

If that were to happen, perhaps he would take the side of the temple.

A young noble boldly responded to such voices of concern.

“I understand how all of you feel. However, during summer break he managed to defeat his Highness Julian and the others in a duel, furthermore taunting them to the point of leaving the audience speechless despite it being their second duel. Since he has such a relationship with them, he will not be swayed by the saint.”

The crude noble smiled.

“The man-eating saint also dislikes that guy.”

While others understood and made light smiles in response to those words, Frampton slightly raised his hand.

Everyone's gaze focused on him as he spoke.

"Hmm, everyone's concerns about Viscount Baltfault are valid though. How about viewing this matter as a test, a way to see his qualifications in handling the lost item?"

Vince objected in response to those words.

"Do you mean to be like vultures and steal a treasure into the kingdom? Marquis Frampton, that will not go unchecked."

"Duke Redgrave—no, Vince. We're only investigating if it's appropriate for him to hold such a strong lost item. I am not saying that we will take anything. It all depends on his qualities."

The surrounding nobles began to speak their thoughts, saying "Indeed, leaving this alone would be a hazard."

"If we're not taking anything right away, then it shouldn't be a problem."

"Right. However, that power is too big for one guy."

"We can't say that he has no ill intentions."

The meeting venue was being overrun by the opinions of Frampton's faction.

"No complaints—Vince? Or perhaps you were planning on monopolizing the power of that lost item for yourself? Your daughter is quite close with Viscount Baltfault, isn't she?"

Frampton glared at Vince.

"—Do as you please."

(Did they intend on taking the lost item from the very beginning?)

"I'm glad we could come to an understanding."

The surrounding people looked at Vince not as the leader of the former largest faction, but as a has-been.

(Now then, how will things turn out?)

Vince quietly thought about the future.



I was on the deck of the airship Partner.

I was glaring at Marie and her followers.

“—This is the absolute worst.”

Luxon floated next to me, replying while looking towards the same direction.

[Isn't she talented for enjoying her life like so? Leaving that aside, why was it necessary to bring out Partner?]

Partner is my ship, modeled after the spacecraft that is Luxon's main body.

To be more precise, it's designed to imitate Luxon's main body as a disguise.

Luxon, who created Partner, cherishes it as if it were its own child.

Now it became necessary to bring out this ship after Marie's proposal to go on an adventure.

Due to her proposal, the very first person asked to arrange a ship—was me.

“It wasn't my intention to bring out the ship and lend it to anyone. This is really the worst. I feel disgusted having to follow those orders.”

Just looking at Marie brings up memories of my younger sister from my previous life.

My older and younger sisters in my current life are downright heartless, but she was cruel too.

[At any rate, you're the commanding officer of Marie's bodyguards, right Master?]

"Don't bring that up! I did not want to agree to it at all."

To think that they considered making me one of Marie's bodyguards.

Are those royal palace officials idiots?

Marie, being pampered by her followers, felt pleased and made a loud laughter.

Cara also being there caught my attention, but what further piqued my interest was Marie's exclusive servant.

A pretty boy who goes by the name "Kyle," a quirky guy with short blond hair and long ears. He looked like a middle school student.

He was supposed to be the exclusive servant of the protagonist, Livia, but was taken by Marie.

He had a bit of a sassy look and seemed relatively calm for his age.

He separated from the crowd, holding onto a handrail and looking up into the sky alone.

"What's the matter, did the followers steal your master?"

When I spoke out to him, Kyle turned around and replied.

"—Could you not speak to me? I'm not fond of you."

The irritated Kyle spoke bluntly.

I'm quite intolerant of others' misbehaviors.

Being made light of aggravated me.

"Don't be like that. I'll toss you into the sky."

This is a world where the ground floats in the sky—so being tossed out means ending up in the sky rather than the sea.

Despite that, Kyle laughed scornfully.

"What could you gain by doing such a thing? You're the type of guy who backs down if lashing out in anger would otherwise result in being punished."

I got quite annoyed at how accurate he was.

Indeed, I didn't actually intend to throw him out.

Well, I mean—I'd become the bad guy if I did that.

All things considered, I thought of him as a cheeky brat in the game, but—now that he's real, he really is quite impertinent.

"Tsk, I'll get you for this."

When I left a parting remark, he replied with "Those are the words of a delinquent who runs away after losing."

When I was about to lose my cool, Luxon informed me of something.

[Master, Olivia and Anjelica are here.]

When I turned around, a delighted Livia and slightly excited Anjelica approached.

"Leon, I can see the floating island we're heading towards!"

"We'll be landing there soon. Prepare a campsite near the historic ruins! We'll be the ones to find treasure first!"

Livia, with sparkling eyes, looked forward to seeing a genuine historic ruin.

However, Anjie—acted as expected of an adventurer's descendant.

Hearing the words adventure and historic ruins, it seemed that treasure was on her mind.

"Anjie, you're rich enough to not need any treasure, right?"

"Right. However, finding treasure is meaningful. I was so nervous that I couldn't sleep last night."

It's quite rare for the usually mature Anjie to be acting this childish.

"Rather than treasure, I'm more excited to be investigating a historic ruin. I'm interested in how ancient humans lived."

Livia was full of curiosity.

The only saving grace in this situation is the enjoyment those two have.

"You two sure seem lively. It seems that bringing out Partner was a worthwhile decision."

"You have my thanks, Leon. There's a dungeon in the royal capital, but being an adventurer means traversing to unknown sites."

—I accepted Marie's proposal because these two showed interest.

I would have refused if Marie was the only thing I took into consideration.

As the two spoke amongst each other, Marie walked over while seeming smug.

She gave me an order while holding down her hair which was swaying from the wind.

“Hey, the island’s in sight, so make sure that you can land this thing. I want to find treasure soon.”

When I glared at Marie while saying “What did you just say?”, Marie got frightened and averted her gaze.

She resembled my younger sister down to the minute detail, causing me to get angry.

“E, err, I’d like for you to prepare landing~that’s all.”

None of Marie’s followers were around her as she got nervous.

Since Anjie was there, the followers took their distance.

Anjie’s eyes changed a bit when she looked at Marie.

“—Leon is the owner of Partner. Do you have a complaint about Leon’s conduct, Saint?”

When Anjie closed the distance, Marie quickly fell back.

“Jilk Fier Memoria” then stepped in between Marie and Anjie.

He had green hair and a gentle aura, but was a black-hearted guy in reality.

Currently, he and “Greg Fou Seberg” were accompanying Marie as her escorts.

The other three were busy with other things.

“Anjelica, what do you plan on doing with Marie?”

Jilk is Julian’s foster brother. Furthermore, he’s the commanding officer of Julian’s bodyguards. No wait, did I get right?

Since Julian lost his position along with Jilk and the others being disinherited, their standings are quite unclear.

“—What? I was just being a little careful.”

I felt relieved upon seeing Anjie step down quietly.

“Don’t run your mouth too much. We’ll make sure to land properly and we’re also in the process of other arrangements.”

“I, I see.”

Though Marie reluctantly gave her understanding, I could somehow grasp from her expression that she felt the opposite way.

I feel unpleasant knowing that I can understand her emotions.

Amidst the clamor, a girl with long black hair arrived to the deck.

She was a thin girl with pale skin and characteristic red eyes—“Hertrude Sera Fanoss.”

“Oh, it seems everyone was gathering here. I was looking for you all.”

Anjie muttered something as if annoyed.

“I didn’t think you would come along.”

She was the princess of the Fanoss Principality, though she’s currently semi-forced to study abroad.

Luxon came close to my ear and spoke.

[It seems that she had been searching the ship.]

“What is the kingdom thinking, going as far as to force this person onto me?”

Princess Hertrude—err, Hertrude is not exactly the most friendly, smiling person.

It seems that it wasn’t a good idea to agitate Fanoss Principality’s retreating army during that school trip by saying things like “Hey,

how does it feel? How does it feel for an adult to lose to a kid? How does it feel for knights and soldiers to lose to students?”

I took the opportunity to kidnap this person, making her a prisoner of war.

Due to that, her smile gave me a spine-chilling sensation.

“Your airship is quite big, Viscount Baltfault. I got lost because of that.”

“My apologies. Anyways, where did your caretaker go? You shouldn’t wander around alone.”

“We lost sight of each other. I couldn’t do anything.”

There’s supposed to be a caretaker, or rather a student keeping an eye on her, by her side.

However, perhaps due to the students scattering, she had been walking by herself.

Luxon spoke in a quiet tone.

[The person watching over her intentionally left Hertrude alone.]

Is there some kind of scheme in the midst? They just don’t know when to give up.

When I glared at Hertrude, she turned away.

“Please don’t look at me with those indecent eyes.”

Perhaps it seemed like I was looking at her with indecent eyes, but her slender figure is not to my liking at all.

It’s also a shame that her barren chest is at the same level as Marie.

“—Sorry.”

“W, why are you looking at me with pity now? What are you doing that for?”

Anjie stepped in between us to block my sight, making a red face while voicing her opposition.

“Let’s leave it at that. We should prepare to get off the ship soon.”

As we talked, Partner arrived at a floating island where elves lived.

It was unlikely that the harbor could take in a such a big ship like Partner, and once we reached the location, Luxon began preparations to land.



Upon landing on the elven island, the girls gave instructions while the guys carried their luggage.

Their exclusive servants were standing by their side.

“Hey, don’t treat my luggage so recklessly.”

“S, sorry.”

Nobody thought about having the slaves carry the cargo.

The reason being that for the girls, their exclusive servants were slaves, but at the same time were lovers as well.

The boys knew that if they would be in trouble if they tried to order the exclusive servants around, so they didn’t push their luck.

As the boys were busy moving around, I got entangled with someone annoying.

“Commander, would you carry this baggage?”

Greg, the one who spoke to me, seemed closer than before, or rather—he was acting like we were friends.

“Don’t call me Commander. I didn’t agree to such a thing.”

“You’re the commanding officer of the bodyguards, right? In that case, you’re our commanding officer. You have my best regards, Commander.”

This is saddening, do I really have to be the commander of these guys?

Hertrude looked at me while the person watching over her stood beside her.

“—The kingdom is quite cruel.”

She spoke those brief words after seeing the other girls.

“Is it different at the principality?”

“There’s no way the principality would engage in such crude behavior.”

If what Hertrude said is true, then I want to seek asylum at the principality right away.

Well, I can’t do that though.

“The principality was originally territory of the kingdom, right? So why is it different?”

The principality originally belonged to the kingdom, but had become independent, leading to the current relationship between the two.

“I feel sorry for you guys. Particularly you—Viscount Baltfault. Your future spouse will openly surround herself with sub-race lovers. Such vulgar women don’t exist within the principality. If you emigrate over

to our side, I can assure you that you'll receive a proper hero's treatment."

Greg, hearing her speak, hardened his gaze.

Don't ask me to flee to another country while people are watching.
—I do kind of want to though.

Marie approached as Hertrude was in the midst of her mockery.

"Hey, what happened to treasure hunting? Let's hurry up and go look around."

Hertrude was amazed at the annoying Marie and her fixation on treasure.

"You're the saint, right? I'm starting to wonder if you're too attached to money."

At those words, Marie—

"What do you know?! Over on my side—my parents put me into debt without my knowing and now I have to pay it back!
Besides—it's painful having no money!"

I hate Marie, but I do feel a bit of sympathy in regards to her situation.

Greg comforted Marie.

"Marie, it'll be alright. Julian and the others are working, so we'll get your debt sorted out somehow."

Three of the five idiots aren't here since they're bustling about for Marie's sake.

Marie's lousy household created debt under her name once she became the saint.

Furthermore, they forced their previous debt onto Marie.

After hearing her situation—it's so pitiful that it even made me think it would be okay to help her out a bit.

Marie was at her wits' end as she spoke.

"It's painful having no money. Really painful. My socks have holes and I can't replace them, I can't even buy necessities. I don't know what to further cut down on."

Seeing Marie's gloomy expression as she complained gave me a thought.

Perhaps this girl was cursed.

"That's enough. Even Hertrude's not sure how to respond."

Hertrude had said "Sorry, I guess," to Marie around when she had been talking about holes in her socks.

I pondered about something while looking at the boys around who were at work.

"We should talk with the residents of this island first. Now then, where should we go to—"

As I was thinking about how to traverse an unknown island where elves lived, Kyle raised his hand.

"—I'll lead the way. This is my homeland."



Part 2

We traversed through a forest while Kyle led the way.

The laid-back Marie was surprised to hear that this floating island was Kyle's homeland.

—So it seems that she didn't know either.

"Gee, if this was your home, you should have told me, Kyle. I would have prepared a present or something."

It seems that she intended to watch over her exclusive servant as he visited his home, but wouldn't this be dicey situation for Kyle?

He was bought as a slave and is now returning to his home town with his master.

Is he going to introduce her to his family by saying "This is my master!" to them?

—I would hate doing that.

Kyle walked ahead, but was the same as when I spotted him on Partner's deck.

Despite it being his homeland, he didn't seem to be enjoying it at all.

"No need for a present."

He seemed a bit gloomy.

Being worried about Kyle, Livia consulted me.

"Leon, doesn't something seem strange about Kyle? He's returning home, so why is he so down?"

Unlike the carefree Marie, Livia was looking closely at Kyle's condition.

“Maybe he doesn’t want to visit home for some reason?”

Unlike Marie, Livia was kind.

As for Anjie—

“Is this a forest where elves live? I didn’t know there was a dungeon here, but I’m a bit excited for some reason.”

—She was really tense.

Meanwhile, Marie was serious.

“It’ll be fine. If I can earn big here, I can get rid of my debt. Rather, isn’t this opportune? Then I can buy sweets from popular stalls and have desserts for my dinner during the evening. I have to buy new clothes too. My others ones are already shabby and worn out.”

It was saddening to hear Marie’s monologue.

I was indeed angry at Marie, who cheated her way to becoming the saint, but why was she this miserable?

What evil things did she do in her previous life to deserve carrying debt while needing to pay living expenses as a saint?

Jilk and Greg walked in the back while a group of girls walked in the middle.

Hertrude, who seemed troubled, walked alone.

“You could have just waited.”

“I can do whatever I please. Besides, now that we came all this way, I want to look at the historical ruins.”

Shouldn’t the upper management of the kingdom be more wary of the fact that this girl’s been given free rein?

We continued through a straight path in the forest.

Luxon, floating near my shoulder, looked at the road.

[Master, what exactly—are elves?]

“A fantasy race. Are you interested in them?]

[Elves used to not exist within my data. While I had been on stand by, a creature suddenly appeared, turning out to be an elf. Is it not something to be curious about?]

I wasn’t really that aware of it, so I wasn’t particularly interested.

[In addition, it’s also noteworthy that they cannot breed with female humans. However, in the case of men—]

As Luxon spoke on, Kyle pointed to a village within view.

“That’s the town where I was born and raised.”

Marie was excited.

“Wow~, how beautiful!”

At first glance, it seemed like a calm, but fairly developed village.

The buildings were mostly log houses and the town had a sense of unity.

All the villagers we saw were beautiful and had nice figures.

Several villager-like elves wore outfits that clung to their bodies.

Jilk placed his hand over his chin and began to boast about his knowledge.

“Elves are basically well-favored in looks, but do not seem to judge beauty by outward appearances like how humans do.”

Both Marie and Greg had shocked faces.

—It seems they didn't know this. I wasn't aware of it either.

“Oh, is that so?”

“Right. They judge based on the magical power one holds. Due to that, they have almost no preferences in terms of looks.”

Though everyone was interested in the elves who judged others based on magic power, Kyle didn't say anything more.

Since these were elves we were talking about, a slightly more detailed explanation would have been nice.

I tried calling out to him in concern.

“Something the matter?”

“Don't talk to me. If you're trying to fulfill a sense of self-satisfaction by acting worried about me, then stop. I absolutely hate guys like you who tend to get the wrong idea.”

I felt my face getting red.

“And I hate little brats like you. Why don't you go find your mother and introduce Marie to her, you can even say ‘This is my master,’ to her.”

Thereupon, Kyle sighed and spoke as if looking down on me.

“It seems you don't know. Alright, for elves, being a slave is synonymous to working away from home. Despite being slaves, we're treated decently, much better than you boys at the academy.”

It's indeed as he said, but hearing him say it made me furious.

Luxon strangely seemed convinced.

[Intriguing, so elves view it as working away from home? I understand.]

Jilk added on to that explanation.

“Elves seem to have a longer lifespan than humans. A few decades is a not a big deal for them.”

Working away from home for a few decades? Leaving that aside, there’s something about Kyle’s speaking that I’m curious about.

Someone’s feelings toward slavery would be like this.

Upon hearing hearing the word slave, one would assume that treatment would be poor, but being exclusive servants, they’re treated favorably.

—Indeed, the boys would be jealous.

Seeing us approach the village, one of the elves in the village walked towards us.

A pleasant girl with green hair and yellow eyes.

Is she around the same age as us? She’s a small woman.

In addition, everyone’s gazes focused on her bust, which was big relative to her body.

“Kyle!”

The woman waved her hand and rushed over, seeming to know Kyle.

As the woman approached, Kyle adjusted his posture and moved towards Marie’s side as she was speaking with Jilk.

“Marie, this woman here is my mother. Her name is ‘Yumeria.’”

—What? His mom?!

Elves have a much younger appearance than their actual age. Could it be that Kyle is an old man on the inside too? In that case, he might be the same as me.

“Um, oh! N, nice to meet you!”

When the confused Marie gave her greetings, Kyle’s mother, Yumeria, also became confused and bowed her head.

It felt very calming seeing the two bow towards each other.

Kyle explained the situation to Yumeria while seeming uninterested.

“Everyone wants to enter some historic ruins that are in this town. We need permission from the village chief, so we’re heading over to give our greetings. With that, please excuse us.”

“Say, Kyle. You’ve been away for a long time, but you don’t need to talk like we’re strangers—”

“I cannot do that, I’m in the midst of my job.”

Kyle’s attitude may be appropriate as a servant, but he was being a little cold towards his mother.

Yumeria’s expression darkened.

“You don’t have to be so cold. This is the town you’ve been away from for so long, isn’t it?”

Kyle sneered in response to my words.

“Something bugging you?”

“Don’t get so over-familiar with me. I’m Marie’s exclusive servant, and I’m not going to get along with the likes of you.”

Greg was a bit irritated at the strangely stern Kyle.

“Hey, you’re taking it too far. Baltfault is our commander.”

Marie also seemed to pay attention to the odd attitude her own exclusive servant was taking.

“Kyle, don’t pick any fights. You’ve been weird today for some reason.”

“I’m the same as I always am. The village chief’s home is here.”

Kyle walked ahead, not even glancing at Yumeria.

Livia spoke to Yumeria in concern.

“Um, Kyle’s been strange ever since we came to this island. Err, maybe he’s feeling sick.”

However, Yumeria made a sorrowful smile.

“It’s fine. It’s my fault. I’m an unseemly misfit, after all.”

Those words stuck to my mind for some bizarre reason.



The village chief’s residence was large.

Upon asking about it, it seemed that several decades ago, when returning to the village after finishing work as an exclusive servant, the village chief had received a large amount of remuneration and built the residence.

He was an elf that looked like a young man with a beard, someone only in their late twenties.

“You want to visit some ruins within the village?”

I spoke alone with the village chief, acting as a representative of the group.

Everyone else waited in a reception room.

“Right. Is it possible?”

“The ruins are a sacred place for the village, so it would be tough. You won’t be able to obtain permission so easily. I don’t think the other village chiefs would allow it.”

Elven villages were scattered around the floating island.

It seems that altogether, they’re labeled as a collective.

“Furthermore, the collective chief is quite stubborn. There’s no doubt that you will face opposition to enter the ruins.”

“The collective chief?”

“She’s an old woman whose strong point is divination. I’ve heard that in the past, there were many guests who visited the collective chief, but her power has currently weakened and there are often times where her divinations aren’t accurate either.”

I don’t care about this talk of fortune-telling, but it’s a problem if we can’t enter the historical ruins.

“I’m sorry, but you might have to give up. Though, we frequently visit the ruins and have found no treasure there. Searching for some would be fruitless.”

“Huh?”

“Us elves are free to enter and exit it as we please, and there are even many people who go there on a whim. We’ve exhausted ourselves searching through it, but contrary to everyone’s hopes, there’s no treasure to be found.”

—Could this different from the game?

As I was thinking about it, there was a furious pounding on the door.

A female elf barged in without waiting for a reply.

“Village Chief, it’s the collective chief!”

The village chief grabbed a nearby ornament—then tossed it to the woman.

“Eek!”

Seeing the item crash into the woman and fall, I give a look towards the village chief.

However, the village chief ignored me and began preaching to the woman.

“What insolence, running over in a commotion and pounding on the door! How many times do I have to tell you? Apologize to the guest!”

The village head then walked towards the woman and began kicking her.

Upon seeing that, I stepped in with haste.

“What are you doing?!”

The village chief swept my hand aside and turned away with a scornful look.

Those eyes he had were the same as the exclusive servants’ when they face the boys within the academy.

“Don’t be a nuisance. That is important elf etiquette. If we’re not careful, the children will learn bad manners. That means their worth as slaves will diminish.”

—It seems that I don’t fully understand the situation with elves, but this is too harsh.

Seeing this doesn't make me feel at ease.

"This a revolting sight in front of a guest."

I did my best to put on a brave front.

"Sorry about that. Now then, what's your business?"

The woman shed tears while informing us that the aforementioned collective chief was visiting the village.



We were in a plaza at the village.

The gathering elves were all beautiful men and women.

Among them, a short elderly one carried a large cane for support.

Her back was hunched over and it was hard to tell whether her eyes were open or closed.

The old woman with gray hair muttered something to a woman wearing the same native outfit.

The female elf, who was supporting her, transmitted her message.

"I will convey the words of the collective chief. Do not enter the ruins again. At this rate, you will incur the old demon lord's wrath."

The village chief was at a complete loss.

I assume that the collective chief is in a higher position, her way of speaking is different from the woman's.

"Collective Chief, what do you mean by demon lord? In the first place, aren't the people from other villages entering the ruins too?"

The collective chief muttered something.

Listening to her words, the female elf once again spoke.

“Do you think that the collective chief knows nothing? She’s aware that you all are heavily involved with the ruins. The collective chief is leaving a message. Don’t come into contact with what’s taboo. Don’t enter the sacred ground of the elves.”

The surrounding elves were shocked, but the collective chief and the female were serious.

Luxon, who was floating near my shoulder, also seemed shocked.

[A divination, is it?]

“What? Are you a non-believer of those sorts of things?”

[Could it be possible? There have certainly been people with strange abilities. You’re one of those people, Master.]

From Luxon’s point of view, I would indeed be an unscientific phenomenon since I hold memories of my previous life.

There seems to be some discrepancy between what the village chief said and what the collective chief said.

Perhaps the elves aren’t actually free to enter and exit as they please?

Based on what the collective chief said, nobody can get near the ruins.

Furthermore—

“By the way, do you know anything about a demon lord?”

[Are you familiar with the matter, Master? Does a demon lord appear in the otome game?]

“There’s no demon lord in that otome game. That’s why I’m really concerned.”

Could it be that the collective chief is growing senile?

She may have been a capable diviner in the past, but there are more elves who are either suspicious or completely doubtful rather than those who are at least half-convinced.

The collective chief’s cold gaze shifted from the elves to—Marie.

“Hey! This commotion is annoying. Whatever, someone take me to the historic ruins! I absolutely must capture—”

The collective chief’s eyes widened as Marie, who was frightened of debt, stepped forward.

She spoke to the woman next to her, and then that woman conveyed the message to us.

She seemed surprised and shocked.

“Are you a saint?”

“Oh, you could tell? Yes, I’m a saint. If you understand that, then—”

Before Marie could finish, the woman spoke.

“You’re allowed to enter the ruins. The saint brings along the old demon lord. That is the future the collective chief foresaw in recent months.”

Marie tilted her head in confusion as the surrounding elves grew restless.

“Demon lord? I don’t know a demon lord at all.”

You’re like a final boss to me. You’re something like a demon lord, I guess.

Or rather, it seems that the collective chief has gone senile and lost her touch with divinations.

Marie isn't a real saint, Livia is.

—The demon lord must also be a misunderstanding.

I turned towards Luxon as it stated its own opinion.

[Could this be about Julian? He's royalty and the descendants of the new humans use magic. If royalty means being able to operate the workings of magic, it's possible that he could adopt the title of a demon lord.]

"I understand what you're saying, but Julian's not here, you know?"

[I'm stumped as well. Assuming that the collective chief's divination is true, there's a possibility that it's tied to Julian.]

That guy isn't a king yet though. At this rate, he will become the crown prince again due to Marie's work, and will probably be king in the future, but—that guy being a demon lord? He'd be a miserable demon lord that even I could beat up.

The woman spoke to the people around on behalf of the collective chief.

"The time of judgement has come. Will this island sink, or will it remain? These people will not be allowed to interfere. The collective chief says for everyone to sit still and wait for the appointed time."

With that, the collective chief and the other elf left the village.

While watching their figures, I spoke to Luxon.

"Does this mean we have permission to enter the ruins?"

[It saves a load of trouble. It seems we won't have to force our way in or invade.]

"You were thinking about such dangerous things?"

[Indeed. What about it?]

It was as if Luxon was saying "You've got a problem with that?"



Part 3

Now that we got permission, we set foot into the historic ruins.

However, I felt disheartened upon looking into the ruins.

“—There’s nothing.”

There was a room with tree roots and ivy crawling along the walls and floor. It seemed to me like a modern building that grew old, but to Livia, it seemed like an ancient site packed with adventure.

Livia was the only one delighted.

“Amazing! Look Leon, objects of this shape have been found in other ancient ruins. The form is a bit different, but that thing near the door is a feature of ancient sites!”

“—I, I see.”

That object she’s referring to was a card reader.

The machine, which would read card keys, was already broken and was only there for looks at this point.

Luxon looked at the joyed Livia and asked a question.

[It’s better not to tell her the truth, isn’t it?]

Livia looked happy wondering what kind of meaning the object could have.

It seemed that Luxon was worried about whether it should tell Livia that it was a device for reading cards.

“She might be happy if you told her.”

[There’s also some fun in having her discover it herself. You wouldn’t understand, Master.]

“You really are a terrible thing, aren’t you?”

[Not as much as you, Master.]

Luxon then turned its line of sight towards Anjie and the others.

“Is there really no treasure? Well, viewing some historic ruins is itself worthy of conversation, but—is there really no treasure?”

She felt down since not only was there no treasure, but the place had already been thoroughly examined by others.

Jilk was the same.

“I had my hopes up since I heard there were some historic ruins belonging to elves, but there’s nothing here.”

Greg seemed to have given up on the possibility of treasure.

“Did you really think that we would find ruins with treasure so easily? It’s fun because of the chances of finding nothing. Though, it’s also quite novel for us to go this far and still find nothing.”

Surprisingly, Hertrude also seemed disappointed. —Had she actually been looking forward to this?

“Oh? Did you actually get your hopes up?”

“I did. Something wrong with that?”

Since she answered me, I continued conversing with her.

“Not that it’s bad, but I do find it surprising.”

“The principality can be traced back to being the kingdom’s territory. Like you people, we also admire adventurers.”

So why in the world is the situation for marriage-searching so different there?

“So when you heard about the ruins, you wanted to venture into them?”

“Despite how things may look, I do hold such views. After all—such opportunities are rare.”

Well, isn’t that cute?

Hertrude, who averted her gaze while seeming embarrassed, looked like a girl her age.

“All you had to do was say it honestly.”

“—Detestable.”

I watched Hertrude depart and turned towards the most depressed person in the vicinity, Marie. She was so down that it was pitiable.

“—I don’t want to do this anymore. It can’t be like this.”

Jilk comforted Marie while she was in such a state.

“It’ll be alright. We can search for a different set of ruins and go on an adventure together with his Highness and the others.”

—There was a bit of a misunderstanding there.

Marie didn’t want to go an adventure, she just wanted treasure.

Evident of that, she made a complicated face after hearing Jilk’s words.

“R, right.”

Perhaps leaving Livia, who was absorbed in the historical ruins, to her own devices, Anjie came over to my side.

“Leon, what should we do now? Should we withdraw at this rate? It seems like the village chief here with us is bothered as well.”

Taking a look, I saw the figure of the village chief watching over us from the entrance of the ruins.

He gave me a particularly cold gaze.

“He’s looking down on me. Quite the annoying guy.”

I want to knock him off his feet right now.

I don’t know if the demon lord is long gone or whatever, but I’d love to ask them to strike the hammer of judgement down on that guy.

Though, that may not be possible since the demon lord doesn’t exist.

The village chief called out to us.

“Have you had enough? There’s nothing worth seeing in these ruins.”

—All things considered, something’s off.

Within my fuzzy memories of the game, these historical ruins should definitely have—

“We can’t give up! My debt’s increasing as we speak! I—I absolutely won’t give up! I hate a life of debt!”

Marie recklessly ran towards the depths of the ruins alone.

Anjie seemed angry at Marie, who acted out of line.

“Moving around alone as she pleases—what a troublesome person.”

With Luxon beside me, I readied my rifle and went ahead to bring back Marie.

“Luxon, follow me. Anjie, stay here with everyone. I’ll be back in a moment.”

“It’s hard being a commander, isn’t it?”

“You’re still a student. Don’t push yourself. I’ll be back soon.”

Livia was worried about me, but...

“Leon, please don’t do anything rash. U, um—”

Did she think I was going to do something with Marie? —Well, she’s right.

After telling Jilk and Greg to stay put despite wanting to come along, I chased after Marie.

—An opportunity has arrived. Now I’ll be alone with Marie.

—Finally, we can have a talk between fellow reincarnators.



The depths of the ruins were dark.

With her lantern placed on the floor, Marie looked for something.

“Not here. Not here! There’s no entrance to the underground layer!”

Luxon’s eye, serving as a light, shined on Marie, surprising her. Marie turned around and stood with her back against the wall as if she were a cornered criminal.

I had my rifle ready while speaking to Marie.

“You’re alone at last. Even in the airship, I didn’t have the chance to talk with you, and that caused me some trouble. With this, we can have a leisurely chat.”

As Marie trembled, she tried to pick up a handgun she brought for self-defense.

“Freeze. Any movements and I’ll pull the trigger.”

“I, if you kill me, you’ll become a big criminal! I’m a saint!”

“You’re just a fake who took the position of the saint from Livia though. Now then, how about we hear what you have to say for yourself? What do you plan on doing from now on?”

I wanted to know what reason she had for the risky deed of stealing Livia’s position as the saint.

“Huh? What do you mean? Tell me what it is that you want to hear from me.”

However, Marie acted bold, even in this situation.

I really want to shoot her. I wonder if just one shot would be fine.

“In that case, I’ll ask you some questions one by one, and you’ll make sure to answer me. Are you a reincarnator?”

“Yes. I am. If you’re asking whether I have memories of my previous life, then that’s correct. It seems like you’re one too.”

“Are you aware of this world being the same as ‘that’ otome game?”

“What about it?”

She’s not denying it. Marie indeed knows about this world being the same as an otome game, *that* otome game.

“If so, why did you take Livia’s position as the saint? When there’s a war with the principality—”

Marie laughed and answered before I could finish my question.

“Aren’t you an idiot? You think I can’t do what that girl can? I can use healing magic. I have plenty of talent for being a saint. Besides, the temple and saint items all recognize me.”

That’s weird. Leaving the temple aside, I didn’t think that the saint items would recognize Marie.

“So it’s alright to expose you if you turn out to be fake.”

“Try it out for yourself. No matter how much of a racket you make, it won’t change the fact that I’m the saint. Too bad for you.”

—Indeed, even if I kick up a fuss about it, nobody would listen to me. What an irritating person.

Luxon suggested something to me.

[There is a discrepancy when comparing this to your information, Master. It’s advisable to mutually share information.]

Marie was a little bewildered.

“What? What are you trying to say? Let me say this, I’ve seen that otome game’s sce—”

Before Marie could finish speaking, we felt a rumble as the floor dropped out.

“Wha?!”

“Aaaaah!”



Anjie, who stood at the entrance to the ruins, looked at a restless Jilk and Greg.

“The both of you, calm down. Let’s leave it to Leon.”

Deep down, Anjie couldn’t tolerate Leon having to take care of Marie.

(Even on the airship, Marie seemed to be on Leon’s mind, but—could it be?)

Jilk’s gaze sharpened.

“That’s why I’m worried. He’s alone with Marie. Can you say with certainty that no mishap will happen?”

While staring at the ruins, Greg also spoke.

“Aren’t they taking a little too long? Let’s go find them. I’m worried about whether or not Baltfault will do anything strange. Since he might have a hunch that Marie isn’t a woman yet, and since she’s so cute—”

Hearing about Leon’s interest in Marie, Anjie got flustered in a different manner from usual.

“D, don’t say such foolish things! Leon is different from you people!”

“How are we different? He’s the same as us, a guy. Furthermore, Marie is a great woman. It’s impossible for any mishap not to happen.”

“It wouldn’t be strange for any boy in that situation to make a move. No wait, maybe this was his aim?!”

In response to the two’s opinions, Anjie felt more worked up than usual.

“Don’t lump Leon in with the likes of you!”

“I don’t want to be likened to him either! Besides, Viscount Baltfault was trying to approach Marie on the airship. I know that since I was beside her as an escort!”

Anjie’s face turned red in response to Jilk’s objection.

“Leon loathes Marie. You all should know that! Livia, say something too. There’s no way Leon would lay his hand on Marie.”

However, unlike the agitated Anjie, Livia went a bit pale.

“U, um, I only noticed it now, but—why was Leon carrying a rifle? It’s not necessary since monsters won’t appear in these ruins, right?”

Anjie’s, Jilk’s, and Greg’s eyes widened.

Leon, who usually kept a distance from Marie, was now trying to approach her.

Furthermore, Leon refused to let other people come along as he searched for Marie while carrying the unneeded rifle.

The three went pale as they imagined the scene of Leon shooting Marie to death.

“My fair Marie!”

“Marie!”

Jilk and Greg rushed into the ruins.

Anjie and Livia chased after them.

“W, wait! Even he wouldn’t go that far!”

“Right! He’d only use it to threaten someone at most!”

The four left the vicinity, leaving Hertrude, Kyle, and the village chief.



Marie had a dream.

A dream about her fondly remembered past life.

The summer sun was strong and it was humid.

During the evening, her surroundings were dyed orange, making for both a nostalgic and sad scene.

Marie remembered the heat of that day.

(Oh, right. This was also a thing.)

A girl stumbled, crying over her scraped knees.

‘Brother, carry me on your back.’

The one she asked help from was her older brother.

Though she recalled that her brother ticked her off—she strangely couldn’t remember his face.

Even though the two were in front of her, their faces were a blur.

‘If it’s that small of an injury, you can walk by yourself. Carrying you will make my back heat up, so no thanks. Besides, you’re heavy.’

(I am not heavy! This guy really infuriates me! I have a very slender figure!)

Even in that point of time—she was cute in her previous life.

She was aware of it in that life as well. That was why she looked up in confusion at her brother’s reply.

In her surprise, she stopped her fake tears.

‘Huh?’

‘See, you were pretending to cry. I hate how you fake things like that. You won’t fool me.’

In the vacant street, her previous self gasped.

By this time, she knew that she was cuter than the girls around her.

Understanding that people around her would do anything she asked for, she tried to order the boy, her older brother, around.

‘M, my knees hurt.’

‘The pain is proof that you’re still living. Good.’

‘I, I want you to carry me. I can’t get home.’

‘Oh really? Then stay here. And if you don’t like that, then walk, nitwit sister.’

‘—Stupid brother!’

“I’m fine with being stupid! I’d rather choose to be stupid than do what you tell me to!”

Seeing her older brother say that with a smile, Marie thought about something.

(This guy really is the worst. Remembering him now, he’s the number one—no, number three most heartless guy.)

Number one belonged to the man who abandoned her and her child.

Number two belonged to a leech who associated with her.

After those people was Marie’s older brother.

Marie then tried to recall what happened after this incident.

(Huh? What happened to me after that?)



She slowly came to her senses.

Her surroundings were dusty and she heard the sound of a gunshot.

Shells dropped to the floor and there was a metallic sound.

As she lifted her head, there stood Leon with his back facing her.

His voice seemed to carry an air of tension, perhaps due to a sense of urgency.

“Next!”

[An unidentified creature crawling along the ceiling is approaching. Master, be cautious about your remaining bullets. Furthermore, these things aren't monsters.]

“It sucks that they won't disappear when I kill them.”

Leon readied the rifle and pulled the trigger, creating the sound of a gunshot as a bullet pierced through the head of a mysterious creature appearing from the darkness.

The creature dropped from the ceiling and spasmed on the floor.

Marie jumped and tried to get up, but—

“Aah! O, ouch!”

She couldn't stand up, perhaps from an ankle injury.

Leon maintained the same stance, only his voice reaching Marie.

He was cautious of approaching enemies and couldn't turn his head around.

“Are you awake? Luxon will tell you the situation.”

“Huh? What?”

[The floor of the ruins collapsed and we fell down underground. While you were unconscious, Master has been killing unidentified creatures coming out of the passage.]

“What do you mean by unidentified creatures?!”

Marie, who wondered if they were different beings from monsters, looked at the creature from just now.

Its limbs were different from those of humans, but its torso and head looked the same.

Seeing what seemed like a reptile taking a human form, Marie screamed.

“Aaaaaah!”

However, as for Leon and Luxon—

“You’re distracting me, so shut up. Damn it, is it hopeless unless I get this useless charm to do something? If it were Livia or Anjie, I would have been determined and serious about defending them.”

[Screaming won’t change the situation. Be still.]

“Huh? But, my leg—”

[As the saint, your specialty is healing magic, right? Heal yourself. Ah, Master, the next one’s coming.]

—Both took a very cold attitude.

Marie thought to herself.

(These guys are like my older brother, aren’t they?! Now I’m really pissed!)

Chapter 2: Secret of the Ruins

“What’s going on?”

Entering the depths of the ruins, Anjie and the others stared at a hole that wasn’t there before.

They tried holding up a lantern, but couldn’t see inside.

It seemed like the floor had collapsed.

“Could it be—that they dropped down from here?”

Hearing the sounds of gunfire from within the hole, Anjie was uneasy.

Jilk immediately began preparing to descend.

“I’ll set up a rope soon.”

Greg shouldered his spear and was about to descend, saying “I’ll go down there alone. It’s likely that Marie and Baltfault are in there. We need to hurry up and help them.”

Livia expressed her intentions.

“I, I’m going too!”

“You stay here.”

“I’m going too!”

When Anjie was about to descend as well, the village chief came running while yelling.

“What are you doing?!”

Anjie maintained her firm attitude towards the angered village chief.

“There’s a hole in the floor. There might be two people inside. We’re going down there too.”

“E, err—I understand. I’ll go down there soon, so all of you, please wait outside.”

Worried about Marie, Greg rejected the village chief’s suggestion.

“There’s fighting going on down there! What will you do if something happens to Marie?!”

“In that case, you should return to the village at once and tell an experienced person.”

The village chief carried a rifle in his hand and descended down the hole.

Anjie felt uneasy seeing his figure.

(That village chief isn’t fazed at all?)

They didn’t even know what awaited them down there.

The village chief marched towards the area where gunshots could be heard.



We were down in the underground layers of the ruins.

While Luxon illuminated our surroundings, Marie and I walked along a passage.

“The underground structures—I remember it now. The underground of these ruins was an explorable location.”

Portions were broken, causing dirt and rock to come in and block passages, turning the place into a maze.

I turned my head around and stared at Marie.

“You used healing magic, right? You’re walking slowly.”

I complained towards the limping Marie, having to adjust my walking pace to match hers.

While irritated, Marie didn’t seem to take notice of that.

“It hurts for a bit even after healing! Walk slower.”

“Livia could erase the pain as well. That’s what makes you a fake.”

“What was that?! You look stupid being so engrossed in her just because she’s a little cute. Nobody’s going to be with a mob like you.”

“Unfortunately for you, I’ve ended up becoming quite popular with the girls despite how things may look. I’ve received a mountain of invitations.”

The letters weren’t that pleasing, but Marie seemed genuinely frustrated in response to my bluff.

I once again brought up a certain subject.

“—Why did you think about making a reverse harem?”

“You got a complaint? It would only be human for someone to seek a happiness that they could reach.”

Happiness? That’s the reason why this girl took everything from Livia?

“You’re saying that it feels great to kick others down for the sake of your own happiness? Apologize to Livia.”

Marie cast her eyes downward while grumbling within the dark passage.

“What do you know? I wasn’t blessed with fortune in my previous life. What’s bad about living my second life as I please? This is about me! I just want to be happy.”

Her methods were so heartless that I couldn’t even laugh.

She had five idiots latch onto her, and to make matters worse, made an irreversible mistake.

“You’re being a nuisance to Livia and sabotaging Anjie. You’re the worst.”

Thereupon, the glowing Luxon spoke.

[The same could be said about you too, Master. In a sense, you looked for me and snatched me away from Olivia, Master. Furthermore, you also said something along the lines of ‘It feels great beating up those five in front of the public!’]

Hearing that, Marie criticized me this time.

“You’re the worst. You have no right to criticize people.”

“I don’t want to hear that from you! You’re the one causing me trouble in the first place! What do you even plan on doing during the final battle? If you mess up, the kingdom will lose.”

In that otome game, Hertrude was supposed to use an item called the “magic flute” to summon the final boss.

Currently, Hertrude and the magic flute are being managed by the kingdom, so having that final boss appear is unlikely, but—I’m worried.

“I can figure something out using my power as a saint.”

“Huh? The saint’s strength alone? What are you going to do about Livia’s power?”

“What are you talking about? That girl’s power is the saint’s power, right?”

“No, I mean—”

Luxon interrupted our conversation.

[Master, one of my suspicions has been answered.]

When Luxon said that, it suddenly became bright, forcing me to squint.

It appeared that our surroundings were being illuminated with lighting equipment. Looking around, it seemed that we were in a large room.

“C’mon, give me a break.”

“Ack!”

—I was disgruntled while Marie was shocked.

Within the large room stood cylindrical capsules filled with fluid, and inside them were figures resembling humans.

There were elves waiting there, pointing rifles and handguns at us.

I stood forward to cover Marie while readying my own rifle.

There are a mountain of things I need to hear from this girl, so it wouldn’t do good to have her die here.

One of the elves pointing a gun at us, their representative, made an eerie smile.

“You’ve arrived at the land of humanity’s beginning. Quite welcoming to have a human male, human female, and while I’m at it, strange round thing be here, isn’t it? Perfect laboratory specimens.”

Laboratory specimens? Upon looking at the elves, there were some wearing white robes as well.

That behavior and manner of speaking were akin to those of a mad scientist's.

"Are you the ones who made those freaks?"

If they were monsters, they would have disappeared when killed, but the creatures underground here don't do the same.

In other words, what I've been killing up until now weren't monsters.

The representative-like male elf answered while pointing his gun at me.

"You're certainly quick on the uptake. I didn't think you people would be able to make that guess."

The male gently touched a capsule with his hand.

Inside it was a large flower—and in the center of the flower was a human face.

Uncanny. It's more frightening than a monster.

"You've set foot into these ruins, a god's domain where life is created. You humans probably don't comprehend it, but long ago there was a civilization more advanced than what you see today. It was a period ruled not by savage humans, but by us elves. These ruins are proof of it."

The ruins, where life was being created, resided within the island they lived on. And from that basis, they're saying that elves created humans here.

The male chuckled in laughter when I didn't respond.

“You don’t get it? That’s all you humans amount to. Our ancestors have created many lifeforms here. Among them are you humans, an inferior race.”

In response to the elf’s declaration...

“Impossible! That kind of setting didn’t exist.”

—Marie was astonished. Or rather, she didn’t believe him.

Leaving that aside, the thought of elves creating freaks here long ago gives me the shivers.

When I turned towards Luxon, it shook its one eye in denial.

It seems that this is beyond Luxon as well.

The elf didn’t stop blabbering on.

“We will take back the world which has been stolen by humans. Then, the elves will bring along all races, guide them, and the world will regain its rightful figure. For that, you all will become our precious sacrifice. What kind of experiments should we run first? Oh right—”

Luxon interrupted the elf, who was so intoxicated over himself.

[That is incorrect. This facility was run by humans, and the ones they created—were you elves.]

I tilted my head in confusion when Luxon suddenly asserted that.

Up until just a bit ago, this thing had a lot of questions about the elves, so what’s with this change in attitude?

Marie grabbed my clothes and tugged several times, looking up at Luxon.

“Hey, what kind of familiar is that?”

“This is Luxon, a cheat item. You should know what this thing is, right?”

“I don’t know about it. Or rather, cheat items are unfair. Let me use it.”

“You’ve got the greatest of personalities, you know that?”

The elves’ expressions distorted.

“What do you know? Humans creating us? Even for a joke, I can’t laugh at that.”

[I accessed the AI lying dormant within this room. As a result of sharing information, I’ve found that this island was one involved with taboo—an experimental site.]

In response to what Luxon stated, a large electronic noise resounded within room.

It was a voice different from Luxon, a voice more akin to a woman’s.

[That is correct. The elves on this island are those have become feral after being created here.]

“There are AIs other than Luxon?”

Though I looked around, I couldn’t find the figure of this AI.

[Indeed. I have been on sleep mode for a long time. All things considered, it is fortunate meeting someone like you who carries the genes of the former humans. It is proof that our fight was not meaningless.]

The elf glanced around him, panicked over the electronic voice.

“W, who’s there?! Who would say such lies! Us elves are beings who surpass humans. We have longer lifespans and are more capable of using magic!”

The AI plainly spoke the truth.

[The longevity is just for the sake of being able to fight for longer. It would be troublesome to have them die soon. Proficiency at magic is again a design choice. However, it seems there has been a drop in quality compared to the elves of our initial stages.]

While the elves were in confusion, the male in front of us was in anger, his face turning a deep red.

He trembled while darting his eyes around, perhaps wondering where to aim his gun.

“Don’t joke with me! There is no truth to that. We are—”

Feeling a presence from behind, I turned around to find the village chief there.

However, he seemed strange.

“What in the world are you doing?!”

The shrieking village chief—pointed a gun at us.

“Oh, Village Chief—huh?”

The village chief pointed his rifle at Marie, who thought that he came here to save us.

Luxon seemed to comprehend something.

[I see. So the village chief was also involved in these ruins.]

The village chief ordered the panicking elves.

“Dispose of these people here. Make it look like they were finished by artificial lifeforms.”

The elves began to regain themselves in response to village chief’s words.

Upon the touch of a control panel, the fluid inside the capsules were drained, sending out the artificial lifeforms.

[Should I praise them for being able to operate the equipment?]

I readied my rifle while beside the calm Luxon.

“So you’re going to kill us as a destruction of evidence? It seems that elves are as black-hearted as they come.”

The village chief looked at me and smiled.

[A human shouldn’t get cocky. Inferior beings like you should just bow to us!]

The AI complained.

[What foolishness—this has been judged as a state of emergency. It will thus be dealt with.]

Immediately following, weapons appeared out of the walls, aimed at the lunging artificial lifeforms, and shot them to death.

The elves were frightened by the sudden event—and not passing up the chance, I shot the village chief in the shoulder with my rifle.

“Argh!”

The village chief dropped his rifle, so I closed the distance and bashed him in the face with the gunstock.

The elves turned towards me and yelled.

“O, open fire!”

As bullets and magic were being fired at us, Marie was at her wits' end.

“I can't take this anymore!”

While thinking about how annoying she was, I gave Luxon an order.

“Do it.”

[You won't be able to hurt Master with just this much.]

All the bullets and magic were repelled by a wall of light that appeared around us.

While pointing my rifle at the village chief, I looked over at the elves.

Realizing that their guns and magic had no effect, the elves stopped their attack and stood still.

“Still want to have a go? Do such high-class, wise elves take a fancy to the aesthetics of destruction?”

Knowing that they couldn't win, the elves tossed their guns and put their hands up.

“Restrain everyone. You, lend a hand as well.”

“Hey! Despite how it seems, I'm still a saint. I'm your higher-up!”

“How about I just blow your brains out? Destruction of evidence, right?”

I didn't intend to actually go through with it, but upon threatening Marie, she forced a smile.

“Now, no need to get so angry. I, I'll do what you say, so don't shoot.”

—She could have just said that from the beginning.



We were just about finished with restraining the elves.

The AI spoke to Luxon and me.

[It has come to my understanding that we had lost in the end. That being the case, this facility will need to self-destruct.]

“You guys sure like to self-destruct. Isn’t that the same response Luxon made?”

Thereupon, the AI began to talk about the role of the historic ruins and this research institution.

[This research facility was originally created for the sake of opposing the new breed of humans. However, now that this duty can no longer be accomplished, leaving the area untouched is a risk.]

There are probably some people who would misuse the equipment, just like the elves who produced artificial lifeforms.

Indeed, leaving this behind is certainly an unsafe move.

“Are you okay with that? You just woke up, right?”

The AI, which had managed this place for a long time, would have to self-destruct right after waking up from a long sleep.

How sad.

[There’s no problem. I will transfer all of my data to Luxon. If there is any object you need, carry it out of the vicinity. Furthermore—take this. It will be a necessary item for you, the one with the ship.]

Some weird object with countless cubes attached to it appeared from the floor.

It floated and looked shiny.

[Accept it. With this, I can accomplish more work than ever.]

“What is this?”

[A very valuable object.]

Marie leapt up when hearing that.

“Treasure!”

[Correct. It is a valuable object for us, but those of this world won’t know how to use it, so they would only see it as a shiny ornament.]

“—This really is the worst. If there’s no treasure, maybe this really is different from the game? I thought that this would be fantasy, but I never heard about it being sci-fi.”

The ones who made elves were humans.

Elves were created to oppose the new humans. When pondering about the other sub-races being created for the same purpose as well—this is indeed a strange world.

It seems that this isn’t a simple fantasy world of swords and magic.

Whatever happened to that otome game’s “lackluster” setting?

“Is there no other treasure?”

Marie, evidently depressed, attempted to check with the AI.

[Expecting treasure inside a research institution won’t do much good.]

Marie wiped her tears with a sleeve and grumbled.

“—We’re going back.”

How pitiful, going through such trouble only to end up with nothing.

[However—if you bring this with you, it might help. It could be valuable in this world.]

[What, so you do have something! Hand it over!]

Seeing Marie's sudden liveliness made me think about how similar she was to my sister in my previous life.

I had suspicions that she might be my sister, but—I didn't want to think about having to be involved with her again in my second life.



We were away from the ruins.

Within our current location—

[<⌘w⌘drftgy✚⊕⌚!!]

—We were struggling to calm down a furious Luxon.

“Calm down already.”

[I am calm. I will calmly destroy this object, pulverize it, turn it into ashes, and decimate it until not even a speck of dust is left—gaaah!]

—Luxon broke down.

Marie lied down on the ground with a vacant expression of hopelessness.

“—Receiving this kind of thing doesn't make me happy.”

Jilk and Greg, who were comforting her, had looks of genuine relief.

“It's good that you're safe.”

“Right, Marie. We can just look for treasure again.”

In front of us was the object the AI handed over during our final moments in the ruins.

It seemed like a part for some kind of power suit armor, but I don't know what part it is.

The crazed Luxon couldn't help but kick up a fuss in front of the sharp part.

Furthermore, Marie grieved over how this junk part wouldn't make any money.

Livia was in front of Luxon, bewildered.

"Calm down, Luc! Look, take a deep breath, a deep breath!"

[I don't need to breathe.]

"Err, um, right. S, sorry I guess."

It was cute seeing Livia confused over the calm answer she got.

Anjie confirmed the situation while beside me.

"Leon, why aren't you removing the village chief's restraints despite him being injured? Also, where were these elves in the ruins? Could it be that you captured them?"

She looked at the restricted elves with suspicion.

I'm quite troubled on what to do with these elves.

Since I shouldn't talk about the matter of the ruins so hastily, I was puzzled over what to say about them.

"Oh, these guys are uh—umm."

Sensing the ground shaking, I supported the surprised Anjie while looking towards the ruins.

It seems that it self-destructed without a hitch.

I can't say that it's safe, but with this, those ruins will no longer create artificial lifeforms again.

This is good. While thinking about it as such, a giant airship appeared in the sky.

—It was Luxon's main unit.

It blended into its surroundings like a form of optical camouflage, but I could see the unnatural phenomenon up there with my eyes.

I could faintly make out the appearance of Luxon's body in the sky.

“Hey!”

When I glared at Luxon, it spoke indifferently.

[Here's retaliation for deceiving me. To think you'd force this object onto me!]

The enraged Luxon used its main unit to slam a pillar of light into the ruins.

The village chief trembled in fear upon seeing the light.

“Don't tell me that this is what the collective chief was talking about. The demon lord. The demon lord is angry at us!”

Sorry, that's the work of my accomplice.

That's no demon lord.

The other elves looked as if the world was ending.

While everyone was captivated by the pillar of light, Hertrude was the only one who stared at the armor part.

All things considered, I feel as if I've seen this shape somewhere.

I've seen this black, sharp part somewhere, but I don't remember.

"Would you mind?"

"Hmm?"

Hertrude spoke to me.

"Do you want to hand this over to me? If it's money you want, I can prepare some."

Seeing Hertrude's serious expression, I had suspicions that she was scheming something.

"I refuse."

"If you do it, I will grant anything you want. Besides, why don't you try emigrating to the principality? I promise that you will be granted a suitable position. You have no reason to stick with the kingdom, right?"

"—I said no."

Though a bit hesitant, I rejected Hertrude's proposal.

Hertrude seemed to have just the slightest bit of frustration on her face.

"It seems you're quite fixated on the kingdom. Isn't the kingdom just a cruel authority for you countryside feudal lords? Or perhaps you don't notice that you're being tamed and oppressed?"

I couldn't help but agree with what Hertrude was saying.

However, fleeing to another country is not so easy. There's no guarantee that Hertrude will keep her promise.

Not to mention, I would enter an enemy nation—the principality bears a grudge towards me.

It's likely that I would encounter a surprise attack, get detained, and be executed when I arrive there.

Damn it—I wish I hadn't agitated the principality any more than necessary.

“I’m not interested.”

“—I see, what a shame. Truly, what a shame.”



Upon returning to the elven village, the collective chief was waiting there.

I also spotted many elves exiting their homes, kneeling on the ground, and begging to the sky for forgiveness.

“Demon Lord, please forgive us.”

“Please overlook our island.”

“I was against it! The village chief and the others were the ones invading the ruins!”

Kyle, seeing the situation at the village, grinned as if looking down on them.

He soon returned to his blank look though, so I pretended not to see it.

It seems that he has his circumstances.

Greg and Jilk looked around while both carrying the armor part.

“The atmosphere seems a bit different.”

“I thought they would resent us for the ruins collapsing, but it seems like we’re in the clear.”

When we arrived, the collective chief approached us.

She looked at the elves we seized and muttered something.

The female elf next to her spoke on her behalf.

“We would like to talk about the treatment of these people. If possible, the collective chief would like representatives to come to her residence.”

I decided to have a talk with the elves so that I could explain things.

The collective chief looked at Marie.

“Is it better to invite her as well?”

“Yes. Furthermore, that black-haired woman and those two over there as well.”

Being summoned, Greg and Jilk lowered their luggage, allowing them to take a break.

“You guys can talk it out. We’ll carry this thing.”

“It’s tough work having to bring it all the way to the airship.”

Hearing the two speak, Luxon made a voice of disgust.

[You’re placing that filth on my Partner?]

“Give it up already. C’mom, let’s go.”

This thing went and labeled the old armor part as filth.

We were in the collective chief’s residence.

As we were sitting, the collective chief across from us said a word of thanks.

“The collective chief gives you all her gratitude.”

Marie acted bashful.

“Your gratitude is appreciated, I guess. If you could prepare treasure or something valuable, I’d be delighted.”

Anjie silently glared at Marie.

“We didn’t do anything. On the contrary, you lost the historical ruins. You shouldn’t be thanking us.”

The collective chief shook her head.

“The collective chief is relieved that we were fortunate enough to have the old demon lord’s wrath only amount to this much.”

—Again with the demon lord.

Livia spoke to the collective chief.

“E, excuse me! This is off-topic, but what is a mixed one? Yumeria called herself that, and Kyle seems to be acting strange about it, so what does it mean?”

Marie openly made a displeased face towards Livia, who seemed worried about Kyle.

“I’d prefer if you didn’t meddle in the affairs of someone’s exclusive servant.”

“B, but, we can’t ignore this matter. Kyle’s attitude isn’t normal.”

Yeah, he’s definitely not normal.

When I looked at the collective chief’s spokeswoman, she cast her eyes downward while answering.

“You know that for elves, beauty is judged by magic, right?”

Jilk had proudly boasted about his knowledge of that.

As I nodded my head, she continued explaining.

“Magical power is unique to each individual. It’s difficult to explain to others, but it’s judged as a color. However, there are rare cases where some are born with a magical power with multiple colors mixed in.”

It’s not something we really comprehended, but it seems that’s what elves consider ugly.

“The magic such people use is strong and unique. However, we can’t help but feel disgusted. These people are called mixed ones within the collective.”

Does that mean they can use different magic than normal?

If the elves as a whole feel disgusted by mixed ones—then it can’t be helped.

It’s probably some instinctive repulsion or something like that.

“In addition, Kyle’s mother, Yumeria, left the collective for a period of time and used magic to act like a travelling entertainer. During that period, she made a child with a human male.”

Anjie’s eyes widened in surprise.

“I’ve heard rumors of this. A half-elf, right? So they do exist.”

The female elf nodded.

“The situation with half-elves is complicated. The fact that half-elves are born is an undeniable problem for males working away from home.”

Elven slaves are bought at high prices to serve as exclusive servants.

One of the reasons why they're well-received is that they can't have children while with humans.

Women would hesitate to buy a slave otherwise, even if the chance of such a thing happening was small.

Or would they?

I feel that some wouldn't hesitate.

Rather, they would buy them for that exact thrill.

What a cruel world this is indeed.

"S, so that's why he said that he was a half-elf."

Ignoring Marie, who was breaking into a cold sweat for some reason, I put the conversation to a close.

"So you're saying that the mother and child are considered burdens in the collective. Let's leave it at that."

"Leon, don't just close the conversation like that!"

Livia criticized me, but there's not much we can do.

"Poking our noses into the affairs of the other households isn't going to fix anything. We now know why Kyle hates this island, so it's fine, isn't it? Saying "stop feeling disgusted," to the elves isn't going to resolve the matter of Yumeria, so we have no other choice than to leave this matter alone."

In response to my words, the spokeswoman hung her head as if she was about to cry.

"I suppose that's true. This is something you wouldn't be able to solve."

The collective chief spoke to the spokeswoman.

“The collective chief will tell everyone’s fortunes. She says that this is a token of her gratitude.”

The residence was plainer than the village chief’s, and there were few objects. It didn’t seem like its resident was living luxuriously.

The collective chief’s gratitude, was it? I’ll accept it.

“Now then, first is the saint.”

“A fortune? I’m listening. Tell me something good.”

This girl really does have a big attitude.

Seeing her interest in the divination reminded me of my younger sister, who would check her horoscope every morning.

“It seems you’re under a curious fate. Furthermore, you’ve passed by your fated partner.”

“Who’s my fated partner?!”

“That is unknown, but it appears that you’ve already come across that person. It’s said that if you break off relations with that person, you will never be together again. Furthemore—”

“What?”

“You cannot run away from the burden you carry. A hard life awaits you. It seems that you have only two paths, to either gain everything or lose everything.”

Marie left her mouth agape for a short while, gradually getting angrier.

“Redo! I need a redo!”

“Now then, next is the black-haired one—”

“Listen to me!”

The silent Hertrude listened to her fortune while seeming uninterested.

“The collective chief says that at some point, your life’s turning point will be accompanied by great difficulty.”

“Oh, is that so?”

“Furthermore, you will meet your fated partner during that hardship. If you can walk together with that person, a light will shine on your difficult path and you will find a reliable support.”

“I, I see. Well, I’ll keep that in mind.”

The girl seemed just a tad bit delighted.

I suppose she was happy to hear about a fated partner.

I’m envious that such things can delight her.

“Next is you.”

“Me?”

Anjie, who looked a little eager, seemed different from usual, which was cute.

—I suppose fortune-telling is good every once in a while.

The spokeswoman seemed a bit perplexed after hearing the collective chief’s words.

“W, what is it? Tell me. I’m starting to feel uneasy.”

The spokeswoman spoke upon Anjie urging her.

“It seems that you and the one over there are protected by a hero, accompanied by the old demon lord. It’s unknown if you’ve already come across them or if you’ll meet them in the future.”

“—Hero?”

Anjie tilted her head to the side while Livia seemed a little confused.

“Such people appear in tales told to young boys. However, I haven’t come across such a grand person yet.”

“Same for me. I mean, who’s the demon lord?”

“If you don’t know, then I don’t know either, Anjie.”

The two talked to each other about it, but it seemed that they didn’t know anyone who would be that hero.

I’ve got a bad feeling about this.

Again—there’s that demon lord. She’s the one who’s been talking about the old demon lord’s wrath, right?

Could it be that? Did the collective chief use up all of her strength already? The village chief did say that her accuracy had diminished, right?

Actually, if there’s a hero, then show up already.

Save this otome game world right now.

While we’re at it, save me too. I’m serious, someone help me.

“If the collective chief is tired, then how about we just call it a day?”

The spokeswoman stopped me.

“I, it’s fine. Err, we will proceed with those two together.”

Perhaps this person also thinks that something’s strange.

Amidst the odd atmosphere, we listened.

"You two have fates that are intertwined in a complex way, ones that are far deviate from what they normally should be. Furthermore, you are carrying a burden that should normally belong to someone else."

Livia was puzzled.

"U, um, I suppose I did receive help when I needed it."

"Indeed. The both of you have something to rely on."

Anjie turned towards me.

"W, well, I received support many times though."

The spokeswoman was troubled.

"It appears that it's too complicated for even the collective chief to see into. However, it seems that she can see that you two are in the vicinity of a hero's protection."

Both Anjie and Livia glanced at me.

"Hero, you say?"

"Could it be that the hero—"

Noticing their glances, I denied their suspicions, naturally.

"No, it's not me."

Marie and Hertrude were both peeved and angry.

"Obviously not. You're just a mob."

"How pretentious."

Them bluntly saying it made me furious.

While thinking about such things, Livia asked the collective chief a request in a voice louder than usual.

“Um—please look into Leon’s fortune as well!”

Anjie did the same.

“P, please. Wouldn’t he feel left out if you didn’t look into his fortune? It’s not like I’m interested or anything, but this is something that everyone should have a part in!”

The collective chief looked at me.

“Collective Chief, if you’re tired, then it’s fine for you to rest. Even if you look at my fortune, it won’t be interesting.”

The collective chief straightened herself in front of me.

She spoke to me in a quiet voice.

Though her voice was hoarse, she seemed delighted.

—Don’t push yourself, old lady. Doesn’t it make this look like I’m doing something bad?

“Thank you for saving the ‘Fan Collective’. You seem to be a very kind one.”

Marie’s and Hertrude’s eyes widened in surprise towards the collective chief’s words.

—Do they have a complaint or something? I don’t mean to boast, but I am quite the kind man.

Leaving that aside, this is the first time I heard the name of this collective, Fan.

“My divinations cannot see into your future. However, one day—you will lose something important—harsh—the—J

What she told me was the worst kind of thing to hear.

I whispered in a hushed voice.

“C, Collective Chief? E, err, I’d like another go at that fortune~—”

When I earnestly requested for another divination, the collective chief remained silent.

“Huh? Collective Chief?”

The spokeswoman supported the collective chief.

“It seems that she’s fatigued. She has fallen asleep.”

I stood up and grabbed the collective chief’s shoulders.

“Wait! I beg of you, open your eyes! Please, tell me! Don’t just say something ominous like that and then fall asleep!”

Anjie and Livia pulled me away from the collective chief.

“Leon, how about we end this?”

“Treating an elderly person with disrespect is a big ‘no!'”

I know that, but I don’t want to accept what I heard.

I will not accept it!

Marie and Hertrude looked at me and snickered in delight.

“Serves you right.”

“Indeed. How pitiful.”

Marie and Hertrude grinned while calling me pathetic.

I already knew from the beginning that Marie was like this, but it seems that Hertrude indeed has a wicked nature too.

“I don’t want this! I demand a redo!”

Luxon, who had been silently listening, muttered something in displeasure.

[You seem quite dissatisfied despite saying that you didn’t believe in fortune-telling.]

“You’re being noisy! Nobody would want this kind of fortune!”

This isn’t a mere matter of whether my fortune sounds cool or not.

For the sake of living my life in ease, I won’t accept this fortune!

I mean, I’ll lose something important? Like what?!

Chapter 3: Fate

Partner departed from the elven island.

Inside the airship, I was talking with Luxon while watching the island growing smaller.

[What happened to not getting involved with the matters of other households?]

On the deck, Yumeria was staring at her native land.

She had an indescribable expression while placing an old leather traveling bag next to her.

Perhaps there was some sadness in that expression, or maybe a bit of happiness—it seemed quite complex.

“I couldn’t turn a blind eye to this. What am I supposed to do, tell the elves to stop feeling their instinctive repulsion? That’s impossible. This is the best I can do given the situation.”

[Nevertheless, there were many elves there to see off Yumeria. Interestingly, the female elves were all in approval. The male elves seemed a bit disappointed.]

“I couldn’t even laugh when they said that they didn’t want her to go since it would decrease her worth as a slave.”

[Slave work is an important source of income for the elves, so there’s no helping it.]

“—How unpleasant. Also, it serves those elven jerks right.”

[If that’s how you feel, you can show those elves what it means to have their value as a slave greatly reduced.]

“I’ve gotten my hands on a good trump card. I’ll make sure to put it to good use.”

The elven men of the island didn’t want to part from Yumeria, who gave birth to a half-elf.

Since I said that I was bringing her out of the island, they naturally opposed it.

In the end, I managed to bring her along, but I had to be a little pushy.

The collective chief and elven women helped out as well, but all the elves complied once I invoked the demon lord. It seems that the destruction of the ruins had affected them quite a bit.

I suppose things ended without too much trouble.

Before I knew it, an anxious Yumeria grabbed her bag and approached us.

“U, um, what’s going to happen to me?”

In order to reassure her, I answered her honestly with a softened tone.

“I’m looking for a servant to stay at my household, so I’ll let you work there.”

“B, but, I’m—”

Yumeria, with her low self-esteem, was discouraged about everything, or rather she was a withdrawn individual.

She did quite well as a travelling entertainer considering her personality.

“Humans don’t care about what elves consider beautiful. You know that, right?”

“—In the collective, they called me a dullard or a blockhead. I’m worried about whether I can be helpful.”

I heard that Yumeria’s treatment at the collective was terrible.

It’s sad to think that even elves have a cruel side.

Though, I suppose anyone would realize that after seeing how the elves are in the academy.

“Not to worry. Besides, there are quite a few reasons for—”

Kyle, with an obviously furious face, interrupted the conversation.

“What’s the meaning of this?!”

Kyle, who made a complaint towards me, was violent and enraged.

“Of what?”

“Bringing my mother out of the village. Do you understand the significance of this?”

Yumeria grabbed Kyle’s arm.

“Wait. Kyle, this person is concerned about me and—”

“Zip it! You’re always being deceived like this, aren’t you?! Do you know who this guy is?! He’s the worst heap of trash in the whole academy!”

Kyle’s shouting attracted the gazes of those on the deck.

“Awfully cruel of you to call me that.”

How rude of him to call me a heap of trash. He’s going too far. I don’t think I’m the worst there is.

The worst heap of trash would be—Marie, I think? Not me.

“It’s the truth. If you’re not a trash heap for beating up his Highness in front of the public, then who is?!”

“In that instance, I was evaluated as a good knight who had taught his Highness Julian a lesson. Unfortunately, that doesn’t make me a heap of trash.”

“It does!”

“Kyle, u, um—err.”

Yumeria was bewildered by Kyle’s threatening attitude.

Kyle seemed irritated at Yumeria.

“You always lose your proper judgement and get swindled. It was the same at the collective. You know nothing and go around carelessly, leaving everyone to work you to the bone while you remain penniless!”

Kyle’s outburst of complaints tormented Yumeria, his mother.

“They call you a mixed one, they look down on you and push you around for being a fool. You’re a hopeless cause when you just smile and accept it!”

Yumeria hung her head and teared up.

Unable to watch this any further, I was about ready to stop them until...

“What’s with that attitude?!”

Livia stepped in.

“W, what? This doesn’t concern you. Step back!”

“No, I won’t have any more of this. Why do you speak so rashly towards your mother? Apologize!”

Unlike how she usually was, her voice was loud, making her quite frightening.

Kyle flinched in front of Livia.

“You don’t even know anything. I’m broke because of this person. Do you know why I’m working as a slave at this age? Do you know how I’ve been treated at the collective?! You act so self-important, but you don’t know a thing!”

While weeping, Kyle stormed out of the deck.

He didn’t have his usual feisty attitude, and it was a little scary to wonder if that was actually him.

He was supposed to play the role of a cute, somewhat cheeky character.

When Livia was about to chase after him, Yumeria stopped her.

“P, please wait. It’s my fault. It’s as that child says, it’s my incompetence that led him to suffer.”

Since people around were gazing at us, I led the two to the ship’s interior.



Once we entered a vacant room, Yumeria began to speak.

Her position and treatment within the collective was just as bad as I imagined it to be.

“Mixed ones like me cannot use ordinary magic. Due to that, I couldn’t do work in the village that required magic.”

“The collective chief said that you could a special kind of magic though.”

When Livia said that, Yumeria nodded and demonstrated.

“I can’t do much, but I at least have some redeeming features.”

Seemingly glad, she retrieved a tiny flowerpot from her travelling bag.

She had that in there?

She then took out a pouch, retrieved a seed, and planted it.

As she held up her hand, the seed sprouted and grew into a lively flower.

“—Amazing.”

When I said that, Luxon agreed.

[Given what she can do, I cannot believe that the elven collective would place her in an unfavorable position. Under normal circumstances, this ability would be regarded as essential and they wouldn’t let her leave the collective. It seems that they prioritized their psychological reaction over this useful ability, doesn’t it?]

Luxon expressed its disbelief over the elves and also criticized them.

Perhaps being delighted from the praise, Yumeria’s went red up to her ears.

“I, it’s not that great. It has its limits. Aside from me being a mixed one, I think that the reason for my treatment in the collective also has to do with me giving birth to Kyle, a half-elf.”

It seemed that Livia wasn’t aware of the matters regarding half-elves.

“Why is that bad?”

Yumeria responded in a dispassionate way, though a little hesitant.

“—Mixed ones are hated, but they can live in the collective with their power. However, I went on a journey to know the outside world. Soon after, I trapped in a noble’s residence for a while and suffered through a lot there.”

It seemed that Livia also had an idea of what might have happened there.

I wanted to say something kind to her, but immediately held my tongue.

“When I made a child, I was driven out of the noble’s residence. When I returned to the collective, I was told that if I gave birth to a half-elf, the child’s value as a slave would diminish, and I was met with strong opposition towards giving birth. However, my belly had already grown large, and I wanted to see my child born.”

It was painful to watch Yumeria as she shed tears.

“So that’s what this is about.”

Livia made a face of disbelief while Luxon seemed convinced of something.

[Elves who are at risk of being pregnant would certainly be seen as defective exclusive servants. There’s no helping it if such a thing diminishes their value. However, nobody should know about it if one kept silent.]

Yumeria shook her head.

“While half-elves look the same, there are differences between them and elves. —That child’s growth speed is the same as that of humans.”

So they would know if someone's a half-elf by looking at their growth rate?

There's something I'm curious about then.

"In that case, why was he sold as a slave?"

When I asked that question, Yumeria covered her face and cried.

"There was a slave merchant who liked Kyle. The village chief couldn't refuse that person's request."

Hearing the details, Luxon reworded it in a way that Livia and I could easily grasp.

[So that acquaintance's request couldn't be refused. Did that slave merchant happen to know about half-elves?]

Yumeria nodded her head.

"Indeed. That person knew about the circumstances of elves. However, they said they wouldn't reveal the secret since it would diminish his value and cause trouble. They said that if they kept quiet about it, nobody would notice. In addition, there was a lot going on at the time, and it didn't seem like we would be able to make it through the winter—so Kyle sold himself without saying anything to me, left the money, and exited the house."

—Perhaps he was caring for his mother in his own way?

When I was about his age, I had been roaming around carefree.

This world really is cruel.

"I think the reason why that child is hard on me is because he's irritated about a lot of things. However, he's a good kid. I don't receive much from my salary, but he sends home money for me."

After listening, Livia hung her head and felt ashamed of herself.

“Leon, I didn’t know anything and yet I said such cruel things to Kyle.”

I suppose that I don’t dislike this part of Livia.

“You weren’t wrong, so there’s no problem. —I’ll talk to him.”

[Oh, planning to interfere again?]

“As Yumeria’s employer, some action should be taken, right?”

[You’re skilled at making excuses for yourself, Master.]

“—You’re being noisy.”

Why am I the one who has to take care of Kyle?

In the first place, shouldn’t this be Marie’s job?

Though, I don’t think she would be able to resolve this kind of issue.

Nothing good will happen if I don’t take action.

Besides—she wouldn’t be good with this parent-child stuff.

I need to solve this issue soon since otherwise, I won’t be able to poke fun at Kyle.



I came across a dead end within a narrow passage inside the ship.

When I found Kyle sitting there, hiding himself, I called out to him.



“Hey, brat.”

“—What do you want, worthless knight?”

This little brat is not cute at all.

“I’m here to talk about your mother.”

With the twitch of his pointed ears, Kyle listened silently.

“My family has recently rebuilt their house. It’s gotten bigger, so we need more workers. We will make proper arrangements so that servants living there will be properly accommodated.”

“And why should I take your word for it? It seems that you’ve taken a fancy to my mother’s appearance and now you’re trying to make a move on her. Do you really think I can trust your household?”

Yumeria’s outward appearance is certainly a cut above the rest, so I suppose he can’t help but be concerned about that.

Despite her young appearance, she had the large chest of a parent.

“The apple doesn’t fall far from the tree. My father, a baron, may appear a bit barbaric, but he has a pure heart. He treasures my mother and doesn’t engage in any adultery. —Probably.”

When I said “probably,” Kyle lifted his face and glared at me, which was a bit frightening.

“I cannot trust you.”

“I’m a man who keeps my word. Besides, I have a reason to keep that person close at hand. —A trump card against the elves. If they do anything to me, they’ll risk having their secret revealed. It’ll be worthwhile to be with me. I will not do anything harsh to such a valuable and talented individual.”

In all honesty, based on my credibility, there will be few people who would believe me if I did reveal the elves' secret.

Luxon also said that nobody would believe me and that they would likely think of it as a lie.

However, just having the elves know that I'm aware of their weakness is enough.

Personally, I'm thrilled that I found a way to intimidate the prideful elves.

Kyle was silent.

"If you want to meet up in the future, then stop by to see me. If it's just you, then I can grant you entrance into our territory. However, you can't bring Marie."

I hate that girl. Moreover, if she came to my family's household, she'll probably cause some mischief.

Kyle wiped his tears with a sleeve.

"—That person—my mother, is good-natured and easily deceived."

"Right."

"She's timid and has a low self-esteem—but I can't find it in me to hate her for how kind she is. What a terrible parent."

It seems that Kyle doesn't really hate Yumeria.

Kyle stood up, straightened himself, and silently bowed.

He didn't have his usual cheeky attitude.

"Viscount, please take good care of my mother."

It seems that he's worried about his mother, Yumeria, in his own way.

I nodded my head and reassured Kyle.

I then asked something I wanted to know.

This information was established in the game and it was also in Luxon's pool of information, but Kyle had changed masters many times.

"Now then, there's one thing I'd like to ask. I heard that beforehand, you had been rapidly switching masters. Could it be that—"

Perhaps not wanting to show his tears, Kyle answered while hiding his eyes.

"I decided to look for a trustworthy master. Even though I was able to find a woman who captivated his Highness the crown prince, it all fell to ruin because of you."

"Whoops."

When I gave a half-hearted apology, Kyle glared at me, but—he soon made a face of exasperation and sighed.

"You really are a nasty guy, aren't you? And here I thought that my livelihood would be smooth sailing."

Could it be that this guy is quite calculative?

"So, why aren't you abandoning Marie?"

"I'm tired of finding new masters. Besides, since she's the saint now, there will be many benefits to being with her. —That girl may seem bad, but she's strong."

Isn't this supposedly strong Marie neck deep in debt right now though?

It's not like Kyle doesn't know about that, so could it be that he's taken a liking to Marie?

Kyle gave me some advice.

"You should be careful about that principality's princess. It seems that she's scheming something."

"Hertrude?"

She didn't seem to give up on exacting revenge on the kingdom, so I did suspect that she was planning something.

"I've heard many things. I also spoke with the village chief, and I have a hunch that there's something dangerous about her. Well, knowing you, you'll be able to manage somehow. You'll just pull off whatever unfair tactic is necessary."

"What does that mean?"

"Exactly what it means."

Did Hertrude talk to Kyle while we were in the ruins?



It was the evening.

Entering the deck, I carried a heavy bag containing the sharp, black armor part.

"Are we really doing this?"

Luxon's red eye glowed ominously, which was a bit eerie.

[Of course. The preparations are already complete. This destructive impulsive is deeply ingrained into my program. Speaking in terms of humans, it's an instinct. I have to get rid of it within the next minute, or even the next second.]

—Is that so? All things considered, it's scary to have an AI talk about destructive impulses.

[It seems to have been preserved in the ruins as a research object, but it has no value now. Now then, hurry!]

I took out the black part from the bag in order to throw it out, and when I touched it with my hand, the part pulsated.

“Ugh, disgusting!”

There was a gap in the part that opened up to reveal a giant eye, making me let go.

The lively eyeball seemed like a human's, but it was definitely larger than one.

Twisting tentacles from the part reached out towards me.

[Be careful. This thing is still alive.]

The part raised a ghastly cry.

Luxon shined a laser from its eye to signal for robots to attack the part.

The tentacles were burned down and the part's eyeball continued receiving attacks.

The gathering robots carried the part and flung it into the sky—and then Luxon's main unit, which had been hidden, attacked the part with a direct hit.

“Are you sure we burned it without leaving behind a speck of dust?”

Luxon answered with a robotic voice that seemed satisfied.

[Of course. That thing is a weapon that must not exist. No relics of the new humans have any value in this world. At any rate—is that what they call ‘feeling refreshed’?]

Well, it seems that its mood has improved, which is good.

However, that was a relic of the new humans? How revolting.

Having disposed of the part on the empty deck, we returned to the ship’s interior.

Thereupon, on the opposite side of the deck, Hertrude appeared.

“So you were here.”

“What are you doing? Actually, what happened to your escort?”

Hertrude didn’t answer my question.

“I wanted to talk with you alone. I already said this at the collective, but could you sell me that object you found? To tell the truth, it’s a valuable item. I will pay a suitable amount for it.”

—Hmm? That thing had worth?

“That thing was actually valuable? Wasn’t it just a junk part?”

In the first place, how is that thing supposed to be useful?

“You do not know its value. So, sell it to me. It’s even alright if you want me to offer it to the kingdom. I’ll only negotiate with a government official this time.”

Staying silent might not be the best option.

Luxon said something like [Oh my,] acting as if it has nothing to do with this.

Are you just going to like act you aren't involved?

“—Sorry. I dropped it.”

When I said that, Hertrude's mouth was agape for several seconds.

“A, are you an idiot?!”

—She was furious.

“No, you see—I got bad vibes from it!”

“That's not the problem! Idiot! Idiot! Complete idiot! I can't believe it. You dropped an important treasure? Lower the ship and retrieve it at once!”

[No.]

Hertrude trembled when Luxon immediately refused.

“T, this matter will be reported to the kingdom's upper management!”

[Oh, and what is that supposed to mean? The treasure was found by Master and is his property. You'll only burden the upper management by complaining to them.]

There's nothing left of it, so I can't retrieve it anyways.

“If you can't handle such valuable treasure with care, you have no qualifications to be an adventurer! What have you been learning at the academy?!”

“Sorry. The academy's just a place to find marriage.”

[Too bad.]

Luxon was quite cold towards Hertrude.

Hertrude turned around, causing her hair to sway, and returned to the ship's interior.

"K, keep this moment in your memory!"

Seeing her leave that parting remark left me with one thought.

"—What an interesting person. I thought she was just a calm beauty, but surprisingly, she has a plethora of emotions."

[Are you interested in her? She's deviates quite a bit from your tastes, Master. The stats on her chest are too low.]

"Do you think of me as a guy who only judges people by their chest?"

[I do.]

Luxon's immediate reply irritated me.



Upon returning to the academy, I rushed to get ready for the royal palace.

Luxon stared at me as I was changing my outfit.

[A report as soon as you come back? How tough.]

"I wonder why I have to do all this while still being a student."

When I made a complaint, Luxon responded.

[What happened to being an adult male on the inside?]

"My heart is always that of a child who never forgets how to have fun.]

Since I have to head towards the royal palace immediately, I had no time to rest.

[Didn't you call yourself an adult beforehand?]

“Did I say that?”

[You did. I haven't forgotten.]

“You sure are an insistent one. Listen, forgetting whatever's inconvenient is also the way of an adult.”

[That's called escapism. I suggest you improve yourself.]

“I refuse. C'mon, we're going.”

[Alright.]

Luxon and I left the room.



I was in a hallway of the royal palace.

I was dead tired after having to report the latest matters.

It was dark outside.

“It's already night.”

[This visit had more to do with a women's tea party than the report.]

What awaited me there was a tea party with women who had graduated from the academy.

The daughters of influential nobles and of nobles who had recently gained power were there.

The tea party lasted for several hours despite the report being done in about ten minutes.

“I did not enjoy it at all.”

[That seems about right.]

The daughters of baron through earl households were there at the tea party.

However, they all had exclusive servants with them.

They kept talking about money, asking me what kind of revenue I would earn in the future.

It felt like being asked about my annual income at a mixer, I suppose.
—It gave me a headache.

Walking along the nearly vacant hallway in the royal palace, I happened to come across the queen, Milaine, who was wearing a different dress than when I had last met her.

Her platinum blonde hair looked as if it was sparkling.

Her gentle eyes soothed me and her smiling face compelled me to fell delighted as well.

“Oh, it seems that the viscount is tired.”

The attendant standing behind her stood with a blank expression.

I braced myself and straightened my attire.

“Apologies for the appearance. As for what the queen—”

“Viscount, may I have some of your time?”

—I felt joyed on the inside after having Milaine call out to me.

“It would be my pleasure!”

Luxon muttered something while watching me accompany the smiling Milaine.

[What an easy-to-read person.]

Luxon had hidden itself when Milaine arrived.



I was inside a room within the royal palace.

I was sitting across from Milaine, drinking some black tea that was brought here.

It's better than the tea I have.

It's not just the tea leaves, but also the technique that has to do with it.

While feeling a slight sense of defeat, I listened to what Milaine had to say.

Luxon stayed silent and hid near my side.

“Have you been getting along well with her Highness Hertrude? I was a bit startled to hear that her Highness was taken along for an adventure.”

“She was forced to come along. It seemed like she was given permission to though.”

Milaine’s expression turned gloomy. It seems that she didn’t want to permit it.

“There are people in the royal palace who have varying opinions about it. As for me, I don’t think that this matter falls under studying abroad.”

It seems that despite Milaine’s objections, someone gave permission.

I suppose anyone would be worried if the princess of a country that declared war was in the same academy their son was attending.

We need to be watchful of Hertrude's safety, so if possible I'd prefer if she stayed still.

I agree with that opinion.

If some crazed person appeared and Hertrude got hurt, it would be an international issue.

When she's in the academy, she's escorted by female knights dispatched from the royal palace and students who have been given detailed instructions.

Even so, there's still some unease.

"I also spoke with her Highness. She didn't say it explicitly, but she holds quite the grudge against the kingdom."

I didn't see it for myself, but I did hear about the kingdom's doings.

Listening to them made me raise an eyebrow.

However, I can't reply to Milaine by lightheartedly saying "The kingdom sure is cruel, isn't it~?"

I kept my mouth shut over this dicey issue. Is it cowardly? Yeah, it sure is. I'm a coward.

As I kept silent, Milaine continued.

"Viscount—no, Leon. I don't think the principality will give up."

"It seems that way."

It's not so easy to erase a mountain of grudges.

"Even the matter of the bodyguards is causing trouble. Did you hear about the Lafuan viscount household?"

When I shook my head, Milaine place a hand over her cheek and with a troubled expression, told me about what happened.

“Julian had been working around the clock to solve the saint’s debt, but the Lafuan viscount household increased it further. I thought about revoking that family, but as to be expected, there was a lot of opposition towards destroying the saint’s household.”

Marie really is cursed, isn’t she?

I wonder if Marie will faint after hearing that her debt increased even though it should have been resolved.

Though, I’d kind of want of laugh if I saw her in despair.

“It would be nice if the royal palace and temple could help pay back the debt on her behalf. However, there are a lot of things to budget for next year.”

After hearing about it, in order to pay back Marie’s debt—well, it would require a large cut in flexible funds, or in other words a large budget cut.

The debt is that large.

Just hearing about it alone makes this tea tasty.

What fine tea cakes these are.

It seems that I’ll sleep well tonight.

“Now for the main subject at hand. The commanding officer of the saint’s bodyguards is—you, right? Now it’s become a question of where responsibility lies.”

“—Huh?”

“Even when considering the time of your appointment and other matters, the royal palace and temple will be calling for someone to be punished.”

This doesn’t look good.

Just what kind of responsibilities do I have?

“W, wait a minute. My job is to be her bodyguard, so I don’t understand why I’m involved in her debt too.”

“I know that. Even so—this is a world where people will look for someone to blame.”

This world is the same my previous one.

Society is rotten.

“There are also people who are jealous of your sudden rise. As for me, I can’t bear to see the knights, who supported the promotion, being accused. I’ll need to patch things up as much as possible.”

“Thank you very—huh? Supported?”

“Right. You see, it was during the suppression of the sky pirates. Brad and Greg visited me and spoke about your achievements. There was also that matter of the principality, so I endorsed it.”

Milaine gave me a dazzling smile—no wait, something’s not right here!

I didn’t want to get promoted.

“S, say, rather than being me promoted—”

“Rather than being promoted?”

Milaine, who tilted her head to the side, looked sublime.

She's so charming despite her age! I might be older on the inside, but I'm feeling kind of skittish all of the sudden.

Would it okay to hurt this person by saying that I didn't want to be promoted?

Perhaps she would regret promoting me.

—I can't let her feel sad.

I opened my mouth to quickly change course.

“—I want you.”

“W, wait! W, w, w, we can't. I mean, the age difference between you and me is akin to that of a parent and child.”

We're less than twenty years apart—we can't? I mean, she's more splendid than the girls in the academy. She's perfect!

I clutched Milaine's hand.

“Even so, I—”

“Ahem!”

I then heard a forced cough.

I don't know who did it, but it was one of the attendants accompanying Milaine.

Whoops. —I got carried away and made a move on her again. I forgot that this was the royal palace.

Milaine blushed.

What a nice reaction. It makes me want to tease her.

“Again with the teasing. That's a bad habit of yours, Leon.”

If only she wasn't the queen—I'd really go after her then.

Changing the topic, Milaine spoke about Hertrude once more.

"By the way, there's something curious about her Highness Hertrude."



Receiving news that Leon had left for the royal palace, three sub-race exclusive servants gathered inside the student dormitory.

One of them was "Meole," the exclusive servant of Leon's older sister, Jenna.

The tall, muscular, cat-eared man stood before Leon's room along with his companions.

"That Kyle guy betrayed us. He won't lend us a hand."

The other two calmed Meole down.

"He's the saint's servant. He can't afford to do any reckless conduct."

"The elves as a whole are strange people, isn't that why he refused? More importantly, it's a good thing we got the key."

"You mean this?"

Meole, having obtained a key to Leon's room, made a smirk.

"When that woman went in and out of this room, I took the key and, well, you know. That foolish woman is too easy to deal with."

Those weren't words to be said towards a servant's master, but slavery is a relationship defined purely by contract.

Slaves have no intention to work earnestly.

Unlocking the door, they entered Leon's room while being cautious of their surroundings.

One of them stood outside the room to be on guard duty, so Meole and the other servant carried a package into the room.

"What do they plan on doing with this thing?"

"As if I'd know. We place this in the guy's room and we receive money, end of story."

The exclusive servants hated Leon. One reason being that he defeated the exclusive servants who tried to make a move on Milaine during the school festival.

There was a legitimate reason as well, but nevertheless, from the viewpoint of the exclusive servants, Leon was a unlikeable boy.

Their current action was a form of revenge.

Once the three finished their work, they then left the room.

It was odd that there were exclusive servants in the boys' dorms, but no boy there dared to question them.

◇

It was the next day after school.

I had a tea ceremony to host.

The guys had to periodically do tea ceremonies or else the girls would spread ill rumors of them.

Well, it's not like my reputation matters at this point though.

Besides, tea ceremonies, or rather tea, is a hobby I've come to enjoy after arriving in this world.

Hmm, such an intellectual hobby indeed suits me.

However, today's guests were quite unique.

There was the daughter of an earl, "Deirdre Fou Roseblade," who had blonde hair in ringlets. She wore red lipstick, had a strong-willed appearance—and had an amusing personality.

"You're quite carefree."

While in front of a seemingly dissatisfied Deirdre, I drank the tea I made.

"Today's perfect."

While I was satisfied, there was another girl there who seemed a bit irritated.

"Clarice Fier Atlee," Jilk's former fiancee, spoke with me about royal court affairs.

"Leon, you're in a very dangerous spot. Do you know that? The Redgrave duke household is weakening and has lost its influence in the royal palace. The emerging Marquis Frampton is advocating that strict action should be taken against you."

Since I'm the commanding officer for Marie's bodyguards, it seems that he's also the one who wants me to be responsible for her debt.

I can't help but laugh at how high-handed he is.

"The debt is not my responsibility. It's the responsibility of Marie—or rather, her household."

Deirdre crossed her legs and put her elbows on the table.

“Foolish. He doesn’t care about the reason. He wants to hunt you down. Furthermore, he wants to steal your airship. They’re just a group of people trying to come up with a pretext.”

“How frightening~.”

It seems that the nobles have quite a lot of spare time if they’re trying to find fault with me.

I can understand his desperate desire to take Luxon away from me, but he’s not the most righteous person for conspiring with others to reach that goal.

“It seems that Marquis Frampton is quite acquainted with her Highness Hertrude. The reason why the principality is quite lenient right now is because of Marquis Frampton’s faction taking control of power.”

Deirdre, perhaps looking for what kind of response I would make, had a serious expression.

She’s a genuine noble’s daughter, so her information on the royal court should be accurate.

In addition, Clarice, being a noble of the royal court, would be even more knowledgeable on the subject.

“Currently, Marquis Frampton is pushing his way through, a bit forcefully even. Leon, you need to be cautious.”

It seems that this has turned into a troublesome matter, but I don’t really want to get involved with the royal palace.

—That feeling hasn’t changed, even now.

“In that case, just demote me already.”

Deirdre smiled.

"You really are a fool. You think those people are going to be that lenient? Before you know it, they'll pull the carpet from under you at any given—"

Deirdre's voice was interrupted by a sound of hurried footsteps.

A great number of knights and soldiers entered the room, pointing their weapons at me.

"Are you Leon Four Baltfault? You'll have to come with us."

Clarice stood up.

"—Quite impolite, isn't it? He's officially a viscount of the lower-fourth rank."

The knight raised the corner of his mouth and laughed at the dauntless Clarice.

"Rank has no meaning for a traitor. Now then, come along, brat!"

The knights seized me from both sides and dragged me out of the room.

"A traitor? He's a hero."

Deirdre exclaimed as such.

"Hero? You can't call him a hero when he's been making secret dealings with the principality. Now then, excuse us."

The knight had a stern look.

Secret dealings with the principality? Well now, what's this all about?



The girls' dorms.

Anjie, entering Hertrude's room, was breathing a bit roughly since she came in a hurry.

Hertrude, who calmly looked at Anjie, sat down on a chair while crossing her legs, placing a hand on her knee.

It was as if she had been waiting for Anjie.

"You're in quite a hurry. I'll forgive your rudeness just this once."

"What are you planning?"

Hertrude smiled.

"Hmm? Whatever are you talking about? Speak clearly."

"Are you playing dumb now? Rumors have spread about Leon supposedly working with the principality!"

"Anjelica, it's not good to suspect people without any proof."

In response to Hertrude asserting the lack of proof, Anjie readjusted her breathing and spoke.

"It seems that you're quite close with Marquis Frampton. What's the reason for going so far to unseat Leon?"

Hertrude spoke a word of pity for Anjie.

"You went to me for that kind of reason? It's as the rumors say, you're quite hysterical. Too much of that and you'll be no more than a mere fool."

Anjie brought her face closer to Hertrude, who was giggling.

"What are you thinking? Do you really want to go to war? What can you people do when you've lost to Leon already?"

The smiling Hertrude began to talk about Leon's shortcomings.

“You have quite the high evaluation of Mr. Hero, don’t you? I’ve taken a look at the viscount too, just for a short while though. From appearances, he’s an ordinary person. Perhaps he has some potential, but as a knight, he’s below-average.”

Seeing Anjie’s eyebrows shift to express a sense of discomfort, Hertrude laughed even further.

“I’m right, aren’t I? Kind-hearted knights are just a fantasy. A knight who can’t kill in war is useless. Very different from Bandel.”

Hertrude had been looking closely at Leon.

“He’s a knight who stumbled upon a lost item. That familiar he has is related to that lost item, right? It’s a waste of potential to have it only follow his orders.”

Anjie stopped herself from talking about what Leon could do if he was being serious.

No matter how good he may be, he’s still immature as a knight.

This is a world where war is commonplace.

In this world, a knight who can’t kill is unqualified as an adult.

“Do you hate us that much?”

Hertrude’s smile disappeared.

“What do you know? Do you know the grief of the citizen’s whose children, parents, and families were killed? Don’t think that we’ll forgive you for having attacked us so one-sidedly!”

“How naive. It seems you’re the one who knows nothing. The royal palace was right to have you study abroad. What you need—”

Anjie was interrupted by a group of female knights who entered the room.

“Halt! Anjelica, you’re coming with us.”

“—What?”

The female knights surrounded Anjie.

“What are you all doing?”

The female knights smiled and answered her question.

“How ill-mannered. Assaulting her Highness Hertrude.”

“It seems that the duke’s daughter is uncouth.”

“Now then, this way.”

Anjie understood it all. The female knights, originally thought to be Hertrude’s escorts who served to supervise her, were already working with the enemy.

With a face of disgust, the knights restrained her.

Anjie’s gaze shifted from the knights to Hertrude as she questioned her.

“Are you people getting serious?”

Hertrude stood up and whispered to Anjie’s ear.

“This time, the Holfaul Kingdom will be stained with blood. And then, this land—”

Anjie’s eyes widened upon hearing the last few words.

“—will sink. Stop us, if you think you can, Anjelica.”



Seeing my devastated room inside the boys' dorm, I made a face as if I had bitten into a bug.

There was a letter there indicating that I was connected to the principality.

There were a large collection of letters I've never seen before in my room.

—I'm quite impressed that they went this far.

A knight stood before me and unfolded a letter.

"You can't talk your way out of this one. —To think that the hero was actually conspiring with the enemy nation behind our backs."

I shifted my gaze to the shameless knight.

"You're quite devoted to them, aren't you?"

I scornfully laughed at the knight, who brought his face close to mine.

"You're quite thorough in unseating me."

Thereupon, with a smile, the knight hit me in the face.

As I fell over, the knight's subordinates gathered together.

"Your compliance, traitor!"

After having been punched despite not showing resistance and lying on the floor, Luxon looked at me.

I gestured that I was fine and then let myself be restrained.

—Though I felt a bad premonition before, this really is the worst possible outcome.

“How does it feel to have risen up, only to have your status soon taken away?”

“I thought it was suspicious. It’s impossible for a brat like you to become a viscount.”

“It seems you were involved in some evil deeds behind the scenes. Be prepared for a thorough investigation.”

As I was tied up, schoolboys gathered outside my room.

Among them, I saw the figure of Meole, an exclusive servant.

He looked at me and gave a telling smile.

“Little bastard.”

Meole’s smile heightened in response to my words.

I was kicked from behind and fell down.

I was then forced to get up, pulled by my hair, and as I walked, I also saw schoolgirls and their exclusive servants outside.

“Serves you right.”

“I thought something was strange from the beginning.”

“I suspected him this whole time.”

As I walked along the path the students made, they spoke their mind and threw rubbish at me.

Really now, they’re making a complete reversal in attitude again? Though—there shouldn’t be reason for them to go this far.

The students in the academy made a complete 180, or rather a full 360 back to the beginning.

Strangely, this feels more fitting.

The knight who kicked me from behind spoke.

“Viscount Leon Fou Baltfault—no, you’re just Leon now. Prepare yourself, criminal.”

They listed a variety of charges, but they were all false accusations.

I was restricted, set to be thrown into jail.

“This is not how I wanted to be demoted.”

Garbage flied around as I cracked a joke, and to make matters worse, I was being kicked as well.

Pushing her way through the crowd of people, Livia appeared.

“Leon!”

I made a small wave to Livia, who called out my name, and then walked while trash was being thrown at me.

Among the crowd, Clarice, Deirdre, Daniel, and Raymond looked at me in worry.

Good grief—this otome game world really is the worst place to live in.

Chapter 4: The Other Side

Hertrude and Marquis Frampton visited the Holfaul Kingdom's treasury within the royal palace.

Numerous treasures and lost items decorated the place.

Among them were many tools of an unknown purpose.

(I found it. I heard that it was in the kingdom's treasury, but I didn't think that they'd leave it out in the open like this. Even that marquis doesn't know its true worth.)

Visiting the treasury, when Hertrude found the item she was looking for, she stood still and spoke.

“Marquis, why don't you relinquish this item?”

Marquis Frampton stroked his beard while responding to Hertrude's proposal.

“An arm for ancient armor, is it? This is a very valuable object, so even with my authority, I cannot do much.”

The black, sharp right arm indeed held historical value.

However, it was judged that it could no longer be used now and was there as a decoration.

(Leaving a dangerous object like this out in the open, the kingdom is beyond saving. In order to prevent the off-chance of them using it, it should come to us.)

Unaware of Hertrude's thoughts, Marquis Frampton displayed a haughty attitude.

“Is there something you want to ask?”

Marquis Frampton made a smile towards Hertrude, who was folding her arms.

“Hohoho, you seem quite interested in it. May I ask what it’s used for?”

Hertrude glared at the newer treasures within the treasury.

One of them was the magic flute—another was a large sword used for armor, treasured by the Principality of Fanoss’ strongest knight, “Bandel Hymn Zenden.”

The sword, which had been handled by a humanoid power suit, was massive and gave off a dignified feeling.

The large sword was a valuable item wielded by Bandel, who was feared as a black knight, and was made from a special metal.

It frustrated her that it was in the kingdom’s treasury despite originally being the principality’s.

“The magic flute and Bandel’s sword were stolen. How about handing over those treasures?”

“Stolen is an unpleasant way to say it. These are treasures that the kingdom obtained.”

Indeed, Leon had stolen the treasures and offered them.

Marquis Frampton had made an evasive and ambiguous reply, but then made a serious facial expression after perceiving that Hertrude was being serious.

“—Your Highness, do you want this treasure?”

“I want it.”

“What is it used for?”

“It’s an ancient armor part. What use is there other than for appreciation?”

“Indeed.”

Hertrude was a little nervous. She believed that if she showed too much desire for it, it would be suspicious, but was relieved that she managed to avoid that.

Marquis Frampton changed the topic.

“I was thinking about a friendship with the principality.”

“I’m glad for that.”

Hertrude spoke about being glad, but there was no emotion in her words.

Marquis Frampton, aware of that, continued speaking anyways.

“As a mediator for this friendship, I was thinking about asking his Highness Julian to head to the principality.”

“Isn’t he that saint’s lover?”

“It’s embarrassing to talk about. I wish that his Highness Julian was as self-aware as you are. Now then, onto the main topic—we are ready to transfer a portion of the territory to the principality. However, for that purpose, it is necessary to clean the kingdom.”

Upon hearing Marquis Frampton’s proposal, Hertrude showed more interest.

“—I’d like to hear more about this.”

“The principality can be traced back to a branch of Holfault’s royal family. I was thinking of using this as a chance for a genuine friendship. We can cooperate—don’t you think so?”

Hertrude took a cold attitude in response to Marquis Frampton's call for cooperation.

"That's out of the question. You're saying that we're going to lay down our arms just because we're being given a small portion of land? Besides, that talk about transferring land is probably a lie."

Marquis Frampton shook his head and explained with a smile.

"Your Highness Hertrude, you seem to not know the circumstances of the kingdom. The process of transferring is no problem."

"What are these circumstances?"

They began to talk about the Holfaul Kingdom's internal affairs.

"There's an area where a fight will occur with the principality, but the kingdom has no direct control over."

Some feudal lords resided on floating islands while others were on the mainland.

In other words, although the kingdom had pieces of territory—not all of them were attached to the royal family's land.

"I see. I almost forgot about Margrave Field's floating island. Though, that's not your people's territory, so there's no way you would be able to transfer it."

The household of one of Marie's lovers, "Brad Fou Field," was in the important position of exercising authority over the principality.

There were feudal lords in other lands as well that the kingdom had no right to hand over.

—However...

“Without the support of our kingdom, those rural feudal lords can’t put up much resistance. The principality has no need to deal with such worthless feudal lords, right?”

“That’s one way to put it. I won’t say no to the offer. Though—is there some kind of benefit to this for you people?”

When she held suspicions about the proposal to decrease the amount of land the kingdom had, Marquis Frampton’s mouth formed the shape of a crescent as he smiled.

There was a glint in his eye.

“Your Highness—rural feudal lords are a nuisance for the kingdom.”

“Nuisance, you say.”

(Come to think of it, Marquis Frampton and the Field household are in opposing factions.)

Hertrude accepted the proposal while not wanting to hear any more about the complicated matters of the royal palace.

“Alright. Let’s go with that. If his Highness Julian is becoming a husband, then let’s make this a pre-celebratory gift for him.”

Their focus was on the sharp right arm made for armor.

Marquis Frampton nodded with a smile.

“A splendid deal. Now then, tell me when the principality is ready. I believe that the best scenario is for us to clean up the royal palace and then make peace once the principality achieves victory.”

“—Sure. I promise in my name.”

(His face is telling me that he thinks he got a good deal out of a supposed piece of junk. As if I'm just a young girl in the palm of his hand.)

While stopping herself from smiling, Hertrude was relieved that she had accomplished her objective.

(I'll quickly send this to the principality.)

She then shifted her attention to the magic flute.

(Rauda—I know you'll resent me for being foolish sister.)

While biting her lip, she took action in order to achieve yet another objective.

“What about Viscount Baltfault? You made sure to seize the lost item, right?”

Marquis Frampton ceased his smile and nodded.

“Yes, the airship he calls Partner and the armor with the showy name of Arroganz are in our possession. They’ll be analyzed soon. I wanted that little brat to be executed at once, but the queen seems to have taken him as a pet. We’re having a small amount of trouble.”

Hearing that, Hertrude smiled.

She was convinced that the Holfaul Kingdom would no longer be able to use its trump card.

(The principality will have the advantage once Viscount Baltfault is gone. Judging from that familiar’s attitude, they won’t be able to control the airship or armor.)

“I see. With the marquis still there, the kingdom is safe. How close is it until the day you’re named as the prime minister?”

Hearing the words “prime minister,” Marquis Frampton made a smile.

“No no, having me be something like the prime minister is preposterous.”

(Lies. You were planning that from the very start. You must have done a lot of reckless actions to prevent the Redgrave family from ascending to the prime minister position. However, thanks to that, my objective was accomplished. Thank you, foolish prime minister.)

Hertrude asked Marquis Frampton a question.

“I’d like to quickly send a letter to the principality. Could you arrange an airship?”

“We’ll arrange one at once.”



A group stood in sky above the Principality of Fanoss.

The former black knight, “Bandel Hymn Zenden,” stood on an airship coming back from the kingdom.

Upon receiving a delivered item, he didn’t understand what it was.

He knew that it was some part for armor, but didn’t recognize it.

It made no sense for it to be one right arm.

“This is from the princess?”

“Indeed. We were told that it’s an important item.”

Bandel had a noticeable scar from his brow to the top of his head.

He was such a strong knight that one wouldn’t believe he was beyond middle age.

“Could it be that—this is a lost item?”

“Indeed. It was found in the kingdom’s treasury.”

Bandel wasn’t the only one on the airship.

“Garrett,” who used to serve as a messenger with the kingdom before, was there too.

He stroked his jaw with his hand, a habit formed from the facial hair that he no longer had.

His eyes burned with a passion for revenge.

“I would have preferred if the princess had sent an item that was a little more useful. Has the execution of that ‘heretic knight’ even happened yet?”

Heretic knight—was an alias used by the principality for Leon.

His actions strayed from the path of a knight, resulting in that nickname.

Though Leon didn’t kill his enemies, the knights and soldiers who returned home were slandered by the principality’s nobles and citizens.

It was as Leon had said it would be.

Bandel was treated as a senile man and lost his title as the black knight.

“I will not tolerate the princess being insulted.”

However, he still retained his dignity.

Upon being glared at, Garrett shifted his gaze towards a letter, as if to escape from Bandel.

“I, I didn’t intend such—hmm?”

After a brief period of time—Garrett’s eyes widened when looking at the letter, shifting his gaze numerous times between the black, sharp right arm and the letter.

“C, could it be?”

“What happened?”

When Bandel asked that question while folding his arms, Garrett raised his voice in joy.

“Black Knight. No, former Black Knight—are you ready to give up your life?”

Bandel laughed scornfully at Garrett’s words.

“I’m already an old fool who’s died as a knight. I’ll do anything to help the princess.”

“Splendid! Then, let me explain. This is a piece of an ancient—no, legendary armor. A lost item that only a portion of the royal family even knows about.”

As everyone gazed at the armor’s right hand, Garrett opened his arms.

“What a wonderful gift! Her Highness Princess Hertrude carried out her duty well. With this, her younger sister, her Highness ‘Princess Hertrauda Sera Fanoss,’ has no enemies! This time, even the heretic knight has no chance!”

“It can even compete against the heretic knight?”

“Yes, there’s a good chance of success. However—it seems that the heretic knight has currently been betrayed by his country and imprisoned. Just as he deserves.”

“It’s a shame that we won’t be able to finish him off in a battlefield.”

“I can’t comprehend the feelings of a military man. However, thanks to this, one of her Highness Hertrauda’s enemies has disappeared.”

Hertrude’s younger sister was Hertrauda, the second princess.

A trump card of the principality leading fleets and monsters in the sky.

Bandel squinted, staring at the armor’s right arm.

“I’ll help Hertrude. Even if it means giving up my life.”

Bandel tightly grasped his fist while next to Garrett, who was joyed that he could get revenge over his moustache.



I was in a dungeon within the royal palace.

The damp place was chilly and ice cold.

The air was stagnant and it was not a place I wanted to be in for long.

Since I had to be a prisoner, my hands were cuffed.

As I was yawning, the jailer gave me a signal.

It seems that a visitor arrived.

That person made a complaint upon seeing me.

“I misjudged you, Baltfault!”

The owner of that grand voice was the one who would most likely become the ruler of the royal palace.

It was Julian.

He might have been angry at me, but I'm irritated that he's here as well.

"Who are you?"

When I acted as if I didn't know who he was, his face turned red.

"Julian! 'Julian Rafua Holfault'! That's beside the point, explain your betrayal! I thought you were a coward, but I didn't think that you'd do this!"

He was speaking recklessly.

It seems that despite how sly Julian believed I was, he didn't think I would betray the kingdom.

—However, now that I think about it, it wouldn't be strange for me to betray you guys.

And you're the cause of that. This is your fault.

No, wait a minute. Rather than it being him, perhaps marriage is the cause? Each time I search for marriage, it results in catastrophe and I've thought about abandoning this country many times.

"I didn't betray the kingdom. I'm being falsely accused. Save me, Prince."

"You're still at it with the jokes. Tell me everything, Baltafault."

It seems that he isn't going to help me.

Well, if our positions were swapped, I wouldn't help Julian out either, I suppose.

In the first place, this guy doesn't have much authority.

"Tell you what?"

“You’ve got a big attitude despite standing before me.”

“Do you think that I have any attachment to a country that’s treating me like a traitor and sending me to execution? I’ll make you regret this someday, so remember this. I’m a guy who strikes back after getting hit.”

“Is that so? I actually have something to say, so let’s get this over with.”

He proceeded to speak about the situation regarding me.

“Your Partner and Arroganz have been seized by the kingdom’s chivalric order. It seems they can’t operate it, so there’s no problem there.”

That’s quite the problem for me.

I’m not worried since Luxon will handle it, but I am discomfited.

“There’s a push to execute you, but there’s also a push to protect you. Perhaps you’re caught in the middle of a factional dispute, but the situation is strange.”

From my point of view, the royal palace is always strange.

They’ve been giving me promotion after promotion. I don’t think it’s only this occasion in particular that things are strange. It’s strange all the time, so if there are any periods of normalcy, then do tell me.

“So?”

“Baltfault—why did you betray us? What are you scheming this time?”

Quite harsh of him to assume that I’m scheming something, let alone betray the country.

Am I that cruel of a person?

“I said that I’m being falsely accused. There’s someone who’s out to get me.”

“What?!”

What are you surprised about?! You’re the prince who lived in the royal palace, right? Use your noggin a little! You’re too naive.

“You thought I was betraying the kingdom? If I were to betray it, I would have done something with a little more force.”

“I suppose you’re right. If it was you, there would have been more force to it—and you would keep doing things just to spite us.”

Though convinced, Julian annoyed me. What kind of trust do you have towards me?

So Julian revealed what was on his mind, but why is he here to consult me?

“I’m not experienced in war, but I’m sensing that some conflict will arise soon.”

I was about to tell him that it would be a rebellion at worst, but I closed my mouth.

After all, the Holfaul Kingdom is a large country with many foes.

There are numerous enemies hostile towards the kingdom, such as the principality.

Under such circumstances, it’s frightening to think about the verge of a rebellion, or the principality’s schemes.

I’ve got a bad feeling.

“—Is there some kind of corrective force?”

I can't help but feel that some mysterious power is at work, forcing events to realign with the story of that otome game.

Julian was puzzled by my mutters.

"Corrective? What are you talking about, Baltfault?"

"The story. I'm being detained here, so I don't know the full story of what's going on."

Julian put his hand on his jaw and pondered about something, so I made a request.

"Hey, let me out."

"I cannot. I have no authority right now."

Useless prince. Well, I suppose trouble would arise if he let me out.

All things considered—I've got some suspicions.

The magic flute, the principality's trump card, has a potent ability and is being kept under strict safekeeping by the kingdom.

Hertrude's absent from the principality, so the country wouldn't make a move right now.

However, Hertrude's been acting strangely.

It's like there's this corrective force that's making reality follow the story.

"—This really is a terrible world."

Ignoring my mumbling this time, Julian quickly left the dungeon.

If things keep progressing according to the story, I need to run.

I—no, even Luxon won't be able to win against the principality's trump card.

Passing by Julian was Hertrude, coming over to the dungeon. The jailer left the scene upon receiving something from Hertrude.

During that period, he glanced at me and walked out.

“Quite the predicament you’re in.”

“And I’m sure you know who exactly is to blame for this. Actually, are you even allowed to roam around the royal palace?”

“That is irrelevant. I’ve gotten permission. Also, I’m not the one who got you arrested. Indeed, I requested that you be restricted, but the rough treatment you’ve gotten is the result of the kingdom’s nobles.”

I’m guessing you had a hand in that. As I made a sour expression, she leaned in towards the iron bars. Choosing to specifically approach someone when they’re down on their luck—what a crooked trick.

“Do you want me to let you out? Rather than serving a country like this, you could serve the Principality of Fanoss. I promise you will receive a proper treatment. I can let you live the peaceful life that you’ve always wanted.”

I felt a twitch inside me.

It seems that this person has been investigating what I wanted.

In comparison, the kingdom doesn’t even try to understand me at all—how sad.

“How foolish. I can’t help but see the nobles of this country as people who scorn the principality and only use you for a factional dispute. They wanted to use me and crush you.”

Despite being in similar ranks, she was vastly different from Julian.

It seems that she’s more capable.

“Down on your knees in front of me. I can make you my knight. Instead of devoting yourself to a corrupt kingdom, you should follow your desires. I can promise you a peaceful life without status or honor.”

Hertrude faced me with a smile.

“I refuse.”

Hertrude, whose smile now showed some irritation, seemed curious about why I would refuse.

“Is the kingdom that important to you? You’re a feudal lord noble, right? I can even allow your entire family to come to our side as well.”

“It’s a tempting offer, but I’m not planning to do business with someone I don’t trust.”

In first place, the principality isn’t fond of me.

Speaking of which, you’re the one with a grudge against me.

Luxon, who had been hiding, showed up and joined the conversation.

[Are you the ones who arrested Master in fear? How cliche of you to offer a hand to him now that he’s weakened. Do you think that he’s lost his judgement?]

Hertrude shifted her gaze to Luxon.

“How uncouth of a familiar to eavesdrop.”

[If you really did plan to take in Master—if you did plan to keep your promise, I would have helped persuade him.]

“What an uncouth familiar indeed. Spouting all that while not believing I would take him in.”

In the end, what she said so far was a lie.

—How sad. It was an attractive offer, so it stirred some reaction within me.

Hertrude stepped away from the iron bars and spoke in a cold voice.

“You can stand proud. You’ve been judged as an obstacle to us.”

I sat down on a bed, watching as Hertrude left the dungeon.

“She hates me quite a bit.”

Perhaps it was my imagination, but did I see a hint of loneliness from Hertrude?

[She doesn’t seriously hate you.]

“Excuse me?”

[If she had a grudge against you and nothing else, there would be no need for her to speak with you. So I believe that if you follow through with her offer, she will at least guarantee your life.]

“—That’s a shame, I would’ve accepted if she had been more serious about it.”

[That’s a lie. Even if Hertrude had been serious, you wouldn’t betray the kingdom, Master.]

“You never know. It depends on the conditions.”

[—Is that so? By the way, the perpetrator who planted the false evidence in your room was Meole.]

“Isn’t he my sister’s exclusive servant?”

[You've incurred their enmity, Master. Do you want to deal with them immediately?]

"You're a dangerous thing, aren't you. Though—"

[Oh, the jailer is back.]

The returning jailer spoke to me. Luxon took the opportunity to disappear.

"Viscount, which do you prefer, coffee or black tea?"

"Black tea. I'd like some good tea leaves as well."

"No can do, you won't find high quality tea leaves in here."

"All things considered, I've gone from the leader of some bodyguards to a prisoner. What is going on with my life?"

"I was surprised as well. This might be the first time this has happened in the kingdom."

I'm not pleased at all though.

The jailer headed out once more to prepare some tea. As I yawned, Luxon reappeared.

Once my handcuffs were removed, I toyed around with them using my finger.

[Aren't you too relaxed for being in a dungeon? You should be a bit more tense.]

"No thanks, I'm tired. At any rate, it's a relief that I was able to get close with Milaine. It would be no laughing matter if I was sent to torture right after being arrested."

[If that were to happen, I would promptly rescue you and sink this continent. Or I would, with the exception of those close to you, purge the—]

“Stop. I’m not a fan of massacres.”

[—How spineless.]

I forgot to mention this, but this thing said stuff like “exterminate the new humans” when I first found it.

Truthfully, this thing is the most dangerous being in this world.

However, even Luxon can’t beat the final boss.

It wouldn’t lose, but—it wouldn’t win either.

The saint’s power, Livia’s power, and “love” are needed for the finale.

One might wonder what in the world I’m doing here.

There’s a reason for all of this, starting from the day I was captured.

◇

—It was during the day I was arrested.

I was taken to the royal palace and faced two people inside a room.

“Well Gilbert, they got me.”

I still had the composure to speak in jest—want to know why? I already knew that I was going to be arrested at some point.

However, the two in front of me didn’t laugh at my banter.

One of them was Anjie’s older brother and the heir of the Redgrave household, “Gilbert Fou Redgrave.”

Gilbert had a relieved expression.

"You're certainly calm. It seems that the nobles who judged you as a threat weren't wrong. I commend your courage to joke around under these circumstances."

Courage? That's not it. I already knew about this in advance, so I was able to prepare myself to a certain extent.

The other person there, Milaine, began speaking about the main issue at hand.

"Leon, the head the current largest faction, Marquis Frampton, is making his move."

—Those who stick out too much tend to be dealt with.

There are a lot of people who didn't like the fact that a youth like me happened to be promoted, an unprecedented matter.

The principality took advantage of their envy.

"The royal palace is no longer unified. Many factions are bustling about, each with their own motives. Do you understand the meaning of that?"

"Do the marquis and principality have common interests?"

Gilbert nodded.

"Indeed. With his Highness losing his position, the Redgrave household's faction weakened. As a result, Marquis Frampton grew in power—so in a sense, you're the cause of this."

"Me?"

Milaine spoke about the lost item I had—Luxon.

“Let’s say that many are wary about the single airship that drove away the principality’s fleet. The marquis who’s wary of you and the principality that bears a grudge against you then decide to join forces. It’s a likely story, don’t you agree?”

The marquis’ faction gained power because of me?

I thought that was supposed to sarcastic, but Milaine said otherwise.

“Leon, you’re a bigger threat to them than the principality. Marquis Frampton is particularly cautious about you.”

“Huh? Err, but—”

Gilbert was shocked at me being surprised.

“Think about it. The fact that you beat dozens of airships means that you alone carry the strength of a military. I know that you don’t plan on starting a rebellion against the kingdom. However, do you think that everyone trusts you? Even if they do trust you, can they really tell themselves that you’ll never oppose them?”

Perhaps I’m—err, Luxon is more frightening than the principality?

That isn’t wrong, but aren’t they pretty stupid for joining hands with the principality?

“Could it be that they’re underestimating the principality since their troops lost to me?”

“There are indeed people who will make jokes about it, but those who’ve experienced war understand how big the threat is. They haven’t spoken their thoughts out loud, but they’ve probably been in a panic.”

I wish they had been more wary of Marie and the principality.

“So now I’m under arrest for false charges?”

“Sorry, but you’ll have to enter the dungeon. It’s safer this way.”

So basically, with me being under arrest, the marquis’ faction will feel safe and will want to take action.

It seems that the Redgrave household, whose faction has weakened, is having a rough time.

It also seems that Milaine is struggling as well.

“The situation is different than it was a few months ago. Leon, it wouldn’t be strange if you were to be assassinated.”

This is no laughing matter. Hearing that made me break out in a cold sweat.

“I felt that the knights who arrested me seemed enthusiastic, or that they had a grudge—could it be?”

“It’s not your imagination. It’s a relief that we picked you up along the way.”

Gilbert’s words made me feel a chill run down my spine. It seems that the situation was more dangerous than I expected.

“You’re safe in the royal palace. This is the best we can do for now. It’s not just the faction opposing the duke household. There are many nobles who think you’re a danger. There are many nobles who want to take your lost item and use it for power.”

Milaine explained it as if speaking to a small child.

Milaine as a mother—gives me a weird feeling, but I’ll leave it at that.

Gilbert spoke while seeming tense.

"Marquis Frampton, perhaps relieved that you've been arrested, is now beginning to pull out all the stops in order to seize power. We're going to be quite busy."

Milaine spoke of something eerie.

"I'm hesitant to be in the royal palace since the atmosphere is ominous. We may have a rebellion on our hands if we aren't careful, I suppose. If her Highness Hertrude makes a move as well, then the principality will be there with her, which could get dreadful."

Is there really a rebellion in the making?

Now that I've been dealt with, they're focusing on the power struggle now—it seems that Marquis Frampton will be a pain.

If they didn't involve me in this, I would have just left this all alone though.

Well, there's also the matter of Marie, and if I were to look carefully at the situation—

"This isn't a case of a rebellion."

Milaine then spoke.

"I understand that. However, knowing Marquis Frampton, he may see this as a chance. A chance to suppress the Redgrave household and gain power in the kingdom. This may be a tight situation. In this case, you've become a victim, Leon."

—How awful can this get? I'd rather not get involved in a power struggle.

To make matters worse, it's especially awful that they joined hands with our opponents, the principality, for the sake of this power struggle.

Though vexed, Gilbert seemed to understand Marquis Frampton's behavior.

"By joining forces with the principality, he wants to seize power, even if it means suffering some losses."

"Not a pleasant topic."

"Indeed. Not a pleasant thing to talk about."

Blaming Gilbert for this situation won't do anything, so I asked a question.

"Do Anjie and the others know that I'm being protected?"

"They don't. Or rather, we can't tell them. Your safety is a top-secret matter that only a few people know about. Due to that, I had to send a complaint to her Highness Hertrude by myself."

"—Is that alright?"

"You'll be released soon, so don't worry. Are you concerned?"

"Of course."

They're one of few ideal girls in the school.

Furthermore—these are my friends that we're talking about. Of course I'd be worried.

"Oh my."

Milaine placed her hand over her mouth and smiled. Is she having another misunderstanding now?

Good grief—what a cute person.

Gilbert spoke while seeming a bit happier.

"Well then, there's something I have to ask you."

“Something you want to ask me?”



—That's how it went.

I'm trapped in a dungeon, acting like bait.

And the ones I've been able to lure are people like Julian and Hertrude.

They're looking for people who'll make contact with me.

“Are they going to go through with it?”

[—Recently, there have been people investigating your surroundings, Master. Do you think their aim was for intelligence gathering or assassination?]

“Huh? Could it be that you knew? You should have told me then!”

[Be relieved. I won't let you be assassinated, Master.]

No, tell me. Doesn't this make me look like an idiot whose been wasting time without caring about it?

“Tell me about these kinds of things from now on.”

[On a different note—the kingdom is quite weak.]

“Changing the subject, are we? Though, I do agree that the kingdom is weak.”

After all, there's a factional dispute in the royal palace, the principality's gotten involved, and now I've been tossed into a dungeon.

I'm also concerned about Hetrude's actions. It's strange that she isn't returning the magic flute to the principality, isn't it?

“Hertrude’s is persistent too. No wait, perhaps it’s the principality that’s persistent? They’re using the kingdom’s power struggle to tear it down from the inside out—whatever happened to that otome game’s trivial setting? Isn’t this setting too muddy? There sure are a lot of power struggles.”

[—Master, Holfaul Kingdom’s strange system of government is not something to consider from a normal perspective.]

“Why?”

[They’re raising the dissatisfaction of rural feudal lords on purpose. It wouldn’t be strange for a rebellion to occur.]

“Oh really? So things weren’t just because of my household having a lot of debt.”

[Don’t use your household as a basis, Master.]

“So, what are your thoughts?”

[I think that the kingdom might have some kind of secret weapon, just like how the principality has one.]

A trump card, is it?

Assuming that it might exist, could it be that?

“Could it likely be that?”

[—If there’s something you’re thinking about, I’d prefer if you talked with me about it.]

“My bad. However, it shouldn’t work without Livia. —Well then, what should we do now?”

[First, we destroy the new humans—]

“Rejected. Give me a serious answer.”

[I was being serious though.]

“You really are frightening sometimes. What I’m asking is what will happen at the rate things are going. Which do you think will win—the Redgrave household or the Frampton household?”

[Such a thing has already been decided. —It depends on your feelings, Master.]

◇

Anjie, after being released, immediately headed towards the duke household’s residence.

Anjie’s father, Vince, was waiting for her at that residence within the royal capital.

She was about to report the matter regarding Hertrude until something occurred.

“Could it be revenge? How petty. Nevertheless, the kingdom has many traitors.”

“Father, please release Leon. Leon has done nothing wrong!”

Vince’s eyes narrowed.

“Don’t be so spoiled. These kinds of things are a daily occurrence in the royal palace. Even if I could release him with my authority, neither his important airship nor the armor will return to him.”

Vince’s words shocked Anjie.

“—Are you saying that Leon is worthless without the lost item? Leon has been through so much for my sake up until now.”

Vince spoke coldly to Anjie.

“And what of it? His promotions were no doubt due to the power of his lost item. I’ll admit that he has courage. However, what worth does he have without the lost item?”

Anjie clenched her fist and cast her eyes downward while seeming frustrated.

“B, benefactor. Leon is my benefactor!”

“I already repaid him for what he did. Return to the academy.”

“—!”

Anjie stormed out of the room.



Watching his daughter storm out of the room, Vince made a small sigh.

“Good grief—why can’t she be more honest?”

He stood up after seeing his awkward daughter leave the scene.

Thereupon, Gilbert entered the room.

“Father, why did Anjie storm out with such a face?”

“I’ll keep an eye on her, so don’t worry. This may be painful for Anjie, but I don’t know what she would do if she knew the truth. That girl is too emotional. Why can’t she let her feelings clear?”

“Up until now, she had been raised to be useful for a specific household. Would she not be troubled when she’s suddenly told about free love? It’s understandable once you realize the circumstances.”

Vince made a slight chuckle.

“There are various tricky problems regarding that matter. If we’re too forceful, the other household will complain. Besides, it depends on the feelings of that child. Is their relationship just as friends, or perhaps—”

Gilbert nodded his head, as if convinced of something.

For the time being, he left aside what Anjie said and reported what he investigated.

“I’ve looked into those who have made contact with the viscount inside the dungeon. It appears that there are those who are upset that they cannot operate Partner. A portion of them are making a clamor about trying to kill him to see if it’ll accept a new master. They’ve made a direct appeal to his Majesty about executing him soon.”

Vince folded his arms.

“Are they afraid of the viscount? Well, I suppose that’s inevitable. After all, he’s a knight who single-handedly forced the principality’s troops to retreat. Perhaps they’re anxious about the possibility that he’ll point his blade at them.”

From the viewpoint of the faction opposing the duke household, they didn’t know when Leon would point that blade towards them.

Vince understood their anxiety.

“The people from the temple are also beginning to make noise. Though this is a power struggle, at this point, there’s a limit to how much things can escalate. If not taken care of properly, the country will be divided by a civil war.”

Vince unfolded his arms and spoke as such.

“The time has come. Sooner or later, all the pressure that been built up will erupt. Nevertheless, it seems I have many enemies.”

Vince, who led what had been the largest faction up until a while ago, was struggling to deal with the marquis’ rising faction.

“—It seems you did something foolish, Malcom.”

Speaking the name of Marquis Frampton, Vince looked at Gilbert and smiled.

“Gilbert—don’t you agree that Anjie’s eye for people is quite something?”

Gilbert had an indescribable expression.

If it wasn’t for Anjie, the duke household would have also been wary of Leon.

The engagement with Julian being broken off was a hard blow—but thanks to that, they managed to win over Leon.

“In a sense, we were lucky. We don’t have to shoulder around ‘his Highness the Prince,’ so I suppose you’re right.”

Vince agreed with that opinion.

“Now then, return to your territory and prepare for war. There’s something I have to do here.”

Gilbert nodded and briskly exited the room.

Vince then headed towards the royal palace.



Floating above the academy was a warship owned by the kingdom’s army.

Knights wearing armor were keeping an eye on the surroundings, and both knights and soldiers were dispatched to the ground.

Amidst the overdone policing, the academy's students picked up on the tense mood.

It felt like the tension before a war.

Once returning, Anjie saw Livia running over.

As she approached, she grabbed her arms and spoke at a close distance.

"Anjie! It's Leon! Leon's been arrested!"

Seeing Livia's confused state, Anjie held back her tears.

There were other students around and above all, she was in front of the school gate. There were many people.

"I know. Let's head inside."

Anjie took Livia with her and headed towards the girls' dorms.

Livia was worried about the situation.

"Leon was taken away, Clarice and the others are away from the academy as well. What in the world is happening?"

It wasn't just the royal palace that was hectic.

The academy was also affected.

"There's a war."

"War?!"

"Quiet. Don't speak so loudly."

They quickly entered Livia's room.

Anjie, relieved after entering the room, then fell over.

While supporting herself using Livia's body, she sat down on a bed and began to speak.

"There are people who are linked with the principality. Those people arrested Leon and threw him into the royal palace's dungeon. They seized Partner and Arroganz as well."

"W, what! Leon has done nothing wrong!"

"That's irrelevant. Leon's an obstacle to them. —If only I had more power, I would have been able to protect him."

Seeing Anjie, who felt pathetic and down, Livia spoke as if something flashed into her mind.

"The queen! If we ask Milaine—"

Anjie shook her head, believing that if Milaine had done something, she would have known. Since Leon received no assistance, the queen probably can't do anything.

"Milaine can't do anything. I thought she'd lend a hand, but since she isn't, that must mean someone is negating her orders. Or perhaps it's a case where she can't afford to get involved with Leon."

The marquis' faction suddenly began to move.

Anjie knew the meaning of this.

After checking with the information from her home, she understood what it meant, even if she didn't like it.

"Livia, there's going to be a power struggle within the royal palace. If not handled properly, it will turn into a civil war."

"Huh? W, why?!"

In response to Livia, who was surprised to hear about a civil war, Anjie spoke her thoughts.

“We’re in a state of high alert. My father and brother are moving about, so it’s already as if a war has begun, with no blood being spilt on the royal palace.”

Anjie believed that the airship arriving at the academy was to be deployed in case something happened.

(If that’s the case, did my father or Milaine have a hand in the airship at the academy?)

Vince said that it was standing by at the academy, so the academy was likely safe.

While she was thinking about such things, Livia seemed uneasy and asked something.

“—What will happen to Leon?”

For a moment, Anjie thought about making a lie to relieve her, but—told Livia the truth.

“I’m sorry. My household has given up on Leon. They see no value in him now that his lost item is gone. I don’t know if Milaine will help him either. If worst comes to worst, he will be executed.”

Livia hung her head upon hearing that, then suddenly stood up.

She was about to head out of the room with an unsteady walk, so Anjie grabbed her arm to stop her.

“Where are you going?!”

“Anjie—I’m sorry. I want to help Leon. For that, I want to try anything I can.”

“You—”

While crying, Livia attempted to leave the room.

Anjie guessed what she was possibly thinking about.

“Wait. —I’m going too.”

So, Anjie and Livia both left the room together and decided to turn towards someone who could potentially help Leon.



Being the saint, the academy provided a special room for Marie.

It was the biggest room in the girls’ dorm—used by noble daughters with ranks equal to that of Anjie’s.

In that room, Marie sat on a sofa with her legs crossed.

She felt refreshed to see the two standing before her.

“You want me to help that mob guy? Why should I?”

While Marie’s followers laughed, Anjie once again pleaded to her.

“I judged that you could help since you’re the saint. Please—I want you to help Leon.”

Livia nodded her head.

“Please! Please save Leon.”

Marie took a sip of her drink while making a triumphant smile.

(I was overjoyed when hearing about that mob guy being arrested, but I didn’t expect to feel this good seeing these two beg me for help!)

The one that the two turned to was—the saint, Marie.

(Well, I have no obligation to help that guy and I don't know how I would either though.)

Though Marie was the saint, she hasn't been one for a long time and she didn't know how to influence an organization.

She didn't know the procedure to release Leon, but nevertheless, she decided to use this opportunity.

She looked at Anjie and Livia, then spoke.

"You've said so many things to me before, though."

Anjie apologized.

"P, please forgive me. I was foolish."

"Of course! And you, the naive one."

"Y, yes!"

Marie asked a question to Livia, who she called naive.

"Don't you think there's a courtesy to asking a favor?"

"Courtesy? U, umm—"

Marie spoke to a stumped Livia.

"You two—kneel down before me in front of the public. If you do that, I'll think about doing something for that mob guy."

Though Marie gave that condition, she had different intentions on the inside.

(Anjelica's pride is too high for her to agree to that. Perhaps Olivia would do it, but there's no point since I said for the both of them to kneel. Well, I'd be worried if they did agree though.)

—Those were her thoughts.



Marie was regretful.

She was in the academy's plaza.

(No way. Why? Why did it come to this?!)

She was breaking into a cold sweat.

A ring of people surrounded Marie.

In the center were Marie and her followers.

"Look, Marie. Look at the pitiful state of these people."

"The duke's daughter and the commoner are both bowing their heads. Furthermore, their foreheads are against the floor."

"How unsightly."

The surrounding students were laughing.

Next to Marie, Kyle was quite dispirited.

"Is it okay going this far? Honestly, even I don't want to see anymore of this."

In the plaza, Livia and Anjie were kneeling down together—and in front of both the protagonist and villainess was Marie, who kept sweating.

They did what she told them to do. Despite that—she didn't think they would actually follow through with it.

No matter how cocky Marie might be, even this wasn't something she could laugh at.

(Wait! Seriously, wait! I told them to kneel because I didn't think they'd do it! I have no idea what to do about their issue!)

In the first place, Marie couldn't think of a way to help Leon.

Now she would need to revoke her promise despite the fact that the two had kneeled.

She could hear laughter directed towards the two. —The people around were more elated than Marie.

“How pathetic for the duke’s daughter.”

“To think that I was a follower of such a person. I’m going to cry. Did her pride as a noble disappear?”

“It’s for the sake of that guy. What’s even good about that Baltfault?”

People who used to be Anjie’s followers whispered amongst each other.

If a person of high status bows their head so easily, they will lose authority.

That’s why Marie thought Anjie wouldn’t actually do it.

Marie’s followers took an arrogant attitude towards Anjie and Livia.

“Hey, do a proper job at making your request to Marie!”

When Anjie bowed down and pleaded with “I want you to save Leon’s life,” they further toyed with her.

“That’s not how you do it, right? There’s a specific way you need to make a request, isn’t there? Could it be that the duke’s daughter is unaware of how to ask people for something?”

“Please save Leon’s life, M, Marie!”

Marie couldn’t speak to the one who forced the prideful Anjie to bow down and address her politely.

“Commoner, speak too.”

“Please save Leon, Marie.”

“What a wretched state you’re in now that Baltfault’s gone. You’ve been hiding behind that man for protection.”

Marie’s followers and the surrounding students laughed.

(Huh? What? These followers are scary. Aren’t these guys just using my name to vent their anger? I can’t put my trust in them.)

Turning away from the fact that she told them to kneel down, Marie felt a disconnect with the surrounding people.

Then—

“Marie, here’s a footrest.”

One of Marie’s followers pointed at Anjie’s head.

“Huh?!”

The other followers went along with it.

“Oh, in that case, you should use the duke’s daughter as a chair and the commoner as a footrest.”

“Aren’t you glad to be the saint’s chair, Anjelica?”

“Say something!”

Marie wanted to shout at the girl trampling down on Anjie.

(What are you all doing?! Are you going to destroy me? If that mob guy finds out what happens, he’ll definitely come for revenge! H, he’s going to kill me!)

Imagining Leon carrying a rifle with a blank expression, Marie’s legs couldn’t stop trembling.

(R, right. Doesn't he have a cheat item? If he does get angry, I'm—)

A hand intervened to stop the follower who was escalating the situation, and that hand belonged to—Julian.

"You two have shown your readiness. Marie, this doesn't need to go any further."

Brad then spoke.

"Right. Now that it's come to this, we have to show our sincerity."

Jilk nodded.

"Let bygones be bygones. Marie, let's forgive them."

Chris agreed.

"If we disgrace them anymore, your name will be tarnished, Marie."

Greg struck his palm with his fist and then smiled at Marie.

"They've done this much. Let's help Baltfault, Marie."

Since this world didn't have a culture based around kneeling down like this, they forgave them since they went this far. However, Leon would understand the meaning of someone performing this action. (TLN: Japan has this "dogeza culture," where kneeling down with one's forehead touching the floor, which is called a dogeza, is viewed as a very strong and self-humiliating apologizing style.)

After all, he was a fellow reincarnator.

Marie trembled when thinking about what would happen if Leon caught wind of this.

(Not good. If I tell them that I can't actually help—my life is over. Or rather, that guy can probably break out with his own power. I don't need to do anything. This is pretty stupid, isn't it?)

Marie, unable to do anything, asked the five confident guys for help.

“Everyone, can I ask you for help?”

The five turned to Marie and nodded, then departed from the venue.

In any case, Marie wanted to escape from the situation.

When she turned her back to the two, who were still kneeling, and walked away as if ignoring them, her followers went with her.

“How generous of you, Marie.”

“If it were me, I would trample on them.”

“Oh, if it were me, I would strip them of their clothes and make them apologize.”

Hearing her followers utter such things, Marie felt uneasy.

(This isn’t funny. —It really isn’t. I don’t understand these followers. Who are these people? They’re completely different from what I thought they were.)

Amongst the boisterous followers, Cara was the only one who followed behind Marie silently.



Marie had left.

While the surrounding people were laughing, Anjie and Livia stood up.

The voices of those around them were cold.

“They’re going that far?”

“Oh, how the duke household has fallen. She doesn’t understand the meaning of bowing her head.”

“What a lowly woman indeed. Getting along with the likes of commoners.”

The two walked away from the scene while being ridiculed.

Livia spoke to Anjie.

“It would have been better if it was just me, so why did you do it too, Anjie? Um—with your household’s position and all.”

Anjie made a somewhat sorrowful smile.

“I thought that this was the best choice. Perhaps this might be bad for my household. However, above all, I wanted to help Leon. I really am a fool, aren’t I?”

Anjie, who had bowed her head to Marie, spoke as such—and wept.

“With this, I’ve really abandoned myself. I’ve sullied my house’s name. However, even so—if it means helping Leon, that’s okay.”

Somehow, Anjie seemed a little refreshed.

She had been robbed of her fiance, Julian, by Marie and the engagement was broken off.

It was painfully bitter for Anjie to bow down to Marie.

(—To think Anjie would do this much for Leon.)

Livia’s chest ached when comparing herself to Anjie.



A group amassed above the Principality of Fanoss’ skies.

A fleet, with a floating island that had been turned into an airship serving as a flagship, covered the skies.

There were over one hundred and fifty airships, along with monsters surrounding them.

It didn't matter that the magic flute was with the kingdom.

After all, there existed another magic flute with the principality.

The user of that magic flute was the second princess, Hertrauda.

She was fourteen years old.

She had smooth black hair, just like her older sister.

Though they were alike, Hertrauda was superior when it came to using a magic flute.

She was able to command numerous monsters, and the magic flute itself was more powerful than the one Hertrude had.

Originally, Hertrude's team should have been enough to sink the kingdom. However, Leon had single-handedly ruined their plans, causing the principality to be in a mad rush.

The principality didn't originally intend for Hertrauda to depart for the front. The one who changed that was Leon.

"That heretic knight can't do anything. Is that correct?"

Hertrauda's retainer answered her question.

"There is no mistaking it. The reports state that his lost item, the airship, and his armor have been seized as well. The kingdom's foolish nobles are quite negligent."

Leaders surrounded Hertrauda.

A knight reported to her.

"Princess, the preparations are ready."

With a small nod, the young girl, Hertrauda, set out for a battle that would determine the principality's future.

"Attack the kingdom from here. Get everyone prepared. Our aim is Holfault Kingdom's royal capital. Don't pay any mind to the other small fries! Depart!"

In response to Hertrauda's voice, the surrounding leaders responded with vigor.

Chapter 5: False Saint

I was in the dungeon.

Once the jailer temporarily excused himself, I began recalling the guests who have visited so far.

They were pretty much the bad kind of people to be around. They said things like how they'd give me money if I told them how to operate Partner, that I should join their group, or other things like that. At any rate, they were harsh people.

Many of them threatened to kill me if I didn't do what they said.

Luxon was amazed as well.

[I suppose you can't do anything about the suspicious nobles offering to spare your life in exchange for Partner and Arroganz, can you?]

“I suppose not. Many of them are just lying and would kill me as soon as I transfer them over.”

They've confiscated Partner and Arroganz, but are troubled since they can't operate them.

They've been asking me how to operate them, and I've been questioning their intentions.

[It seems that they attempted a disassembly, but gave up midway. It's sad how cruelly they're treating Partner. Master, how about we lay waste to this kingdom?]

“Rejected.”

[Then, let's restrict the ruling class—]

“No thanks.”

Arroganz is in a container that can't be tampered with.

They've invaded Partner's interior quite a bit, but it's impossible for them to dismantle the important parts.

[Master, is the reason that you won't abandon the kingdom related to Anjelica, Olivia—and Milaine as well? I believe that Clarice and Deirdre are also on your mind, but do you want to protect the kingdom because they're part of the ruling class? I would recommend an internal reform.]

Is it thinking that I want to protect the kingdom because there are women I favor?

Needless to say, that's not the case and I don't plan on an internal reform either.

"You really think I want to protect the kingdom?"

[Am I wrong?]

Speaking truthfully, I wouldn't care if the kingdom was destroyed.

The reason why I want it intact for now is because the citizens will be in deep water without a country.

Without a ruler, they'll be in trouble.

"I have no interest in the management of a nation. If I were to destroy the country, the ones who would be in trouble are the people who live there. That's not something a guy would do unless he really wanted to."

[Are you sure about that? In the event that Milaine and the duke's faction fails, you will be executed, Master. Of course, I won't let that happen. However, why aren't you taking any initiative?]

"—If the country discards me, then I will just flee."

Fortunately, the kingdom has a hold over Hertrude and the magic flute.

They won't lose unless those conditions are taken away.

There will probably be some damage in the process, but that's what it means to be a kingdom.

[Then, why don't you take action for the sake of the people?]

"Nobody wants me to."

In this world, war is not about gathering citizens and handing weapons to them.

In order to turn citizens into soldiers, a sufficient education is needed.

Due to the existence of airships, it's difficult to recruit ordinary citizens.

There are indeed some feudal lords who are tyrannical enough to force that into happening, but the Holfaul Kingdom is relatively friendly to its people.

This is the only kind part of that otome game's setting.

As a result, there are few citizens who are dissatisfied.

Knights and soldiers having to be the pawns of war and the troubles of finding marriage are part of the ruling class' struggles.

There's dissatisfaction just about everywhere, but the most dissatisfied ones are the baron and viscount nobles that I have to put up with—what a disgusting world.

Simply put, even if there was a revolt, the citizens wouldn't join.

After all, they're satisfied with the status quo, so I would be the scoundrel here if I were to act violently.

"Despite how things may seem, I'm still a knight."

[By knight, you mean an existence who sucks up to women and is convenient to the nation?]

"Idiot. —I meant the kind of knight that protects the citizens."

[Is that how they appear as?]

"I'm fine with appearances and superficiality. It's better than being controlled by a schoolgirl and having to work myself to the bone for the kingdom. Besides, Livia would be happy to hear me say that."

Anjie would make a bit of a troubled face though.

[Quite the weak determination you have. I was even a bit touched, but now that's gone to waste.]

"What are you expecting of me? Or rather, what do you want me to do?"

Actually, I'm quite surprised that it was touched by that conversation.

[I'm hoping that we can destroy the new humans together.]

—I don't know what kind of reaction I should make to that.



Now then, I've been in jail for a while, but—yet another visitor came today.

"How pathetic, Viscount Baltfault."

Beyond the iron bars, Jilk stood in front of me while shaking his head.

“Did you come to the dungeon to make snide remarks? It seems that you have some free time as well.”

When I said that, Jilk threw out his chest, as if I said something unthinkable.

“I came here at the request of Marie. It seems that she wants to help you.”

“Marie? What kind of trap is this?”

“How rude. What kind of attitude is that? I took great pains to come here and help you.”

Jilk spoke to me.

“For the time being, please wait here. I’ll soon get you out of the dungeon.”

“You will?”

Does he even have that kind of authority? At any rate, why is Marie helping me?

Though I had many thoughts, the question I spoke was—

“How are you going to help me?”

“Despite everything, my house still consists of nobles of the royal court. I have many connections.”

“That’s not your own power, but the power of your household, isn’t it?”

“What of it? Anyways, please sit tight and wait here.”

Jilk left the dungeon as he said that, but—after a while, he came back quite battered.

His hair was disheveled and it seemed as if he had been in a fight.

“—I failed.”

“Thought so.”

“T, this isn’t right. They wouldn’t listen to me and told me to reflect on my actions!”

That’s because you’re always up to no good.

In the end, Jilk left the dungeon with hunched shoulders.

What a useless guy.



The next to visit was—Greg.

He was even more battered than Jilk. His clothes were torn and his face showed signs of being beaten up, perhaps from a fight.

“—I’m sorry. When I asked my household to free you, I got into a fight with my father.”

It seems that he relied on his household in an attempt to free me, but he failed after getting into a quarrel with his father.

“Did Marie ask you too?”

“She did. Moreover, I’m personally indebted to you. So I wanted to help you, but my father beat me up and nothing happened.”

I’ve got mixed feelings, but I’m glad that he tried to help.

“Go apologize to your dad. You guys cause too much trouble.”

Greg stared straight at me.

“Something the matter?”

“Balfault—you’re the last person I’d want to hear that from.”

“Huh? What?!”

I was a fool for thinking that this jerk had some good in him.



The next guest was—Brad.

Unlike the last two, his uniform wasn’t in a mess and it didn’t seem like he got into a fight.

However, he was fiddling with his hair while—seeming slightly uneasy.

“Are you here to help me as well?”

Since he didn’t speak despite how much time had passed, I decided to initiate the conversation.

Upon which, Brad spoke while his eyes were darting.

“T, that was the plan, but—I can’t get in contact with my parents.”

“Did something happen?”

“My family wasn’t in the Field residence within the royal capital. Due to that—”

He told me that despite wanting to help me, the family he depended on wasn’t there.

“I understand, so stop looking like you’re going to cry.”

“I, I’m not crying!”

What is it that these guys want to do?



Then, the fourth member of the five idiots, Chris, entered the dungeon.

“—Did you turn to your household in an attempt to help me as well?”

When I asked that to Chris upon his immediate arrival, he made a face of astonishment.

“Y, you know that? I didn’t even say anything yet.”

Is he making fun of me? Or is it that he’s just stupid?

“Like it or not, I know that you guys have been coming here since this morning and have all failed so far.”

“Everyone’s been here too? In that case, at least one person should succeed. I—failed. I’m sorry, Baltfault.”

Chris was depressed, but as for me—

“Before you feel down, why don’t you take care of your injuries first? What did you even do to get all beaten up like that?”

Greg’s state had been miserable, but Chris’ was even worse.

Even the lenses of his glasses were broken.

“When I tried asking my father for help, he chased me around with a wooden sword.”

“It seems you’ve got it rough too.”

“Come to think of it, I couldn’t really expect much from my father in the political field to begin with.”

Perhaps having calmed down, Chris began to complain after getting beaten up by his father.

—Why did this guy come to the dungeon?

“Though he’s called a master swordsman, my father holds the position of a swordsmanship instructor. Since he has no major political position, I figured that it would be tough having him to help you.”

“I, Is that so?”

“He dismissed the many reasons I gave to him, and when I then said ‘Can’t you do it?’ to him, I ended up like this.”

That would anger my father too if I did that.

Perhaps he wanted to pick a fight with his household?

“If it’s impossible for him, I wish he would have just told me that.”

“Did you tell him to help me with that attitude? In the first place, I’m uncertain about why you would want to help me.”

I wonder if his father is also frustrated with his political position?

If he struck a nerve with his father due to that, that would explain it.

◇

—Then came the last idiot.

Julian appeared in front of me, but I spoke before he could open his mouth.

“Go home!”

“W, why?! I didn’t say anything yet!”

I told the baffled Julian that I already knew the situation without him needing to spell it out for me.

“I can already tell after seeing your cheek. You didn’t succeed in your attempt to help me, did you?”

Julian’s mood visibly worsened.

“It’s as you say. I asked my mother to get you out of the dungeon.”

There was a visible handprint on Julian’s cheek, perhaps from being slapped.

It’s quite a feat for him to make Milaine mad.

Actually, now I want to know what he did.

“And that was enough for her to slap you?”

“Yeah, that’s all. She was suddenly astonished. What’s even more frightening is that she hit me while holding a blank expression.”

“I can’t imagine her being the kind of person to do that.”

“Perhaps you don’t know this, but my mother is a scary individual. But, just what in the world did I do wrong? You’re a favorite of my mother, so it’s strange that asking for your release would warrant a slap.”

I want to tell him that it was his mother that put me in this dungeon.

However, that’s top-secret.

The fact that Milaine didn’t speak to him about this matter means that he’s definitely not a reliable person.

—That’s kind of pitiful.

Though, I suppose he doesn’t have the most pristine reputation.

It wouldn’t be odd for him to do something absurd, like during that time he cancelled his engagement with Anjie.

“You must have said something strange, didn’t you?”

“I did not! Right from the beginning, she had a complex expression when I requested for your release. So, I thought that I could give her a push and said some things to her.”

“Some things?”

“Well, you know that there have been talks of a formal engagement between Marie and me since she became the saint, right?”

In response to this sudden change of topic, I told him that I knew about it.

—I’ve got a bad feeling about this.

“When I told her that it was the request of her potential daughter-in-law, her facial expression turned blank. I had thought that it would be a good opportunity for them to cooperate and get along.”

—That would do it. Her expression would definitely turn blank from that.

Did you think Milaine would be pleased with that?

Are you stupid? Oh wait, he is stupid.

“Go home already.”

“I’ll head back for today. However, I’ll definitely help you, Baltfault.”

I looked at Julian, who left while declaring that with a serious look, and thought about how this must be a pain for Milaine as well.

Luxon, who had hidden itself, reappeared and spoke.

[What is it that they wanted to do?]

“They’re fools, aren’t they?”

[I think of you the same way, Master.]

“Don’t lump me in with them. You’ll make me mad.”

“Pardon me. You’re a greater fool than them.]

“You really do hate me, don’t you?”

[Anyways, it seems that things have gotten troublesome, Master.]

“Troublesome?”

◇

There was a conference room within the royal palace.

Marquis Frampton’s faction had gathered there.

An uneasy noble asked Marquis Frampton a question.

“Marquis, is this really alright? Our information states that the principality has assembled a large fleet accompanied by monsters, does it not? At this rate, the feudal lords who encounter them during their invasion will suffer a miserable—”

—The principality’s troops had begun to move.

Receiving that information, the members had gathered here to talk about measures to take.

“This is indeed earlier than expected, but there’s no problem. Hurry and assemble the kingdom’s troops.”

“Shouldn’t we dispatch units that can quickly take action?”

Marquis Frampton spoke to the noble who imagined that a tragedy was brewing.

“That won’t be necessary.”

“Huh?”

“The territories that the principality is invading are the ones that we secretly agreed to give them. If the principality sheathes their sword becomes our ally from this, it’s a small price to pay.”

“H, however, this is a matter beyond our grasp. If we don’t handle this with caution—”

Not only the nobles, but the citizens as well weren’t sure about what would happen.

Despite such conditions, Marquis Frampton responded.

“This is a necessary sacrifice for the sake of unifying the kingdom. You know, we have a new lost item, a ship, with us. Once we finish analyzing it, we can eventually regain the territories we will lose.”

—They made a sacrifice.

“Until the kingdom’s army assembles and arrives, let the principality do what they want. When the time comes for us to fight, the principality should retreat at a convenient moment. With that, the kingdom’s honor will remain untarnished.”

They had already abandoned the feudal lords and didn’t mind the principality.

Another noble informed Marquis Frampton of something.

“Marquis, the temple has stated that they would like the saint to participate in the battle as well.”

“—What a nuisance they are.”

“It seems that the saint has the power to repel demons.”

“The saint’s power? I’ve heard about it, but is it really something we can place our faith in?”

“The temple’s quite confident in it. It seems that they’re not bluffing.”

Marquis Frampton wasn’t very happy about the temple’s participation.

However, the temple gave its conditions.

“If we let the temple take the main lead in this war—they will give up on trying to make his Highness Julian the crown prince.”

After hearing that, Marquis Frampton pondered.

(Does the temple plan on increasing its influence by making the saint’s power known?)

“—We should be prepared in case the principality doesn’t retreat.”

“Indeed. After hearing the rumors of the principality controlling monsters, the soldiers are frightened. If the saint is there, it would increase morale.”

“If we can resolve this issue without any problems, my position will solidify. It isn’t bad to let the temple take the credit for it and have them be indebted to me either.”

While the invaded territories were in trouble, the nobles in the royal palace were excited about the future.



The days passed by within the dungeon.

“It seems there’s been a lot of shaking lately.”

I’ve recently been feeling slight tremors.

“All things considered, I seem to be getting visitors on a daily basis.”

[That just proves how excellent you are as bait, Master.]

“That doesn’t please me.”

Nobles trying to deceive me have been coming here.

They’ve relentlessly been trying to get me to either tell them how to start up Partner or hand over Arroganz.

Sometimes they would arrogantly threaten me with execution, but later would try to get on my good side through whatever means and negotiate with me.

It’s not just the marquis’ faction.

Many kinds of people have been visiting, wanting to make use of me.

Among such people, the ones I’ve lost my patience with are—those from Marquis Frampton’s faction.

As I was laying down on the hard bed in the dungeon, Luxon spoke to me.

[It seems that the kingdom has failed to live up to your expectations, Master.]

—It seems that Anjie’s papa and Milaine couldn’t do much.

Within the dungeon, I heard the noisy footsteps of a crowd approaching, perhaps armed.

“It seems this is the end.”

[You’re exaggerating, Master.]

My accomplice’s remark was painfully true.

The person who's supposed stand watch was away since someone else was coming in to take their place.

As the armed group approached during that interval, their leader, someone I recognized, stood at the forefront.

He was a viscount in his thirties who belonged to Marquis Frampton's faction.

In his hand was a bottle of alcohol.

"Viscount Baltfault, I thought you'd be lonely, so I brought a gift."

The alcohol the viscount carried—was probably poisoned.

"I don't drink alcohol. Take it home and share it with everyone."

The Viscount smiled, as if mocking me.

"How long do you plan on living in such an unsightly manner? A noble would die with grace."

Grace, he says. I'd like to live my second life until I die of old age, so no thanks.

Besides, it would be rather unfortunate if it that were to happen.

Right when I was thinking about escaping from this dungeon, or rather this kingdom, I heard some frantic footsteps.

Luxon appeared, surprising the viscounts as they readied their handguns and rifles.

"Is that the familiar from the reports?! Seize it! With that thing, the airship is ours!"

[Even if Master dies, I will not follow your orders. More importantly, shouldn't you pay attention to what's behind you?]

Chris jumped out from the entrance, holding a wooden sword.

He then knocked down the knights that were behind the viscount.

“Balfault, are you alright?!”

Why is Chris here? As I was pondering about it, Jilk entered the jail and shot down the handgun that the viscount held.

“I won’t let you do that to Viscount Balfault.”

As the viscount clutched his hand, causing him to drop the poisoned drink and shatter it, he glared at Jilk and the others.

“D, do you all know what you are doing? I suspected there was someone behind me. As of now, nothing you do can—”

[Silence.]

Luxon slammed itself down onto the viscount’s head from above, causing him to faint.

When Jilk opened the door with a key, he tried to quickly rush me outside.

“Now then, hurry up.”

—Why did these people come here to help me? When I looked at Luxon, it moved its eye up and down, as if to nod.

Does that mean it’s okay for me to escape?

“Why are you guys here?”

“We tried a lot options, but they all failed. In the end, something serious happened, so we went with using force in order to help you.”

“You guys really are idiots, aren’t you?”

Chris spoke to me.

“We were able to make it in time because of that. So isn’t it fine?”

I ran up the stairs of the dungeon, pushed from behind by Jilk and Chris.

Brad and Greg were waiting by the exit.

The two were looking below at a tied-up warden.

“You guys are here too? What happened to that guy?”

I was thinking that they had caused harm to my warden friend, but it seems that wasn’t the case.

“He was already restrained when we arrived.”

“Never mind that, let’s hurry. Julian’s waiting for us.”

While checking the safety of the warden, I joined the four and stealthily headed towards the royal palace’s grounds.

During that time—I felt another tremor in the ground.



I arrived at a courtyard after being led by the four.

Julian appeared from the shadows of the trees in the courtyard.

“I’ve been waiting.”

“Hey, why did you take me to a courtyard? Weren’t we fleeing?”

While pondering about how strange it was, Julian explained while seeming to be a little proud.

“There’s a secret passage here that only the royal family knows about.”

“Don’t reveal that kind of secret to me! Are you an idiot? You really are an idiot, aren’t you?”

“What a remark to make considering that we helped you. —Whoa, there seems to be a lot of shaking.”

When we were arguing amongst each other, the ground trembled once more.

As the six of us were gathering at the courtyard, which happened to be surrounded by buildings, while talking to each other, Luxon spoke.

[Master, we’re surrounded.]

“What?”

The courtyard was instantly hit by a light, and while I was covering my eyes from its radiance, I heard the swift footsteps of approaching knights.

I was about to give an order to Luxon when one of them spoke.

“Please wait, your Highness Julian! We are not your enemies!”

Julian stepped in front of me as if to protect me from the shouting knight.

“If that’s the case, how about letting us through?”

The same knight told us that he couldn’t do that.

“We came to reclaim Viscount Baltfault.”

“Me?”

I wonder if I can take his words at face value.

It’s possible that he’s lying.

Luxon said “It would take a few minutes to bring Arroganz over here,” so I thought about buying some time by negotiating.

While I was pondering about it, a figure appeared before me.

“—Father.”

Julian lowered the sword he held.

“Julian, don’t make a poor decision. Everyone, lower your arms and come here.”

It was His Majesty the King—"Roland Rafua Holfaul."

He had some gray, somewhat quirky hair and a moustache.

He was tall and had a well-trained, slender body.

He held the dignity of a king.

Realizing it was him, we went down on our knees.

“Viscount Baltfault, you’ve had a rough time. However, thanks to you, we’ve come to a decision.”

Does that mean Anjie’s papa won?

“Father, Baltfault’s about to be killed!”

When Julian voiced his complaint, the king nodded his head and responded.

“I know the whole situation. This is not the time for leisure talk.”

When the ground trembled, the king looked downwards and seemed worried.



After a change of clothes, I was led to a conference room.

The kingdom's leading figures sat there, but—there weren't many of them.

The king and the queen, Milaine, were there.

Vince was there as well. Indeed, it seems that the people who've been on my side were gathering here.

"You seem in good health, Viscount."

"Yeah, somehow."

I wanted to voice a word of complaint, but since they've been helping me out, I decided not to take an arrogant stance.

Looking around, Julian and the others weren't here.

The king answered as if he knew who I was searching around for.

"Julian and his group are waiting in a separate room. Or rather, perhaps I should say they're being restrained."

When I grew cautious upon hearing that, Milaine explained it to me.

"Don't be mistaken. We're hiding them for their own protection. It's the same as you, Leon."

"Can I ask why I've been called here?"

"We intend to answer that."

Vince said those words, but the minister, Bernard, was the one who explained.

He's Clarice's papa.

"A fleet from the principality has arrived at the kingdom's mainland. We've lost more than ten scouting ships and defense units. Nearly a hundred units of armor have been shot down."

The kingdom has a great national power, but since their war potential has to be spread across the entire land, there's not much to offer when it comes down to numbers.

If the principality were to make a serious attempt at attacking, there would be considerable damage.

“The opponent’s fleet numbers at around one hundred and fifty ships. It is unclear how many units of armor there are. Reports say that there are countless monsters leading the front. Their numbers shrouded the sky.”

Hertrude’s magic flute came to my mind at once, but Vince denied such thoughts.

“Her Highness and the magic flute are still with the kingdom. The principality must have had another flute. We suspect that this is the work of the second princess.”

I was listening closely, but this was the first time I’ve heard about a second princess.

“Second princess?”

Vince explained as if it was a matter of course.

“Indeed. Her Highness Hertrauda.”

—I didn’t know there was a second princess.

Furthermore, another magic flute? I’ve never heard of such a thing, and that otome game never had that kind of setting either.

No wait, perhaps it was part of the setting, but never explained?

I couldn’t put my chaotic thoughts into order.

The king continued on, saying “In addition.”

“Other countries aside from the principality are making a move as well. There have also been relief requests from forces and feudal lords near the national border. We’re being attacked from all sides.”

Minister Bernard took over the explanation.

“The local troops are unable to handle the situation.
—Reinforcements are unlikely.”

“The capital city has some fighting capability, right? If you gather the troops, they should amount to a considerable number.”

It seemed that the people around were overly pessimistic.

Milaine answered my question.

“Something occurred a couple of days ago. The temple requested for cooperation, and as a result of the negotiations, the kingdom’s troops were dispatched for reinforcement. Two hundred ships were sent.”

Milaine spoke while in low spirits.

The temple, gaining confidence now that they had Marie, had collaborated with the Marquis’ faction.

As for the result of that...

“—The principality tore them apart. Only ten or so ships have managed to make it back.”



It happened a few days ago.

While Julian and the others were attempting to free Leon, a priest visited Marie.

“Marie, the time has come to show your power as the saint.”

“I suppose I have to~”

Flattered, she rode an airship while in high spirits, but—

“—Huh?”

She was on top of an airship’s deck.

Marie, dressed in the saint’s outfit, had a necklace, bracelet, and cane, the tools that displayed her title.

The wind blowing atop the deck was freezing cold.

Before she could complain about the wind messing with her hair, she called something else to attention.

“—I, I never heard about this!”

The temple had around thirty ships.

Borrowing strength from the kingdom, there were an additional two hundred ships in the fleet.

They would be able to fight the principality if it was just a matter of numbers, but the opponents had sacrificial pawns, namely monsters.

The power of their numbers was beyond imagination—it terrified Marie.

As the monsters were advancing, Marie raised her cane.

“Stay awaaaay!”

The cane lit up, deploying a large spherical shield that covered the fleet.

The large light with white patterns caused the monsters who touched it to vanish.

The surrounding priests and temple knights praised Marie.

“That’s the saint’s power!”

“We can win. Victory is ours!”

“Move the ships forward! Use this momentum to push back the principality’s fleet!”

Marie’s neutralization of the monsters raised even the lowest of morale.

With a stiff smile, Marie was relieved that she could erase the monsters with her own ability.

(W, well, I can do this just fine. I was a bit worried at first though.)

Julian and the others were not within Marie’s vicinity.

The temple asked for their accompaniment as well, but they unfortunately couldn’t show up since they were trying to free Leon.

Furthermore, Kyle wasn’t there either.

Those from the temple did not get onto an airship.

As a result, Marie was fighting alone, helpless.

There were indeed some temple priests and knights around her, but she did not recognize their faces.

She was a bit timid.

As the pompous airship advanced with Marie riding it, the monsters that collided with the shield vanished as if bursting apart.

“Right. This isn’t child’s play. I am the saint! There’s no way that I would be thrown down with just this!”

Though she had originally been worried about Julian and the others not being there, Marie became drunk with her own power.



The principality watched the kingdom's fleet being led by Marie.

Inside a warship, Hertrauda was looking at a model of the battlefield with ally and enemy pieces arranged on top of a table.

"It seems that the saint's power is the real deal."

The leading figures around Hertrauda observed her.

Upon getting up from her chair, Hertrauda took a flute, the magic flute, from a woman.

One of the leading figures spoke.

"Princess, we have reached the kingdom's mainland. We've made some deviations from the plan, but there are no issues."

"—I see."

After saying that, Hertrauda glared at the flute with a stern expression and took a deep breath before placing her mouth to the instrument.

She was about to reach the point of no return.

Though tense, she resolved herself and blew into the flute.

Its tone was ominous, yet beautiful.

The surrounding onlookers closed their eyes and listened to the flute's timbre.

(Now then, Saint—will you be able to stop the principality's wrath?)

The sky was a battlefield.

The combat zone became darker upon the arrival of thick clouds.

Then, what appeared out of those clouds was—an absurdly large monster.

Its round body had numerous eyes.

Its long arms sprung up.

Its white body had something pulsating, resembling blood vessels, and it was a giant monster with many eyes and arms.

Its size was larger than humble floating island.

It was a monster whose size could span thousands, perhaps tens of thousands, of meters.

The kingdom's fleet began to tremble from the sudden appearance of the monster.

When Hertrauda took her lips away from the flute, she nearly fell over.

Once the surrounding people helped her onto her feet, she smiled.

“With this, the kingdom is no more.”

The leaders clapped their hands.

Some of them were even moved to tears.

“And now our long-standing grudge against the kingdom will clear.”

“How splendid, Princess.”

“The kingdom's troops stand no chance before the guardian deity. What's left is to enter the kingdom and rescue her Highness Princess Hertrude.”

Hertrauda spoke of her desire to see what was happening beyond the window, and so she was led outside while being supported.

The wind was blowing violently outside the ship's interior.

What she saw in front of her was the sight of a monster and its arms reaching out from the sky, knocking down the kingdom's troops.

Once the saint's shield had been destroyed, its giant arms mowed down the airships.

Its many eyes released beams of light, shooting down ships and causing them to burst into flames.

"Caught between the sky and the sea, your land will sink."

The principality was determined to sink the continent.

Hertrauda laughed with a pale face.

Nobody around her seemed to pay attention to her pale expression, and whether it was from exhaustion or fear of what she had just done.



An enormous palm approached.

Marie ducked down, letting go of her cane.

Once the giant hand collided with an allied ship, destroying it in the process, the nearby priests and temple knights shouted.

"Saint, the shield!"

"Please defeat that monster with your power!"

"Saint, your cane!"

In face of the surrounding people nagging her about "Saint this, Saint that," Marie screamed.

“How am I supposed to defeat that?! I don’t know. I never heard about ‘that thing’ appearing! In the first place—I’m not the real saint!”

As the people around her were stunned, an airship was being blown away above Marie.

The airship was crushed like a toy, thrown away, and then burst into flames.

She couldn’t comprehend what was in front of her eyes.

Feeling sick to her stomach, Marie’s legs wouldn’t budge from the horror.

She looked upwards at the monsters and shed tears.

“What am I even supposed to do here?! Someone, help!”

The monster slowly approached, the artillery of the resisting airships having no effect.

It destroyed obstacles in its way, slowly heading towards the royal capital.

One of the temple knights yelled.

“R, retreat. Retreat! Fall back immediately!”

When the airship made an immediate turnaround, an allied airship plummeted.

The airship exploded upon reaching the ground, causing flames to spread across the land.

There had been more than two hundred airships, but when it became time to escape—only ten remained.

All the while, Marie sat down and wept while cradling her knees within her arms.

She cried the same way she did during that one day in her previous life—



“—That’s all there is to it.”

Milaine finished her report.

The king spoke.

“Quite the nightmarish scenario.”

Vince also seemed worried.

“It’s no use trying to compete with numbers. Furthermore, there’s the matter of this earthquake.”

Vince sipped his drink and placed his cup on the table.

Thereupon, the cup slowly fell over.

It seemed to slightly lurch.

Numerous earthquakes have been happening ever since the monster, that giant monster, appeared.

It seems that there’s a correlation.

“Viscount Baltfault, I’ll ask you bluntly. Can you win? If you face that monster with your lost item—can you win?”

When Bernard said that, I gulped.

If that monster has the same characteristics at the final boss, then it would be impossible.

Luxon wouldn't be able to bring it down.

It wouldn't result in a loss. However, we wouldn't win either.

—After all, it's an opponent that will resurrect itself no matter how many times we kill it. In the game, this would be a situation where the player would give up and go back to an important checkpoint to start over. I honestly thought "Oh, this is a dead end," when I encountered it.

“—I don't know.”

In the first place, this is all just my speculation. I don't know the opponent, so I can't give an answer.

Vince spoke while picking up his cup.

“I suppose none of us would know. However, we have no choice but to place our hopes on you. If you can't defeat it with the lost item that you exclusively can operate—we will have to use the royal ship.”

Milaine narrowed her eyes and glared at Vince.

“Duke, why are you bringing that up here?”

There seems to be some dispute about it right now, but the royal ship, which the protagonist rides with the capture target of her choosing, is a powerful airship that appears in the later half of the game.

However, its performance is lower than Luxon.

Perhaps it would even lose to Partner.

Despite that, the royal family's ship has a special power.

“If not now, then when will we use it? It pleases nobody that you remain unwilling in this situation.”

“—!”

Milaine was about to say something, but the king stopped her.

“Stop this. Vince, you should know—the royal family’s ship will not operate without the qualified personnel. Even Milaine and I couldn’t operate it.”

Oh right, that kind of setting existed.

In the game, the protagonist and the capture target were the ones operating it.

However, there’s a problem here.

There are no bonds of love between Livia and the five capture targets.

According to the game’s setting, the royal family’s ship will not operate without love.

That being the case, what’s needed in order to overcome this situation is—Marie’s power.

We would need to borrow the bonds of love and the power of the saint from Marie.

“Your Majesty, I have a request. Please let me use the royal ship. Furthermore, we need the power of Marie and those five people.”

The king showed signs of discomfort towards me.

“Do you understand the significance of that? There’s no way that can happen.”

Milaine shook her head.

“Unfortunately, that’s impossible. Leon, we can’t lend the royal ship. In addition—the temple announced that Saint Marie will be executed.”



I was brought to another room.

The king and the others are still in the middle of their meeting. I was ordered to wait until arrangements were made for Partner and Arroganz to return.

Well, I’m still a knight of the kingdom.

I suppose I have to follow an order to be on standby. —There are also some things I’d like to think over.

As I was sitting on a chair, pondering to myself while clasping my hands in front of my mouth, Luxon came to me.

[Marie, the one who pretended to be the saint, will be burned at a stake or perhaps crucified. The descendants of the new humans sure are unsightly. Even at this point in time, they’re doing meaningless things.]

Despite the saint items recognizing Marie, she revealed that she was a fake and will be executed.

It’s not even funny. They’re just using that pretext to push the blame onto her.

The temple and the marquis’ faction wanted someone to take responsibility.

[At any rate, those people are foolish for ordering you to be on standby. They think that you still harbor loyalty and will work for the

kingdom. What an unacceptable attitude they have towards Partner and Arroganz. Shall we start an overthrow?]

I shook my head.

[—How unfortunate.]

Just to be clear, this kingdom has no value to me.

The game's scenario is also heading towards the bad ending and I nearly faced execution.

We somehow managed to put up resistance, but it doesn't change the fact that we're backed into a corner.

I was driven out of the discussion.

I thought about doing as I please. However, I can't come to a decision.

[Master, what are you thinking about.]

“Luxon, can you win in this situation?”

I asked that while wandering around.

[What are the conditions for winning?]

“Not letting the land sink. Defeating whatever ‘giant’ arrives at the royal capital.”

If that enormous monster, which I've come to call the giant, is anything like the final boss that I know of, then it should be approaching the royal capital.

In fact, Luxon said that it was moving towards the royal capital.

[That would be impossible. As you've said, even if I don't fail and manage to defeat the monster, it will revive, and so I can only stall it.]

Furthermore, I sense two responses belonging to a giant. They are approaching the royal capital from both the sky and the sea, as if to sandwich the floating land.]

Perhaps if a large hole was torn into the land, Luxon would be able to take advantage of that and fight.

However, with such a massive hole, the continent will face grave danger.

Luxon can only deal with one or the other.

“So there are two of them? Even worse.”

[If you want to win, you must be in a position where the entirety of the kingdom’s forces will follow you, Master. The royal ship is necessary, correct? However, looking at the state of the kingdom, if we assume that you’re to be entrusted with the royal ship—or in other words are entrusted with full authority, you will have to be the supreme commander. I believe that will be difficult for you, Master.]

This really is the worst. In order to have access to the royal ship, I need a suitable position.

However, I don’t have the status, reputation, or achievements for that.

I don’t have enough leverage to win.

[I recommend fleeing from this continent.]

I know that I’m better off running away. I have no attachment to this kingdom.

However—

[Oh, it’s your favorite mentor.]

Upon the sound of a knock, Luxon disappeared.

Upon responding, my mentor entered the room while pushing a service wagon.

“Pardon the intrusion, Mister Leon.”

“—Mentor.”

My mentor, who began preparing tea, was as gentlemanly as usual. In the royal palace, there seemed to a sense of serenity despite the nobles and knights fleeing upon hearing that the kingdom’s troops lost.

I calmed down a little upon drinking the black tea he gave me.

“Mister Leon, you seem worried.”

“Ahahaha, is that what it looks like?”

Should I flee, or should I fight? I hate my indecisiveness.

I tried to smile and dodge the question, but I couldn’t make a good smile.

“I heard about the situation from the queen. I was told that you had to leave after somehow angering his Majesty.”

It seems that it was a bad idea to talk about borrowing the royal ship.

Since it’s an airship that’s managed under absolute secrecy, I think that the timing and the way I spoke of it could’ve gone better.

“The queen was worried. You’re better at winning over a woman than I am, Mister Leon. Please teach me your ways next time.”

I asked my mentor a question after he finished his joke.

“Mentor—you’re not going to flee the kingdom?”

“Despite how it may seem, I am still a knight with a court rank. I plan to do what I can. Though, what I can do is limited.”

Though joking, it seems that he’s still going to fight.

This is it. This is definitely it.

Some of the people I want to help will remain in the kingdom because of something they don’t want to leave behind.

What would happen if I tried to bring my mentor out of the kingdom against his will?

“—You’re not running away?”

“Mister Leon, I will not condemn you for running away. However, I have chosen to stay. That is my decision as a gentleman and a knight.”

As a knight? When I gave a look of confusion, my mentor made a smile.

“Recently, knights have been seen as people partial towards women, but my chivalric code is to protect those who are important. That is not something I will compromise on.”

Neither a knight who’s a puppet for the kingdom, nor a knight who’s biased towards women like that otome game wanted.

It seems that’s my mentor’s chivalric code.

He didn’t appear in the game, making him a mob like me, but what a neat person he is.

“Chivalric code, you say?”

“Mister Leon, is it okay if I ask about your chivalric code?”

I drank my tea and then stood up.

“Despite how I may look, I like your stance. I’m a big fan of a chivalric code that protects the citizens.”

I hate any chivalric code that sucks up to schoolgirls or lets knights become tools for the kingdom.

“Thank you for the tea. I’m heading off.”

“To where?”

“In order to overcome this situation, I think I’ll need to become something akin to a supreme commander. I’d like to persuade his Majesty.”

My mentor’s eyes widened upon hearing that, but his usual expression soon returned.

I thought he would laugh or get angry, but he made a serious face.

“In that case, turn to the queen. Mister Leon, even as someone of the royal palace, she is a very accommodating person. She will surely be of assistance.”

“Even more than his Highness?”

“Yes, indeed. This is all I can do to help you. If you want to become the supreme commander, convince the queen with your own words.”

I gave him my thanks and left the room.

“I’ll do it. Mentor—thank you very much.”



Luxon followed me as I walked quickly down the hallway.

[You’re not going to flee?]

“Not anymore. I’m fighting the principality.”

[Didn’t you want to prevent getting promoted? Being the supreme commander is not a position you would want, Master. This does not fall in line with your policy.]

I don’t want to be promoted, but it’s fine if becoming the supreme commander contradicts that.

However—

“This may be crass of me to say, but any boy would want to experience this, even if just once.”

[Is that your stance? I do not understand.]

Fighting for the sake of the citizens? If I said something like that, it would sound like I was lying.

However, that’s the truth.

Perhaps it’s because I was an ordinary citizen in my previous life.

Having the kingdom’s citizens, who are pretty much unrelated to this whole event, die makes me feel sick. For example, suppose that there’s a happy family living each day steadily. If the land were to sink, many of those kinds of people would die.

They would be the biggest victims in a world that became messed up because of Marie.

Abandoning them would leave a sour taste in my mouth.

That’s enough of a reason.

“I have no interest in watching tens of millions of people die.”

[There’s no problem with running away. This is not your duty, Master. —I cannot decipher your decision.]

“Even I don’t understand myself. Even now, I want to run away. However, if I run away now, it will definitely linger in my mind. I will absolutely hate a life where I would ponder about my decision, and if I made the right choice, each time I go to bed.”

I’m sure that it would come to haunt me. I don’t like that kind of life or those kinds of worries.

In the first place, I’m a knight. Disregarding matters of court rank, if I were to speak in terms of my previous life, I would be like an emergency responder.

If someone with that position fled at the first sight of trouble, I would resent them.

[Do you plan on being promoted? Even if you were to win, you would be dragged into bothersome affairs, Master.]

“I’ll worry about those things once we actually win. Right now, it’s pointless worrying about promotions.”

I’m still not interested in being promoted. If possible, I’d really just like a peaceful life.

However—

“Everyone’s being incompetent, so I’ll take matters into my own hands. Help me out here, Luxon.”

[—I suppose I have no other choice, Master.]



Chapter 6: Bond

Part 1

「Are you serious?」

I am facing Mylene-sama inside a private room.

I who succeeded in securing a meeting with Mylene-sama earnestly requested her that I wanted to be given the right of command.

Of course, Mylene-sama's expression is in complete exasperation.

It's insane to make a student into the supreme commander, it can't be helped that she is suspecting the sanity of me who is asking for such thing.

「I'm serious. I want the right of command. Can you please give it to me?」

Mylene-sama's expression is very calm. Her usual loveliness has gone from it.

「Your reputation, and also your achievement are just too lacking. If I recommend you, my sanity will be cast into doubt.」

「This is for the sake of winning. We're going to lose as we are currently. If you refuse then I'll just run away. —Or do you have someone else in mind who can be entrusted with that position?」

Right now there was no one in this country who had the capability to face Fanoss Principality—along with the gigantic monster.

Mylene-sama turned her face down hearing that I'll run away and

「So the dues of our deed until now has finally arrived.」 She muttered.

「His majesty and others are planning to charge at the main force of the principality. They intend to ignore the gigantic monster and make the battle a brief one.」

「They won't be able to even get near like that. They'll just get annihilated.」

「Leon-kun, you cannot solve everything with just ability. For example, even if you're much more wonderful and capable compared to that kind of his majesty, the people will still trust his majesty more. People are like that. No one will recognize you even if you're given the position as the supreme commander.」

The way she spoke about his majesty contained thorn inside, but I pay it no mind and continued the negotiation.

Unexpectedly Mylene-sama's evaluation of me in her mind is high. That makes me happy.

「We won't win if this role is entrusted to someone else. The royal family's ship is necessary. That ship has a special power isn't it?」

Why do I know something like that? Mylene-sama's face is asking that question, but I keep pressing the question on her and put my hand on the wall.

「Tsu! Yo, you know what kind of ship it is? That ship—」

「The driving force behind the founding of this kingdom. And then, it's the trump card of the royal family. —Am I right?」

「Yes, that's right. It's not something that can be lent out so easily. That's, a Lost Item you know?」

It's a different Lost Item than Luxion, but it's needed no matter what.

I closed my distance with Mylene-sama even more.

「It's necessary. Please lend it to me.」

「But, it won't move. I and his majesty couldn't make it move.」

「We will use his highness Julius and Marie. Please gather the other four too.」

「But, the saint—Marie is someone waiting for her execution.」

Marie is needed no matter what.

After Marie die, there is no guarantee that Livia will be appointed as the saint.

In that case, it's necessary to take a certain method.

I'll leave the job of moving the airship and displaying the power of the saint to Marie and others.

I can just make Livia board the ship together with her after that.

It's allocation of role. That's the only idea I have right now.

「Luxion, explain it to the queen.」

『Yes.』

Seeing Luxion appearing, Mylene-sama said 「This is—the familiar that was mentioned in the report?」 in surprise while watching him.

And then, the queen's face goes pale hearing that there are two gigantic monsters moving from the sky and the sea to pincer attack the land.

「Is this true?」

『It's a fact. There is more bad news, the communication signal is worsening a lot since the two's appearance. If the enemy get near,

we should consider that our communication will become practically disabled.]

The queen pressed her left hand on her face.

「The more I hear the more troublesome it becomes. Leon-kun, can you win.」

「I'll win. In order to do that I'm asking for—」

「—The saint and the royal family's ship. I see, that's why you wish for the supreme commander position.」

Mylene-sama tightened her expression and stared at me.

「Marquis Frampton will raise objection if I speak of appointing you as the supreme commander. The currently biggest faction in the palace will turn into our enemy. Our ally will be few in number.」

When I turned my gaze to Luxion, his single eye nodded.

「No problem.」

「—Good grief, even though this is us reaping what we sow, if only the other knights are as loyal as you.」

Loyal? I don't have anything like that you know?

「By reaping what you sow, you mean?」

「It's about the current situation where heavy burden is forced on the shoulder of a part of the males. I will tell you about it if you return back safely. Win and then return back no matter what. —Do you understand?」

When I nodded, Mylene-sama's face reddened and she coughed adorably.

「A, also, it'll help if you back away slightly from me.」

Oops, right. After I took a step back, Mylene-sama took a deep breath before looking at me.

「I am also greatly indebted to Leon-kun. I'll take care of necessary arrangements. But, your ally will be really few. The situation is like this, so I'll be troubled if you're holding hope for our fighting capability. Can you win even then?」

「It's fine. Besides, I have prospect regarding the battle force.」

There's no problem.

Right now is the time to use the power of bond called friendship.

.

Part 2

The capital was falling into great chaos.

The figures of nobles could also be found among the people trying to escape.

Lamentably, there were many nobles and knights running away together with their mistress, abandoning their duties. They wouldn't deign to fight for the sake of this kind of kingdom.

By the way, speaking of their legal wives—their actual wives got left behind while they escaped.

My feeling is really complicated because I understood their reason completely.

I who returned from the palace to the academy am doubting my eyes seeing the situation that is different from usual.

「Wa, wait. Bring me together with you too!」

A girl is clinging to a man, but she got shaken off roughly. The man who did that is a heir of a frontier viscount.

「Don't turn on me after this late. You were the one who was completely ignoring me.」

The male students who are leaving from the academy.

On the opposite is a rich viscount living in the capital clinging on a girl.

「You're abandoning me!? Even though I have been supporting you financially so much like that!」

「Only death is waiting even if I'm staying here! If the capital is gone then the like of you is worthless!」

At this time of crisis, the position of people is reversed from the usual.

—This scene is sad, it doesn't make me happy at all.

Luxion suggested to me.

『Master, this way. It seems everyone is gathering and discussing something.』

「It's great that they're still here. Luxion, you go to where Livia and Ange are. Save them no matter what! Also, give a call to my acquaintances while you're at it.」

『I don't mind but, will master be alright by yourself?』

It's fine.

After all the friendship between me and everyone—Daniel, Raymond, and everyone is genuine!

「No need to worry. After all everyone will surely lend me their help.」

.

Part 3

「No, not a chance.」

「Yeah, not a chance.」

That place where my friends gathered is a classroom that is treated like storage.

It seems everyone is hiding here to escape from the girls who suddenly changed their attitude so easily like flipping their hand.

They're killing time here waiting to be picked up by their house.

When I raised the topic of participating in the war, everyone said

「No way」 or 「Impossible」 like Daniel and Raymond and refused to lend their hand.

「What're you guys planning!?」

「The kingdom's army is practically annihilated. We can't possibly fight a monster that destroyed nearly 200 ships so easily like that.」

Raymond's calm judgment isn't wrong.

「Leon, you should give up too. You were imprisoned with a false charge right? There isn't any need to work so hard like that. If the kingdom lose, we simply need to obey the principality next.」

Daniel is also unmotivated.

The feudal lords who possessed floating island as their territory are basically only following the strong country.

If the kingdom lost, they would search for the next force to submit to.

The surrounding all had the same reaction.

「It's just as you say. Ah, do you know? It seems that the male has the stronger position in the principality. Rather it's the female there who's anxious about marriage.」

「Really!? I'll swear fealty to the principality!」

「Me too!」

—I understand their feeling so much it's painful, but you guys should be more loyal!

No, I'm also not loyal though!

The reason my friends are calm is largely because their home isn't at the main land but at floating island.

If they escaped to their home, then after that they would just need to wait for the storm to pass.

On the contrary, it's the rich people who are normally acting overbearing who are in great panic right now.

Because their territory is in the main land or because they are palace noble, they're put in a position where they cannot escape from the war.

Even so, they're thinking to desert in the face of the enemy or changing side to the principality.

The powerful feudal lords cannot move because they're fighting other countries other than the invading principality—or they're unwilling to mobilize their face and decided to wait and see.

Anyway the state of affairs is terrible even though the kingdom is in danger.

Perhaps this is what the queen meant by the kingdom's dues.

I took a deep breath inside the classroom that is filled with only guys.

The air felt stinky with these guys' smell, even so I took out a document from my pocket and showed it to everyone.

「You guys, look at this.」

Raymond pushed up his glasses with his finger while checking the document.

「This is, the sale contract of airship? What about it?」

「You guys already received airship from me. I guess at this time you guys are training the crews for it at your territory right?」

Daniel nodded.

「That's right. Everyone back home was happy that the airship is easy to handle and its specs are amazing.」

Everyone was rejoicing from obtaining wonderful battleship, but Raymond is the only one going pale.

「Leon, this is—」

「Right. The airship you guys have can only be serviced in the workshop at my home. Want to try bringing the ship to other workshop for a test? They won't be able to service it perfectly. The

airships are completely filled with new technology, one day it won't be able to move if you're shirking its maintenance.]

The contract is mentioning that the airship is also filled with a lot of unique technology, so the receiver should leave its maintenance to my house's workshop.

Everyone began to panic knowing that the airship they finally managed to obtain would become unusable.

「I'll fight the principality. What do you guys think'll happen then? If I win then you guys'll be indebted to me. Your ship's fate'll be essentially in my hand, you guys'll live every day currying favor to me. Even if I lost it'll still be disastrous. My house might also get destroyed. In that case you guys who're connected to this me—do you think the principality'll turn a blind eye to you guys?】

Everyone showered me with angry yell.

「That's dirty!】

「Oi, hold down Leon here and then hand him over to Heltrude-san!】

「That person already got brought to the palace!】

I raised my voice and silenced everyone.

「Calm down you idiots! Do you guys really think the principality will accept your submission? The opponent is the principality. These guys are resenting this kingdom. If you're unlucky then your territory'll be taken away while you guys got treated like a slave.】

When everyone started considering that possibility, I addressed them kindly.

「Work together with me. It's fine. You guys just need to hide behind me. If you survive, I'll maintain your airship with discount price from here on. You guys will also become hero. Becoming a hero just from firing cannon from behind, where else you can find a good deal like this!」

Everyone is looking at me with vexed expression.

「Believe me. I'm fighting because it's possible to win. I'm a man who only fight winnable battle.」

Everyone is showing understanding at my persuasion.

「No, now that you mention it」

「Certainly, Leon has gotten out of a lot of tough spots until now.」

「If that's what Leon say then can we really win?」

Surely everyone is believing me because of my daily good behavior.

Daniel squeezed out his voice after pondering greatly.

「You're, always unfair every time.」

「Oh, are you praising me? Don't worry. That kind of unfair person is the ally of you guys. Reassuring right?」

Raymond scratched his hair roughly.

「It's war with the principality for us thanks to that unfair person. This is the worst!」

Everyone gave up –no, steeled themselves.

They said that they will follow me.

Do you see this principality!? This is the power of our friendship!

「Thank you everyone! Let's stay friend forever from here on too!」

Everyone is glaring at me but I paid it no mind.

They're yelling things like 「Don't screw with me」 or 「This demon!」 or 「That contract is a trap as expected」 .

Just this much grief is a trivial problem compared to challenging the last boss.

—Now then, let's go to next.

.

Part 4

Luxion arrived at Livia's room.

「Leon-san is going to fight the principality?」

Livia was shocked. In contrast Ange was utterly astonished.

「Even though he's a viscount, I've never heard a student becoming the supreme commander. Is his majesty or his highness Julius going to become the general on the paper? Also what about the battle force?」

Luxion shook his single eye to left and right in negative.

『It seems the talk is ongoing to make master the supreme commander. At present, the battle force that we believe can be secured with certainty is Partner and around twenty ships. We don't know how many ships the army will be able to prepare. We cannot expect anything from the temple's battle strength.』

Ange looked up to the ceiling and placed her hand on her forehead.

「Is he planning to challenge the principality with just that? What about the generals? The fleets of the feudal lords?」

『The kingdom's army will depend on Mylene-sama's arrangement. About the feudal lords, there're a lot of countries other than the principality that also started attacking. Also, the feudal lords who have force to be sent out are deciding to wait and see.』

Livia looked at Ange.

「Why is that? Why won't they help?」

「Livia, do you understand why the feudal lords are obeying the kingdom?」

「Err—it's because they're swearing loyalty to the kingdom isn't it?」

「Wrong. It's national force. Because there's the difference in military strength that the feudal lords around the kingdom are submitting. That's all. If that military strength become unreliable like now, they'll turn traitor without batting an eyelid. Besides—the kingdom has been treating the feudal lords too coldly.」

「Eh?」

Luxion thought.

(As I thought, that's the case. I thought that it's strange. Master stop considering further thinking it's because this is otome game world, but naturally that's not the case.)

The duke house was a house with strong connection to the royal family.

The house's way of thinking was leaning toward the kingdom, Ange's perception toward the feudal lords—indicated how the royal family was looking at the feudal lords.

「The kingdom has worked so the feudal lords won't grow stronger until now. There is this distorted marriage relationships right? It's a part of that effort.」

Ange shook her head after saying that much.

And then she stood up.

「I'm going to meet father. Perhaps there is something that I can do to help. I too want to be of help to Leon.」

『Is that alright?』

Ange smiled.

「Leon said that he'll do it. That's because there is a chance to win right? —I believe him.」

Livia looked slightly dejected, but then she stood up and moved to follow Ange.

Luxion guided the two.

『Then, let's head to the palace. The duke is in the palace.』

Ange's expression turned serious.

「Thanks. Let's head there right away. Livia, what're you going to do?」

「I'm also going!」

The two of them—and Luxion hurriedly headed toward the palace.

.

Part 5

At a floating island hovering near the capital, the traffic of the airships there is heavier than usual.

It's also stuffed with a lot of people, it's difficult to even walk.

At my destination, Nix—my big brother is waiting.

「Leon, you're safe!」

Nix is rejoicing. Near him big sis—Jena could be seen.

「Did you escape from prison!?」

Near her is her exclusive servant Miall. His gaze darted around after seeing me.

「Nice timing. You get in too. Father came to pick us up.」

Big brother pointed at the airship father used to come here.

「Nice timing.」

I entered inside the airship and talked to a sailor.

「Where is father?」

「He's at the bridge. Young master, what did you do this time?」

「It's not me. Big sis's cat eared slave over there is the one at fault. Don't let him get in no matter what!」

The guy who betrayed me—he couldn't be allowed to say beside big sis.

Big sis is making a ruckus, but I ignored her and rushed through the ship's passageway.

When I entered the bridge, father is talking with the ship captain.

「Barkas-sama, a lot of the capital's citizens are crowding here to evacuate.」

「Bring in the children as many as we can before sailing off! —Hm? Leon!」

Father looked happy when he noticed me, but then his face immediately turned stern.

「You, what did you do this time! I heard you got thrown into jail!」

「My bad, father—help me out.」

「Haa? What are you—」

I explained the situation first. From the reason I got caught, there were really a lot of things—I also tattled about what that bastard Miall did.

Then father's face is gradually turning pale—it made me pitied him a bit.

「You really are idiot.」

「I'll also go out but, I want father to lend your strength too.」

「Why the hell you aren't running away in this situation where running away is understandable. You're really an idiot son.」

The airship—warship that I gifted to father is big and high specs.

The training of the crews has also finished. Among the people who I could rely on, they're the one with the greatest strength.

While father is thinking hard, big bro and big sis entered the bridge. Miall is also coming along behind them.

Big bro reported in a hurry.

「Father, Zola and others are ordering to enter the ship. That woman, she is bringing a lot of her friends.」

Father sighed lightly, then he walked out the bridge to get out of the ship.

However, he grabbed Miall's head with one hand and then dragged him.

「Wa, wait! Why are you assaulting Miall!? Let him go!」

Big sis protested at father and Miall himself is also resisting, but father grabbed Miall with one hand and wouldn't let go.

「Please let go. I didn't do anything!」

「Shut up! The bastard who sold out my son dare to board my airship! Don't fuck with me you asshole!」

Father glared angrily at big sis for the first time. —He is seriously angry.

「Don't bring this trash who betrayed Leon into my ship! Nix, stay in the bridge. Jena, stay quiet in your room. Someone, take her away at once!」

The crews led away big sis, then I and father headed to the airship's entrance.

There Zola and her friends are waiting.

Zola ranted at father.

「Barkas! Let us in right away! After that we're landing on the capital and collect all of my fortune in the mansion. You get that!?」

Father threw away Miall at the harbor that is crowded with a lot of people.

「Wa, wait a second! Listen to what I—」

「Shut up」

And then father drew out the sword hanging on his waist and beheaded Miall with one swing before kicking away his body.

Miall's head and body are falling separately from the floating harbor.

Zora shut her mouth and looked scared seeing father's figure.

The eldest son hiding behind Zola—the trembling Ludward glared at father.

「It's war. Ludward, you're coming too. This'll be your first campaign.」

「N, no! Don't order me around! This savage countryside noble!」

I'm staying silent. Zola seemed to gradually recover from what just happened and recovered her liveliness.

「Barkas, who do you think you're giving order to! Who do you think it thanks to that you could live in peace—」

「Hand over Ludward. It's war.」

In front of father who is different from usual, Zola lost her temper on that spot and made a ruckus.

「Don't get carried away you countryside trash! Ludward is the son of my beloved! He doesn't have the blood of the like of you flowing inside him. If you want to go to war then go with that good for nothing!」

It seemed she spilled out her real thought without thinking but—really, what a horrible story.

If I got to say what is horrible, then it's horrible how I was able to predict this.

But, even after hearing that truth—father is relieved for some reason.

「That's what I suspected. But, it's refreshing to know that. Zola, this is farewell.」

Zola suddenly changed her attitude.

「Wa, wait. Just now is a misunderstanding. You know, it's! If you want a heir no matter what, then we can do that after this. Anyway, for now take us away from here.」

「My bad. I'm busy.」

With a signal from father, the knights of Bartfalt House descended from the deck wearing armor.

「Zola and her friends are going home. And then Leon!」

「Yes!」

Father who was pathetic until now is really cool today.

「I'll return right away after delivering everyone. After that—have you resolved yourself?」

Seeing father's worried face, I thought that this is the usual father.

It made me strangely happy—I nodded a bit even while feeling pathetic to make him worry like this.

「I see. I'll take care of the rest. You go do what you want to do. You aren't going to listen to me anyway. Good grief, you always shocked me every time.」

—I'll do that, father.

I'm really sorry for causing you trouble like this.

Really I'm—always causing trouble for my parents, whether at the previous life or at this life.

.

Part 6

I who returned to the palace from the harbor received report from Barnard-san who ran toward me.

「Viscount, the gathering of the kingdom's army isn't going well. The land battle force is also not assembling smoothly. The number of airships we can properly mobilize is around fifty.」

It's surprising instead that there is still fifty ships that can be mobilized.

「At my side I secured twenty four ships along with Partner.
—Oops」

The tremor is gradually getting stronger.

Barnard-san's complexion is also looking really bad.

「Viscount, let me ask you frankly. Can you win? Depending on your answer, I wish to evacuate my family.」

「I can win against the principality army. The problem is only the gigantic monster.」

If the monster was summoned from the second princess who I didn't know about and the other magic flute, then it should have the same characteristic with the last boss that I know about.

The method to annihilate the gigantic monster—needed the power of the saint and the power of Livia herself.

Livia's special ability is—a voice that could reach the heart.

Livia had the power to send her voice into people's heart.

How? How should I know. That's the setting.

Anyway, that power is necessary. The saint's power alone won't be enough.

I can't believe that Marie didn't know about this.

「Viscount is really amazing. How about it? When this is over, will you accept Clarice?」

I was about to laugh at Barnard-san's joke but, his eyes are serious.

I'm strangely sweating.

「—I'll think about it after winning. Right now, you know, I'm really busy with a lot of things.」

「You're right. —The preparation in the audience hall will also be finished soon. Take a rest until then. After that, the person you asked for has also arrived.」

I got shown into a waiting room near the audience hall—Marie and others are there.

.

Part 7

Marie is sitting down while hugging her knees. She is really dirty.

The dress that was originally white is now dirty. She won't lift her face that she buried on her knees.

Marie's lovers, the five of them starting from his highness Julius are worried.

Carla who is also similarly in a ragged state is watching over Marie at the corner of the room.

Kyle approached me and started a conversation with an exasperated face.

「To get imprisoned with a false charge—are you cursed?」

「It's not me. The one cursed is your master. More importantly, what happened?」

Kyle talked about what happened until now with a tired face.

「Goshujin-sama, declared that she isn't the saint. After that her followers showered her with verbal abuses. The temple's priests and knights then stormed in with a yell and captured Goshujin-sama before throwing her into the dungeon.」

「What's that? That's a bit funny.」

「It's not funny at all for us though. After that she is in that state until now. —Goshujin-sama, is she going to get executed?」

She is a heinous criminal who pretended to be the saint. Naturally the temple wouldn't forgive her.

I'm amazed Mylene-sama was able to take away this girl from the temple.

「The palace too is only delaying the execution temporarily. She should consider he life forfeit whether we win or lose.」

His highness Julius glared angrily at my words.

And then he immediately talked to Marie who must get worried from my words.

「Marie, it'll be fine. We are with you. That's why, never mind about Bartfalt's words.」

But, Marie is—.

「—Annoying」

「Eh?」

「I'm saying you're annoying! You guys, what do you mean it'll be fine! Will you guys be able to do something? You think we can win, even though you didn't see that monster? Really, what a happy-go-lucky bunch.」

「Marie?」

—This stupid girl, she showed her true color.

「Get out! Everyone get out! I—hate all of you!」

Carla ran toward Marie.

「No way, Marie-san, you said that we're friends.」

「I was obviously lying. Are you stupid? You were isolated and bullied because you're empty headed like this. I made use of you only because I thought it'll be enjoyable to irritate that mob bastard over there even if only for a bit. The likes of you—isn't my friend.」

Carla crumbled in tears.

I clicked my tongue and said.

「So that's your true color. You're pretty skilled in acting coy huh. It's exposed today though.」

Marie sent me a gaze that is filled with hatred, but then Chris covered for Marie.

「Bartfalt, enough! Marie is just tired.」

But it was Marie herself who started disparaging Chris who was covering for her.

「Haa? I wish you're the one who stop. What are you doing acting like a big shot even though you're a useless guy except in swordsmanship.」

「Wha-!？」

Marie turned toward Greg and others next.

「You're also just all talk. What do you mean by real battle. You're actually useless. The narcissist purple hair over there is also disgusting. You green hair, you're giving me the creeps because I don't know what you're thinking. And then you. You. The biggest problem is you former crown prince!」

「Marie? Just what's wrong?」

His highness Julius couldn't keep up with the situation. Marie laughed while speaking.

「You're a useless guy except of your status as prince. The five of you are really stupid. You five threw away your position, prestige—and even your fortune, do you think any woman will be happy with that? You guys are incomprehensible.」

Marie cackled. She then also sent her gaze toward Kyle.

「The annoying small brat over there too. Always acting cocky and self-important. If I didn't tolerate you, the like of you will be sent back to the slave merchant again. Be a bit more thankful!」

I think everyone here is appalled.

「Be a lot kinder to me! Everyone should just listen to what I'm saying! I hate those who oppose me or useless, I hate them—I hate you all!」

I shook my head.

「That's unsightly.」

「Shut up, begone! I can't be happy because there are you! Give it back. Give it back! —Give me back my happiness!」

Ange and Livia entered the room when Marie started crying.

「Leon! You're safe! —Wha, what's wrong? What's this situation?」

「Marie-san, why is she crying?」

I feel guilty toward the two of them even though we can finally meet, but I had something to talk with Marie alone.

「Leave us alone for a bit. I need to talk with this girl.」

Marie is gradually growing quieter and then she collapsed.

It seemed she is really tired and fell asleep.

—Really this girl is annoying.

.

Part 8

—Marie saw a dream.

That day too she was abandoned by her big brother and cried.

It was a memory of her past life.

A memory when her knee got scratched. She sat down and cried until she was tired and fell asleep.

(I was also stupid. Even though I should just go home right away, I got stubborn instead. Come to think of it, how did I go home after this?)

A boy was approaching while she was staring absentmindedly.

He was complaining continuously.

『This idiot. You should just walk home rather than crying until you get tired.』

Her big brother returned and carried her past self on his back.

(Aa, I see. In the end big bro came to pick me up. Then you should just carry me right from the start, this trash big bro.)

Marie wanted to complain but, tears were flowing.

She was sleeping with a peaceful face on her big brother's back.

She was drooling and dirtied her big brother's clothes.

When she thought that her big brother would complain about it,

『I wonder why she is relying on me』

Her big brother's face looked slightly happy. Seeing that Marie grabbed her chest.

That's right. Her big brother—his words were harsh but he was kind. Marie remembered.

(Trash big bro—don't die. Just why did you die)

She recalled the day her big brother died.

(Complain at me like usual)

When Marie returned from her trip, her parents slapped her.

And then when the funeral was over, she was driven out from the house right away.

(Even though everything would usually work out if that trash big bro was there. Because that trash big bro was gone, I ended up unhappy. Why did you die—Onii-chan)

Even though the two of them kept complaining at each others, she thought they got good relationship going between them.

Most things would be solved for her if she left it to her big brother even if he kept complaining about it.

That was why, Marie behaved like a spoiled child to her big brother. She pushed the game to her big brother also because she was acting spoiled.

But, that reliable big brother of her died because of her. After that everything began to go wrong.

There was an otome game she couldn't clear. If it was impossible for her, she should leave it to her big brother. Thinking that she pushed the game to her big brother before going to a trip abroad with her friend.

And yet, when she returned her big brother slipped on the stair—and died.

From the last mail that her big brother sent to her mother, her parents realized that she made him to force himself. They became cold toward her then.

There was also how she went to a trip abroad by lying. She lost her parents' trust.

Marie—didn't hate the big brother of her previous life for real.

But now—she couldn't even remember the face of that big brother she relied on.

(Save me. Why aren't you saving me)

He was always complaining but he would still help her out—it was painful that she couldn't remember her kind big brother's face.

.

Part 9

「—Onii-chan」

I sat on a chair while watching Marie's sleeping face. It made me recalled my annoying little sister at my previous life.

That girl also toyed around with me often and always made me go through hardships.

When I thought how I got put through hardships by Marie at my second life—do I have ill fortune regarding woman?

『Master, is it alright to let her asleep like this?』

A gun without bullet inside is placed on the table for threatening her.

I looked at it while saying.

「Let her sleep for a bit more. There is still time.」

『How about knocking her awake and forcing her to listen?』

「What kind of person do you think I am? No, you don't need to say. You're going to call me inhuman brute anyway.」

『Unfortunately that's wrong. It's indecisive and incompetent fellow. Master is close there.』

It's not close at all. Rather it's far away instead.

Being called inhuman brute will still be better.

Marie lifted up her upper body while I'm glaring at Luxion.

Her eyes were swollen red and her hair was also messy, so she looked a bit scary.

I took the gun so that Marie could see it.

「So you wake up. Now, it's time to talk.」

「—No. I'm not going to do anything until Onii-chan come.」

What's with this girl? Is she perhaps broken? Who is this Onii-chan?

What a really hopeless fellow.

「Your big brother? He must be a good for nothing trash anyway.」

「Don't make fun of Onii-chan!」

Marie threw the thing near her at me so I grabbed Luxion and used him as shield.

『Master, I'm not going to forget this』 He said something like that with a voice filled with resentment so I ignored him.

「You're really trash. I was stupid to see my little sister in you. That girl is still better than you.」

「Shut up! It's your little sister, so she must be an idiot woman with a screw loose anyway!」

She was crazy, selfish, idiot and also irritating little sister but, Marie got no right to say that much about her!

「Don't make fun of her! She is still a hundred times better than you! Certainly she got a screw loose, her personality was terrible, and in addition she was rotten with the worst personality, but she's still better than you!」

「My big bro was also a hundred times better than you. No, he was even far better! He got a mob face, and speaking bluntly he was irritating, bad mouthed, got bad personality, got a bad mouth—a, anyway, don't make fun of Onii-chan!」

—This is stupid.

Why do I have to argue like this with this girl?

We insulted our respective sibling until we ran out of breath and the conversation cut off.

After catching up my breath, I asked Marie.

「Why did you become the saint? If you had cleared that otome game, you should know that Livia's power is necessary. In addition you entered the fight even though you didn't even have the royal family's ship, are you stupid?」

Marie answered while heaving.

「I didn't know that! I asked—big bro—Onii-chan to clear the game for me. After that big bro died right away, I checked the save data around the time things calmed down! I didn't know anything about the game except from the illustrations or the movies!」

This girl, she's saying she achieved reverse harem with half baked knowledge even though she didn't even clear the game!?

—E, eh? Wait a second. She made her big bro clear the game?

「—My, little sister went to a trip abroad, so she pushed that game on me telling me to clear it during her trip. Eh? Could it be, you—eh?」

Marie also said 「Eh?」 and watched my face with intense concentration.

I also watched Marie's face carefully. There the vestige of my previous life's little sister is remaining markedly.

This offensive face is without a doubt! Marie is my little sister from the previous life!

「O, Onii-chan!? Onii~cha—ouch!」

I hit the head of Marie who was about to leap at me with the grip of the handgun in my hand.

「SO IT'S YOUEEEEEE!」

When I yelled that, clattering sound came from behind the door.

But, rather than minding that I focused at the girl in front of me—Marie.

「Isn't this too cruel toward your little sister who you met after so long?」

「I decided in my heart, if by chance I'm reunited with you then I'll take revenge.」

「It was because big bro tattled at mom that the situation got tangled! Do you know just how hard I got it after that huh?」

「From the start it was all your fault! No, wait! How was mother and father doing?」

Luxion watched our conversation and said.

『I don't think that the two of you are acting, this made me consider that all those talks about previous life and otome game made might be truth.』

—This guy, he was still doubting me before?

Chapter 7: Destiny

Part 1

「—In other words, you foisted your own child to mother and father?」

「Ye, yes. Because, they said to me that I won't be able to raise her. Isn't it horrible?」

「No, it's not horrible at all. Rather, that way would be better for that child—for my niece too. I'm relieved instead. Father and mother were correct there.」

In the waiting room near the audience hall.

There I had a fateful reunion with my previous life's little sister.

It was a reunion that I didn't make me happy at all.

It was actually my previous life's little sister who thoroughly messed up this world. That fact made me wanted to cry.

But, I'm glad that I could hear how my parents were doing.

「And? From where your memory is cut off?」

「E, err—my boyfriend was treating me violently, and when I thought that this might be really bad, when I realized I was in this world.」

Tehe! She made that kind of face, so I pointed the handgun at her. Marie raised both her hands high in fear.

「Even I was doing my best mon!」

「Shaddup! Don't use 『Mon!』 when you're an old hag inside! I got goosebumps here.」

「How can you say that! It's you shitty big bro who is an old geezer inside!」

Rather than that, it's painful that in the end I couldn't learn what happened with my parents.

「Anyway, you work together with Livia.」

「Lo, look here? At this rate I'll die though?」

「I guess. But, how about you at least confront your life seriously at the end?」

Marie started crying.

「I don't want that! Help me, Onii-chan!」

Calling me shitty big bro, or big bro, or Onii-chan—this girl, just what does she think I am?

Marie cried. She is crying for real.

「No way. I don't want to fight that kind of monster. I absolutely won't join the war.」

「—Ha? Don't screw around. A lot of things went wrong because you became the saint. Anyway, take responsibility and get on the airship. You just need to act as Livia's support.」

Marie looked at me while shedding tears. She muttered 「Why is it only that woman. Help me out too!」 before running outside.

「Tha, that idiot!」

And then Barnard-san entered inside in this bad timing.

「Viscount, the preparation is finished. Come into the audience hall.」

Barnard-san is going around even though he is a minister because of the lack of manpower. He looked really busy.

I can't cause him trouble, so I headed toward the audience hall.

—I'm worrying of what to do even while feeling irritated toward that Marie.

.

Part 2

Marie rushed out of the room and then dashed through the corridor without stopping. Livia was watching her in surprise.

「Marie-san—ran away?」

Ange glared at Marie's back.

「That woman, she plan to run away even at this point?」

Livia judged that it would be dangerous to let Ange chasing after Marie with how sharp her glare was.

「Ange, please go to the audience hall. I'll go to persuade Marie-san!」

「Go, got it.」

Ange was also called into the audience hall. She had to go there after this.

Inside her heart Livia was,

(It will be Leon-san's important scene, if Ange isn't there—it'll be no good if I get in their way.)

Thinking that she started running.

She ran through the palace's corridor chasing after Marie.

Tears were coming out.

(I'm not fitting for Leon-san. Even though I understand that. Even though there is Ange, so why am I)

The place Marie ran into was one of the rooftops of the palace.

The rooftop looked like a garden with plants growing in abundance, there also wasn't any place to run away there.

Livia who cornered Marie there was breathing hard with heaving shoulders.

When the two caught up their breath—Marie told Livia.

「—I'll return it.」

「Eh?」

「I'll return back everything to you, so return it back to me too. What you need, is his highness and others. Those five, and then Kyle too—even the saint status, all of them belongs to you!」

Livia's understanding couldn't keep up with Marie's talk, but Marie left her behind and pleaded.

「That's why give it back. Give back Onii—chan. Give back Leon. I'll return everything to you, so return him back to me too!」

Livia approached Marie and then swung her right hand with all her strength. The strong slap made Marie fall.

Marie powerlessly held her cheek.

「Aa, this is nostalgic. I was also hit like this by my parents. It's really painful. What? Are you angry? Don't worry. Because I'll return all of your things back to you. You'll be able to become happy.」

Livia yelled while crying.

「—Don't make fun of me!」

The crying Livia sat down on the spot.

Marie was looking Livia who was like that with a puzzled look.

「Leon-san isn't an object—at the very least, I wanted to stay together with him even if it's just during our time in the academy. Even though I don't need anything else other than that」

Noble and commoner.

There was a large wall called status between the two of them. Compared to that kind of wall, the wall between Leon and Ange was something trivial in Livia's opinion.

—The two of them are well-matched.

She wanted them to become happy.

That was why, she had to withdraw herself.

「Don't say something like giving back. Leon-san, doesn't belong to me.」

Marie looked down and laughed.

「Then what? In the end, I simply lost everything. This is really the worst, even in my second life I kept losing everything.」

Marie started crying. She crouched down and let out a sob.

「Even though I knew just about everything. Even though I thought that it would go well—why is it, I'm unable to become happy.」

Seeing Marie crying, Livia didn't know what she should say.

Then,

「So this is where you are.」

「Marie-sama!」

Kyle and Carla ran toward Marie.

It seemed they were looking around for them.

When Marie lifted up her face, the two of them were looking at her with an expression that looked really worried.

「You two, why?」

Why are you two here? Marie's expression asked that. Carla answered her with tears in her eyes.

「I, I—without Marie-sama, I'll really become alone. I was really happy when Marie-sama saved me! Besides, Marie-sama is really kind.」

Kyle glanced at the crying Carla and made an exasperated face but—he looked a bit embarrassed.

「I myself have some bad behaviors. But, as expected goshujin-sama yourself is also horrible with your attitude. Well, we're even with this. I don't know about the other five but, goshujin-sama will be too pitiful if at least I and Carla-san don't accompany you.」

Large drops of tears trickled down Marie's cheeks.

「So—ry. I'm sorry. I'm really—sorry, you two.」

Kyle rubbed his eyes with his sleeve to hide his tears.

「Come on, let's go. You are the saint even if a fake one. You should dress the part at least.」

Marie stood up with the help of Kyle and Carla.

The two of them bowed at Livia before returning inside with Marie.

Livia looked down and smiled.

「—Liar. You haven't lost everything haven't you? There're still two people who will lend you their shoulders like that—you liar.」

After muttering that, she gasped in realization and covered her mouth with both her hands.



The black emotion inside her chest made tears come out.

(Even though I have nothing left for me.)

.

Part 3

At the rooftop's entrance, Ange was watching the crying Livia.

She didn't even give a glance at Marie and the other two who were passing beside her. She couldn't take off her eyes from Livia's crying figure.

「Livia, you—of course it is. We were always together.」

Ange felt her chest growing painful looking at Livia.

She had noticed Livia's feeling.

But, it was fun with the three of them together that she didn't want to turn her focus to it.

「I'm sorry. If only I don't harbor this feeling, you wouldn't suffer like that. Forgive me, Livia.」

Ange covered her mouth and shed tears.

She wiped her tears, and then she walked toward Livia brazenly.

「Livia.」

The crying Livia hid her face and played stupid.

「Ange? E, err, Marie-san has returned without problem. Tha, that, please don't look at my face right now. A lot happened so—」

Ange spoke her feeling honestly.

「I—love Leon.」

Livia closed her mouth and looked down. Tear fell to the ground.

「That's why, you too don't back away.」

「Eh?」

Ange held out her hand toward Livia.

She grabbed Livia's hand and pulled her up. And then with the two of them facing each other she held both her hands with her own hands.

「You're fine like that. Tell your feeling to Leon properly.」

「I told him. I told him once. But, Leon-san immediately evaded the topic right after that. He won't give me the answer. Surely it's because he like Ange.」

Even then Ange told Livia.

「Even so! Even so, tell him your feeling one more time. Make it so he won't be able to run away this time. Don't allow him to evade the topic. —I'll also tell him my feeling, so you tell him too.」

Ange hugged the crying Livia.

「Is it okay? Because, Ange and Leon-san are noble—」

「Stupid. Difference of status doesn't matter for something like this. You're suffering because you cannot give up just from that. Then, you've no choice but telling him.」

The two of them wanted to know who was it that Leon truly liked.

Ange talked gently.

「You're also someone important for me. That's why, stop with the crying.」

Livia also placed her hands on Ange's back and hugged her tightly before nodding.

「Yes.」

Part 4

Audience hall.

I moved my gaze searching for Livia and Ange, but they aren't anywhere.

What now. I'm feeling a bit discouraged here.

The group of five are present here, but from their expression their heart aren't in this place due to the matter with Marie.

—These bastards are anguishing about romance.

Even though I'm also thinking so seriously about love!

Besides, even though I was holding hope for you guys and Marie, like this my plan won't come to fruition.

What can defeat the gigantic monster that even Luxion cannot defeat is love! Love is really amazing! Love is the strongest weapon there is!

—Isn't there love lying around somewhere that can be replacement for these guys?

Learn a bit from me who is worrying so seriously like this, you idiot five.

The nobles and knights who are standing in rows.

His majesty lifted the right corner of his lips meaningfully and conducted himself in a good mood.

「The number of people here has become really few isn't it?」

The nobles and knights who escaped. Even the number of soldiers isn't satisfactory.

That is just how despairing they thought this war with the principality is.

I too will run away quickly if I'm just a common soldier.

No, the civilian wouldn't even become a soldier in the first place.

「But—it's none other than the people who remain here who are the true heroes! The principality despicably bring monster with them and invade our kingdom's territory. Gentlemen—now is the time to risk our life!」

I don't know whether the people who stayed behind have nerve of steel or they're simply resigned—.

「In order to stand against the principality, it's necessary for us to fight as one! Viscount Bartfalt, come forward!」

I walked on the red carpet that is spread out in the audience hall and kneeled with my head bowed in front of his majesty.

「I appoint you as the supreme commander in this critical juncture. Surely there are also those who make light of you due to your youth. There surely are also those who won't trust you due to your lack of experience. But, only you viscount possess the strength to break through this situation. Viscount Bartfalt, this battle—can you win it?」

His speech was theatrical. —But, I don't dislike it.

I wanted to try it at least once.

I replied with a line that I once heard from somewhere.

「If that is what your majesty wish for.」

The surrounding became noisy.

The voices that reached my ear are 「This greenhorn」 or 「Only his mouth is big」 or 「Hm~, seventy point」 or 「I've heard that line from somewhere」 —you guys, it's embarrassing so shut up!

Look! His highness is a bit angry! Eh? Why is he angry?

「—I see.」

In contrast, Mylene-sama blushed slightly. She looked happy? Eh? Why!?

His majesty proclaimed.

「We will tackle the final battle against the principality from here on with Viscount Bartfalt as the supreme commander!」

After such exchange, a noble clad in extravagant attire—Marquis Frampton raised his objection.

He seemed to be tired as could be seen from the shadow under his eyes. His cheeks are also losing fat.

Well, it can't be helped.

After all the battle force he sent out got done in by the principality who he thought his ally.

「Please wait your majesty! This upstart cannot be trusted. This person was suspected of treason! Are you telling us to fight under someone like this? Is it your intention to ridicule us?」

The nobles who agreed with Marquis Frampton also spoke their objection.

「That's right. We should negotiate with the principality instead.」

「Please leave it to me. I swear I'll make the negotiation with the principality a success!」

「It's mistaken to rely on someone like that!」

I stood up and looked at his majesty and Mylene-sama's faces. His majesty got his eyes closed but Mylene-sama opened her mouth expressionlessly.

「Stop with the unsightly act. The viscount isn't a traitor. You all are the one who fabricate the accusation. Besides, it's his majesty who appoints the supreme commander. Are you saying that you are disobeying?」

Using his majesty's name to forcefully appoint me as the supreme commander—it's a coarse method but, there is no other way.

Marquis Frampton's face went red and he protested.

「What! Even for the queen that way of speaking is inexcusable! We won't unite to fight together if the circumstance is like this!」

They're desperately resisting my side because they know that if the kingdom wins with me as the supreme commander—then it will be the end for them.

They're desperately opposing in order to have a comeback no matter what.

I slowly turned around and looked toward the marquis and his cohorts.

Inside the audience hall where nobles, military officials and government officials lined up, I took out a handgun from my pocket and fired it toward the ceiling.

Gunshot sound and the sound of shell case falling to the floor echoed inside the hall.

With that as the signal palace guards and—the knights of the duke house entered the hall.

Vince-san nodded slightly when I looked at him.

—The permission has also been given. It's my time from here on.

「Shut up that dirty mouth, you trashes.」

「Wha, what did you say! Guards! What're you all doing. Quickly capture that—wha, what?」

The palace guards are moving to apprehend the nobles who were in opposition just now—the people of Marquis Frampton's faction.

「Having connection with the principality behind the scene and pushing the kingdom into danger. It's not me who needed to be apprehended for treason. It's you guys.」

Palace guards restrained the arms of Marquis Frampton and dragged him until where I'm standing.

「Do, don't screw around! Why are we the traitor!? We took action thinking of the country's sake. What does a greenhorn like you know!?」

「You're arrested now because you lost against that greenhorn. It's just like you say, I'm just a greenhorn. However, it's no good if the people who are working at the core of the country lose against that greenhorn isn't it?」

Your blunder was setting me up.

—But, I'm pitying you guys. Because it's not me that you guys lost against, but Luxion.

In the first place I wouldn't be able to win if I don't have Luxion.

Eh? Thinking carefully, I wouldn't get dragged into this kind of political struggle if I don't have Luxion.

Well, it doesn't matter.

「Where is the proof that we're connected with the principality!? Your majesty! This is a mistake. You must not lend your ear to the words of a greenhorn like this!」

His majesty doesn't reply at all. He is only sitting and watching Marquis Frampton.

Marquis Frampton is irritated seeing that. He glared at Mylene-sama who sat beside his majesty.

「This must be your work. This treacherous fiend!」

To say such terrible thing to Mylene-sama—this guy, perhaps he needed a punishment?

「Marquis Frampton, that's unsightly. This is your defeat.」

When Mylene-sama said that with a pitying look, Marquis Frampton made a ruckus as though to say he still hadn't lost.

「What're you saying! How are you going to establish my treachery in this situation where there isn't any proof at all? Know that divine punishment will befall this diabolical deed!」

The surrounding nobles are also similarly clamoring. The nobles outside of the marquis's faction are watching with cold gaze or looking bewildered.

Even so, this guy doesn't know when to give up.

Amusing. Let's made fun of him.

「Do you want the proof that much?」

When I said that, Luxion appeared and projected 3D image at the center of the audience hall.

What is projected there is the marquis and other nobles—the members of the marquis's faction.

The hall became noisy with the appearance of the 3D projection, so I raised my voice and gathered everyone's focus.

「Too bad. It's really too bad. I am compassionate, so I planned to forgive you if you unite and fight together with us here. You just let go of your last chance, Marquis Frampton.」

—Well, I'm lying though. Forgiving him? No way.

「Wha, what are you! Your majesty! Please stop him. This person brought a gun into the audience hall! He is dangerous! Your majesty should understand too. This person cannot be allowed to roam free! Your majesty mustn't get tricked by this kind of deception!」

The 3d projection started moving and then a voice resounded inside the hall.

『Lord Marquis! A report came stating that the queen is recommending Bartfalt to be the supreme commander!』

The mouth of the marquis inside the projection opened.

『It's pathetic how she got cajoled by a youngster like that. She is quite capable but as expected in the end she is a woman. His majesty is also really pathetic with how whipped he is. Even so, to think that the principality would break our secret agreement—』

He is looking really annoyed inside the projection.

『We have lost a lot of compatriots. What should we do from here on?』

『Use her highness Hertrude for negotiation. Those guys should be wanting to take back her highness and the magic flute no matter what. Don't forget to move things forward secretly from his majesty. After that—don't let that guy, Bartfalt to do as he please. The principality's trump card was a miscalculation but, that guy is also as dangerous or perhaps even more so than that. When push comes to shove we will push the blame to his majesty and strike an agreement with the principality.』

For a retainer to make his majesty take responsibility, that could only be taken as irreverence.

Marquis Frampton turned pale and looked toward me.

『Li, lies! This is nothing but a deception! This is an illusion that this traitor made up! This traitor is trying to set me up!』

I pressed my gun barrel on Marquis Framption's forehead and smiled.

「Are you stupid? You have gone this far. If this is all the proof that I have, then even his majesty and the queen wouldn't take action. They allowed this to happen means that's just how unshakeable the proof that's in my possession.」

I took out letters and notes from my pocket and tossed them.

Marquis Frampton opened his eyes wide and trembled fiercely.

「Ho, how? Those letters—should be burned already.」

The numerous letters are familiar to him because the writing is exactly his own. The letters contained his exchange with the principality.

Luxion had copied them exactly like the original—they're fake.

「Aa, there is also a message for you from her highness Hertrude.『He is unexpectedly useless isn't he』 she said. She easily fessed up what kind of conversation she had with you guys.」

She spoke up about what kind of secret agreement she exchanged with Marquis Frampton who had outlived his usefulness for her.

From Hertrude-san's perspective, she must be having fun watching the kingdom having internal conflict under this kind of situation.

She revealed everything without covering up anything knowing that she had accomplished her role.

Perhaps she thought that we would quarrel even more by doing that?

Good grief—she is really a bothersome princess.

The marquis inside the projection continued talking with a dissatisfied tone.

In contrast, Marquis Frampton in front of me is turning bright red and muttering 「Tha, that little girl」 and so on in vexation.

『Every last one of them don't get it! Don't they understand just who is the dangerous one here? That saint is also troublesome but she is nothing we can't deal with. But, that man alone is no good! Him alone can do the work of who knows how many fleets. Don't they understand what does being able to completely win against a fleet of dozens of ship using just one ship means?』

『However, right now the problem is the principality. We should cooperate with Duke Redgrave too—』

『Then, make Bartfalt to clash with the principality so they crush each other! Take his family hostage. I don't care what kind of method you use! Listen well, don't think that guy as a mere watchdog of the duke. The report mentioned that his airship doesn't even need a crew at all, not a single one. Do you get it? He is the real danger!』

『But, in our current state we don't have that much influence—』

The marquis inside the projection is enraged.

『That Vince too, just what in the world is he thinking. Allowing that youngster to do as he please is what will cause this kingdom to end. There won't be any meaning at all even if we win against the principality like that. No matter what—no matter what we have to crush him!』

I'm really pitiful to be feared so much like that.

Even I wouldn't do anything if they didn't start anything.

Come to think of it, in the game—in the real scenario, was the main character able to gain prominence thanks to these guys secretly maneuvering behind the scene?

It's pointless even if I pondered that right now.

「Now then, do you understand now? The kingdom is in danger because of your fault. Don't you think it can't be helped if you're charged with treason after doing something like joining hand with the principality?」

Marquis Frampton yelled at me.

「What about it? I did everything for this country's sake. Who do you think is supporting this country? It's me. I have supported this country until now! There is no way a youngster like you can understand it! What I did is necessary to preserve this country!」

「And it resulted in our current situation right? You made a mistake in your dealing. There wouldn't be any problem if you dealt with the principality correctly instead of making a move at me.」

「Don't screw around! Do you understand just how much power you have? You're judged as danger because you're just a kid of that level. One day the kingdom will perish because of you! Everyone, open your eyes! It's none other than this youngster who brought calamity for this country!」

This guy is overestimating too much huh. That's why—I laughed.

「No, it's the principality that's going to destroy this country rather than me you see. It's you ain't it who caused this country to get destroyed by the principality before it get destroyed by me. You really messed up there, gramps. No, perhaps I should call you a doddering old fool instead in this case.」

Marquis Frampton raged when I called him a doddering old fool.

The guards got shaken off.

「You, you-you-you, you don't understand anything! Do you know how much I've been grinding my body into dust working for the sake of this country!?」

「You ended up like this because you were on guard against a harmless person like me while making light of the principality.」

「—You ignorant brat! Everything will be solved peacefully if you die. The kingdom can win even without borrowing your strength! I'm not mistaken! There's no reason for a brat who don't even understand politic to complain about my decision! Do you understand just how much I've been devoting my effort for the sake of the country? His majesty and the queen can be so carefree sitting on their seat is also because this me have been working for the country's sake until now! I won't let a brat like you to deny all my effort until now. A MERE BRAT LIKE YOUEEEUUU!」

Could it be, this guy is thinking that I'm denying achievement?

That's a misunderstanding. I've got to correct him.

「It looks like you're misunderstanding something. Just so you know I'm actually recognizing you. You must have supported this kingdom so splendidly until now. Yep, you've worked hard! I tip my hat off to you! You're the best!」

The surrounding nobles, knights, and soldiers are dumbfounded by my speech and gesturing.

It seems they found it unbelievable that I'm praising my enemy.

And then I turned around and lowered my hand to aim my gun toward Marquis Frampton once more.

I lowered my voice,

「But—if you failed then you got to take responsibility.」

「Fa, failed you say!」

「This situation right now, it's the result of what you did. Do you get it? You guys push the kingdom into danger. Take responsibility for that. That's your job.」

「I, I'm a marquis you brat!」

「Wow, amazing. That's a prominent rank you have there. That's exactly why you're adequate for taking responsibility. It's okay for you to feel relieved you know? After all I'll be the one to clean up your mess. Aren't you glad that you have a junior like me? I'll clean up your failure neatly.」

I laughed in provocation.

Your failure was making me angry. Yes, that's all.

「Just what do you think you can do you brat! A brat who don't even understand politic is talking big—」

「Hm~, perhaps you still don't get it? I'll say it frankly because it looks like you're unable to understand—you lost. This time it's you guys' turn to become sacrifice for the country's sake. You tried to sacrifice me and obtain authority didn't you? It's not like I'm angry about that. But, I simply want you to take responsibility.」

「Wh, why should I—」

「You have lost already. You are defeated in political struggle and put the kingdom into danger. You have discarded a lot of weak people just like you did to me until now right? There were people who you crushed like me so that you could get ahead in life right?」

「What about it? Those are necessary sacrifices! Are you saying that's wrong? That's why a brat like you is no good. You don't understand politic at all!」

—It made me want to praise him instead for being so candid like this.

Discarding the few for the sake of the many.

How truly wonderful! The society won't think well of it but, I won't deny that method.

Because—.

「Gramps, I said it remember? I'm not denying you, instead I agree with that thinking. The weak should be cast away. The few should become sacrifice for the sake of the many! There isn't any need for any pretty words. That's why—you can accept it right?」

「Yo, you bastard—what are—fugoh!」

I stuffed the gun muzzle into Marquis Frampton's mouth.

「Aa, it's enough already. You don't need to talk anymore—weakling. You guys are weak loser who ought to be casted away so you can accept it right? You can understand how the few has to be sacrificed in order to keep the many alive right? You will become the sacrifice readily won't you? You aren't going to say that you don't want it right?」

Marquis Frampton turned pale, but he tried to shake his head in refusal.

The gun muzzle inside his mouth got in the way that he couldn't talk well.

「You have sacrificed a lot of people cheerfully until now saying that it's necessary. You aren't going to say that it's wrong at this point right? If you have done as you please claiming it's for the sake of the country, then this time—you become the sacrifice for the country's sake.」

I pulled out the gun muzzle from Marquis Frampton's mouth and punched his large nose.

Marquis Frampton is sent flying. His nose is broken and blood flowed from there.

I gave the command to the surrounding.

「The matter of you picking a fight with me, I'll forgive it with the punch just now. —Next atone for you sin. Take him away.」

「Ye, yes!」

After the traitorous nobles got taken away, there are only few remaining nobles inside the audience hall.

The military personnel—the generals are also looking at me.

「Now then, gentlemen who have learned that I was imprisoned because of false charge. There're several things that I should clear up first here. First—I hate you guys. I hate this country. The reason? I have to work hard because of you idiots. Do your job properly!」

Many gazes stabbed at me.

They too must have various justifications but, such things doesn't matter.

In the first place, just what in the world they were doing even though they're the pillars of this country? No, thinking carefully it must be pointless reasons. Such thing often happened even in the country of my previous life.

There were plenty of cases that made me wanted to tilt my head wondering just why such thing happened.

Even so, the previous world is still better.

—I want to go back to Japan.

Because, if it's the previous world it wouldn't become something tedious like this—maybe? Well, doesn't matter. It's the fact that the previous world is absolutely the better world to live in.

「Second. I understand that you guys don't have confidence in me. I myself don't trust you guys. The third is even simpler. —If there's someone here who think that if it's them they'll be able to overturn the situation and lead the kingdom to victory, then step forward. I'll let you take over for me anytime.」

The knights and military officers averted their gaze.

It's clear from their attitude that they aren't convinced, but perhaps it's better that at least there isn't any idiot who nominate themselves thinking they can do better.

If the supreme commander is his highness Julius, surely these guys too would be able to accept it.

Or rather, I myself want to refuse if I'm told to the one standing at the top.

「The last one is extremely simple. I'll make you guys win if you obey my order. If you aren't going to obey then run away quickly. Don't hold any doubt, don't talk back, the only thing you guys are permitted to do is to follow my order. How's that, you guys get it?」

My voice echoed clearly through the noisy audience hall.

「Fight and die for my sake. —In exchange I'll save this country.」

.

Part 5

After finishing the kickoff party, I'm at my wits' end.

「This is the worst!」

『Saying that now? Even though master was the one who said that you will be the one to do it. Even so, I'm amazed that master could go that far in your speech. Master yourself was also underestimating the principality. In my conjecture this situation can be avoided if only master conducted yourself well.』

「Shut up. In the first place, was there any need for me to go that far?」

『Won't it be better for master to work harder if you dislike this situation? Master's boomerang performance is really godly. I'm honestly impressed.』

I said it myself that I'll do it but, even without thinking hard it's clear that it's already over for this country seeing how they're placing someone like me as the supreme commander.

There's an extreme lack of talented people.

I am facing Luxion inside a room that was prepared for me.

「Anyway, the first priority is the evacuation. Assign those who don't want to obey my command to evacuate the people of villages and cities located on the path of the enemy army. Make them evacuate people from the capital too.」

『The insufficient military strength will decrease even further. I will create the paperwork for that arrangement.』

The machine that looked like a printer which Luxion prepared is producing up decree in written form one after another.

Luxion checked the data that we received and then he arranged various things like the organization of the force, the schedule, etc.

「What is the situation of the enemy army?」

『Their traveling speed is slow, so there is time until they arrive at the capital.』

I took the finished up document and signed it.

「I'll have your main body to do work too.」

『I don't mind that but, the communication is bad. If I end up needing to act at the other side of the land, the support for master will become minimal. I can't really recommend that.』

「No problem.」

『—Understood. Even so, the marquis was really capable.』

「Ha?」

I'm surprised hearing that. Luxion then boasted.

『It's impressive that he judged that the threat isn't Marie or even the principality, but the master who I'm serving instead. Also, the

marquis surely possessed knowledge regarding the royal family's ship. That's why he regarded master as dangerous while underestimating the principality.』

Royal family's ship—it made appearance in the game as the main character's airship, but it had the setting as a Lost Item that greatly helped the founding of the kingdom.

Certainly it might be unavoidable for people to be wary of Partner which was also a Lost Item airship.

「But, if he is really capable then the situation won't become like this.」

『Isn't the same can be said for master? Even though master possess a power like me, the situation still become like this and master even get placed into a position that you don't wish for. Master cannot laugh at the marquis.』

I wonder just where did I make a mistake. I'm thinking that while signing the documents.

.

Part 6

I stepped into the hangar that was built deep underground of the palace.

The airship that was lying dormant there had beautiful white hull.

The airship's shape was streamlined similar like Luxion.

But, this one had a more elaborate design.

Right now we were—in front of the airship that would become the main character's mother ship.

「It's big.」

〔It's approximately 400 meter. It's smaller than Partner.〕

「It looks strong.」

〔It's unreliable compared to Partner.〕

「—The design is nice.」

〔It's a luxury cruise ship that ignored productivity and ease of maintenance. It cannot hope to match Partner's functional beauty.〕

Luxion seemed to feel a rivalry. He repeatedly boasted that Partner is better.

I turned around and looked at the people present here.

Other than the lining up mechanics who maintained this royal family's ship—

Are his majesty who looked disgruntled and Mylene-sama who is exasperated with his act.

The quintet are standing silently. Marie is looking awkward near them.

Other than them, Livia and Ange are also here.

I'm the one who brought Livia here, while Ange is present as someone related to the royal family.

「That familiar is really proud of his own ship.」

I can't stop sweating coldly hearing his majesty's biting words.

「This guy hate to lose. E, err, anyway! Let's get inside. Perhaps this thing will be able to move if it get repaired.」

「That's impossible.」

「Eh?」

His majesty pointed at a device in front of the airship.

The object that is covered by a sheet is peeled off by his majesty's order and came into view.

A heart shaped pedestal—and a heart shaped backdrop appeared. The thing is really mismatched with this place.

「When two people who genuinely love each other stand there, the royal family's ship will recognize them as its owner and display its power. The door won't even open and it's impossible to enter inside if there is no owner.」

—I don't think there was this kind of setting in the game.

The ship should be reacting when the main character and her partner came in search of the royal family's ship.

His majesty looked deeply emotional for some reason.

「The royal family Hohlfahrt, and then the branch family Marmoreal House. In addition is Field House, Arclight House, Seberg House—they are heroes who formed a party in the past. It must be destiny for their descendants to be all present here like this.」

—Feels like I had heard that in the game.

There was a group of five men including the ancestor of Hohlfahrt royal family who formed a party before the founding of the kingdom. They were heroes. That's why, these five—the bloodline of the five has the qualification to move the royal family's ship, or so they said.

There was one more person in that party, a female adventurer whose name isn't known.

There was the story that female adventurer was Livia's ancestor or something.

If my memory isn't wrong, Livia's ancestor was the first generation saint.

I wasn't interested so I thought 「Yes, yes. Destiny, destiny, ain't that nice」 and skipped all the game's explanation.

I should read it more carefully, now I'm regretting it.

But, at that time I didn't have any thinking like one day I'll reincarnate into this otome game so I got to remember all this! so it can't be helped.

If there is a guy who is thinking like that I'll look at him like he is crazy.

「Only the royal family and the remaining four houses can be recognized by the royal family's ship. Other than them the only one with qualification is the family of the last party member who are lost in history—that's what the legend told.」

His majesty boasted to me full of confidence.

Does he has some kind of grudge to me? The only thing I've done is only beating up your son and wooing your wife isn't it?

Ah, no good. It can't be helped that he hates me. From other people's eyes that can only be seen as the doing of the worst scum.

Luxion whispered to me.

『We will be able to enter inside the ship if the door is destroyed but—perhaps it will be better to read the mood here?』

What is necessary in the end is love.

If there is a device to ascertain that love, then I want to ascertain it now that we have the chance.

I asked Luxion to read the mood and we walked until the pedestal.

Seeing the pedestal from nearby, it looks excessively horrible.

This stage that is in the form of heart shaped pedestal doesn't have any mystique at all.

Mylene-sama turned around toward us and spoke with a serious expression.

「Have you resolved yourselves? This isn't an easy device at all just so you know.」

Mylene-sama was strangely nervous while his majesty suddenly fell silent.

「First we will show everyone how to use this device. Is that alright, your majesty?」

「U, umu. It should work without fail this time!」

His majesty was flinching back from Mylene-sama's doubting gaze.

When the two got on the heart shaped stage, a line lid up at the center.

When the two stood up with the line between them, the heart shaped stage began to shine.

The spot where the man is standing is colored blue.

The spot where the woman is standing is red—pink? Well, it shined with that kind of color.

Then a voice came from the stage.

『Man—25 point! Woman—58 point! Unfortunate!』

—Eh?

Everyone is looking at each other in confusion the Mylene-sama started hitting his majesty. Oi, that's a bit cute.

『Liar! 25 point, what's with that! That score is already in the level of stranger or acquaintance!』

His majesty is making excuse, but he is looking extremely pathetic.

『Shu, shut up! Even your score is just 58 point! Even you don't love me anymore! Yeah, that's right. I'm not seeing you as a woman anymore! What's bad from that!?』

I somehow guessed the mechanism from seeing the two of them arguing.

『This device told someone's affection with number?』

Luxion nodded.

『This device is something like a joke item. Just now I tried accessing this ship and investigated, but it seemed it's an airship that was made by a rich person as amusement. It was produced far even before the production of my main body. It seems it was used once for honeymoon before being placed inside a warehouse unused.』

The reason of the creation of the royal family's ship is too questionable that I'm troubled of how to react. Eh? The reason is something like that?

Even if I said that this ship is civilian ship from the ancient times, no one would believe me.

〔By the way, it seems that married couple divorced in two years.〕

〔I don't want to know that kind of information. Let's finish this right away. Now we understand how to use it. So it seems this ship might be able to move if someone among the group here got on there.〕

The relationship of Marie and the five is impossible to fix no matter how you looked at it.

At this rate the royal family's ship will be unusable.

〔It will become a valuable asset without a doubt if it can move. After all it is armed and also has far higher specs than the airship of this world. Ah, it needs to be repaired first though.〕

Until now it has been stored inside a hangar and treated carefully, but no one could perform maintenance for the ship's inside.

To make an example, perhaps it's like a car that hasn't been serviced? Even though the inside is all worn out, only the outer appearance is pretty.

But, the device to decide its owner is—a joke item, that's really pathetic no matter how you cut it.

〔If it's no good no matter what we do, then I guess we'll destroy the door to enter inside.〕

〔Then, I shall call the manufacturing robots. Please wait ten minutes.〕

It will be lucky if someone got recognized by the device during that time.

The problem is, even if the ship moved, as expected love will still be an indispensable factor in order for the ship to display its capability.

While I'm feeling anxious wondering if it will really be alright—.

「—Marie, come!」

「Eh? Eh!?」

His highness Julius grabbed Marie's hand and roughly led her onto the device.

He forcefully made his arguing parents to get down.

If it's me, I'll be shocked to learn that my parents doesn't love each other but, his highness Julius seemed to be prioritizing Marie rather than his parents' lovers' quarrel.

The device started up and measured the two's love in number.

『Man—90 point! Woman—17 point! It ended up in an extremely unfortunate result.』

The electronic sound didn't read the mood.

It seemed it doesn't have high performance AI like Luxion.

It only played lines that had been prepared beforehand that is matching with the displayed score.

Marie looked down.

But, his highness Julius is smiling. Why? Has he snapped after knowing the reality?

「If this is the result than I can accept it. Marie, I shall proclaim here. I swear that one day I will make you turn toward me.」

A proclamation to make a woman who tricked him and not loving him turn toward him.

He is acting like this even though Ange is here.

When I glanced at Ange to check her state, she is making an exasperated face.

—Yosh! It's fine if she isn't angry.

Marie remained in that spot, then next Jilk replaced his highness Julius to stand on the device.

〔Man 89 point. Woman 12 point. It ended up with a sad result.〕

Is that last line needed!?

Jilk kindly talked to the bewildered Marie who cannot understand the situation.

〔It's vexing that I lost against his highness but, I also cannot lose. Marie-san, I swear that I too will absolutely make you turn toward me.〕

〔—Jilk.〕

〔Step aside, next is my turn. Marie, this is my feeling!〕

This time Greg got up on the device.

〔Man 91 point. Woman—22 point. It's an unrequited love, just give up.〕

Stop with that last comment!

Greg smiled powerlessly hearing the score.

「It's painful. But you know, I'm feeling refreshed with this. Marie, do you understand my feeling now? —I'm not gonna give up on you.」

「Greg, li, listen to me!」

「Next is me.」

Greg jumped off from the device and Brad got on the stage confidently.

『Man—98 point! Woman—9 point. What an amazing discrepancy.』

Stop. I can't watch this anymore.

—My stomach hurt from holding back my laughter.

「So my score is the lowest.」 [

「I, I'm sorry. But, I!」

「But, this is where it start. I'm aiming to become Marie's number one from here. Marie, we realized it. That time, perhaps Marie acted coldly to push us away.」

Just what is these guys misunderstanding?

Chris took Brad's spot.

「Certainly we are unreliable. But, we—have nothing else but Marie.」

No, there are a lot of other fine women. —Wake up already.

『Man 87 point. Woman—30 point! Isn't this woman too cold?』

Marie is crying.

「Everyone, you're wrong. Listen to what I have to say!」

His highness Julius took Marie's hand and led her down from the device.

「We understand. It's pathetic but, we were unable to protect you. It's only natural that Marie is disgusted with us. We were unable to be by your side when it mattered.」

It seemed these five thought that it's natural for Marie to be disgusted with them for allowing her to be sent off to war.

What a misunderstanding. I wish they would display such good character before they met Marie.

「Don't worry Marie—we won't let go of you anymore.」

「You're wrong! That's why, listen to me!」

Everyone is acting like 「We understand so it's fine」 , and yet Marie is desperately trying to convey something.

Whatever, I don't care but, I was wrong for expecting love from this bunch.

Now then, what to do?

When I looked around, Mylene-sama is criticizing his majesty.

「Even though Julius and others are showing score that high. When it come to you, your score wasn't even 40 point around the time when we first met.」

「You're looking for love from a political marriage? In that case I also wanted to marry with someone I love.」

「You promised that you will increase your score without fail! You said that we would travel the sky together with the royal family's ship!」

「Obviously I was lying!」

「You are only full of hot air like that. You're always like this. You acted like an actor that only care for your own joy and get satisfied by yourself—you're really just all talk!」

This side's relationship is impossible to repair. —Or rather, it's just like Mylene-sama said, certainly this thing isn't an easy device. Depending on the result it would turn the situation to be a disaster.

Also, the fact that his majesty is only putting a show to look good at the outside is sad.

I've realized that though. Since the first time we met, I was thinking that this guy feels shallow for some reason. —I wasn't tricked at all. I was aware of the truth!

Now then, I planned to do something about the danger to this country, but even I cannot fix a danger to marriage life.

After watching over the two's relationship, I turned around toward Livia and Ange who are staying quiet.

I got enough good laughs already, so I planned to return back together with the two.

「Aa~, it must be that. Love is really difficult. Now then, let's return back. It will be fine to leave the rest to Luxion. —Hey you two, why are you grabbing my arms?」

The two are grabbing my arms. It feels like holding flowers in both hands.

They silently pulled me toward the device.

What's more they're pulling really strongly.

「Wait. I'm begging you two please wait! No! I don't want to get on that joke item!」

Livia and Ange forcefully tried to get me on it even though I'm resisting in dislike.

「Leon-san, please get on!」

「Everything will become clear using this. Even you who are always dodging the matter won't be able to lie with this!」

「No way! Something like this can be laughed off when you're just an observer. I'm absolutely not going to join in! My mental isn't strong like those guys. I'm someone delicate. I won't be able to endure it if a bad result come out!」

I could laugh because there was no way I would join in.

And yet, the two are trying to put me on it.

They talked about making it clear, so the two would surely stand on the opposite side to ascertain the love.

It will be embarrassing even if the score is high, and if the score is low I'll surely fall into self-loathing wondering just what is love—I'll also learn Livia and Ange's scores through it.

If we're unlucky, a result that is bad for both sides might come out.

I don't want that. I wouldn't know what kind of face to make when talking with the two of them after that.

「Both of you, it's strange to measure love using number! Something like this is wrong!」

Luxion looked at me—he looked amused.

『It's alright for other people but not for yourself. I think that's a wrong thing for human to be.』

This damn AI, he betrayed me his master!

『Stop! I won't be able to accept it if a bad result come out! I won't be to laugh it off as someone else's problem! Even though I wanted to end it with a laugh like this! Even though I wanted it to finish with me laughing at everyone!』

After I yelled that, his highness Julius and others gathered around me with unsteady gait.

His majesty put his hand on my shoulder and grinned widely.

『It'll be boring if you become the only one not doing anything right? Your smirking face was really irritating. Get on there already!』

I got brought until right in front of the device with the men pushing me, but I crouched down in resistance.

Livia and Ange got on the device. Each of them pulled at my hands to drag me on the stage.

『Leon-san. It'll be over before you know it.』

『Get on quickly and make it clear!』

His highness Julius and—Marie also pushed my back.

『Bartfalt, you better resolve yourself too!』

『You get on it toooo!』

『You guys, you better remember this. I absolutely won't forgive this day! Ah, wait!』

While I am desperately resisting, the stage shined pink and a fanfare resounded to the surrounding.

The engine sound of the airship growled throughout the room.

『120 point for both sides! Congratulations. The two of you are tied together with true love!』

Everyone let go of me. I tumbled backward from being suddenly let go.

On the stage were Livia and Ange.

128



「—Ange」

「Livia—you」

The two on the stage blushed red and stared at each other shyly.

Right after that the two hugged each other tightly with their hands going around each other's waist.

Their distance is—really close.

「Tha, that, I'm happy.」

「I feel the same.」

While the surrounding is also dumbfounded,

『There is no mention that the same sex is no good, so this too must be one of the correct answer.』

I sat down hearing Luxion's words. —To be honest I had a slight hope.

I thought that my score would be higher than Marie and those five.

As expected, there is no way that the result would be a tragedy like those guys, I thought.

And yet, seeing the two of them noticing their feeling and staring at each other's eyes, I learned the truth.

「—In the end I'm just a mob in charge of comedy anyway! This kind of treatment is the best I can hope for!」

It's a complicated feeling.

I didn't know that my extremely beautiful acquaintances are getting into yurilesbian development.

It's a sad feeling, but there is also happy feeling that their partner isn't another man.

But, as expected it's so sad that I'm crying on the spot.

Mylene-sama placed her hand on my shoulder.

「Le, Leon-kun. I don't know what to say here but—don't be disheartened.」

—I, ran away from that place while crying.

「This is cruel!」

「Leon-kun!」

Chapter 8: Departure

Part 1

I took a deep breath.

I'm watching the scenery of sunrise from the palace's rooftop.

When the cold air entered the body, the coldness awakened my eyes.

Many airships came and went from the capital, continuing to evacuate the citizens thoroughly the night.

『Master, Partner's preparation is finished.』

『With this our side's battle preparation is ready huh.』

The capital is in chaos while the evacuation is going on.

『I wish that everything will keep progressing just like planned.』

『—The communication is worsening further along with the approach of the gigantic monster. When my main body circles to the other side of the land, I won't be able to support master except for the bare minimum. Master, is that really alright?』

Luxion confirmed once more.

This spherical form with one eye is an extension of Luxion's main body.

If its link with the main body is cut off, its capability would drop no matter what.

The communication is worsening because of the gigantic monster that we can't even scout the enemy like before.

In other words—we don't know how the principality will move.

What we know is only that the gigantic monster is slowly moving toward the capital.

We also sent out the kingdom's airship for scouting but, the number is lacking that it's impossible to call it thorough.

「We also have Livia and Ange so it's fine. We're going to blow away the monsters with their power of love.」

『Love is it? If something can really be done about this situation with love somehow, then I wonder what is the love that is overflowing all over the world?』

「There is no way I know the answer of that. We can think about something like that after winning.」

『More importantly, is this really alright? Master has been avoiding those two since then hasn't you?』

I learned that the two loved each other using the joke item.

There isn't any need for me to be a nuisance for them.

「As expected that was too unexpected even for me that I cannot say anything.」

『It seems the two of them were searching for master after that.』

「—It's not like I'm avoiding them because of that joke item. I just don't want to meet them right now.」

I decided to go to war.

Now that it has reached this point, I too have to resolve myself.

「I won't meet them because it feels like my resolve will become blunt if I do that, that's all.」

〔If only master said that honestly from the start—! Master!!〕

—Luxion is looking up to the sky.

.

Part 2

In one of the rooms of the palace.

Leon's teacher was there.

He was preparing tea since early in the morning and served it to the two women who were sitting at his opposite side.

The two were Mylene and Hertrude. There was an air of tension from them.

「Princess Hertrude, can't you stop this war?」

Hertrude answered right away after Mylene said that.

「It's impossible. The principality has endured for dozens of years until now for this day. This time it's your country's turn to be trampled.」

Mylene closed her eyes seeing the faint smile on Hertrude's face.

「I understand your feeling that want to say that the kingdom is to blame. But—」

「Oh, do you intend to threaten me? It's too late. The magic flute that child has summon the sky and sea guardian deities of the principality. Once the order has been given, they won't stop until the order is carried out. —It's already too late.」

There wouldn't be any meaning even if she was used as hostage for negotiation.

When Hertrude said that, Mylene shook her head.

She placed a very old document and a single book that she brought here on the table.

「What could this be?」

「First read this one.」

The document that Hertrude read came from the era when the principality had just gone independent.

In it, the reparation for the act of barbarity so far was written.

The reparation wasn't about the act of barbarity that was carried out by the kingdom, but by the principality.

「Li, lies. The principality fought the kingdom for its independence due to the unjust treatment from them! This is a forgery.」

Mylene looked toward Hertrude with completely exasperated eyes.

「So you have been raised hearing only the pretty story. You're really a wonderful princess as a puppet.」

Written in the book was the history between the kingdom and principality.

The king of the principality—a former archduke of Hohlfahrt Kingdom was connected to a country that was hostile toward the kingdom and attacked the kingdom many times.

He pillaged the territory he invaded without the slightest mercy.

The military power of the archduke house was considerable, so the kingdom was at a complete loss.

Even though it would be simple to crush a single archduke house, the kingdom also had other enemies in the surrounding, so they were unable to exert their full strength.

Because of that, Brad's house the Field House was appointed as feudal lord of that area to protect the national border.

「They prepared military installations, assembled airships, and turned floating island into fortress. That was an enormous expenditure of fund and material.」

The kingdom was angry at the archduke house and treated them not as retainer but as enemy country.

When the archduke house introduced itself as principality, they became unable to continue their pillaging like before and they were temporarily exhausted.

Furthermore Field House was pinning down the principality.

As the result—the principality tried to assemble military strength. In order to obtain floating stone from floating island that was still lived in by people, they bombarded and destroyed the island.

Floating stone was an indispensable resource for airship construction.

In order to gather it, they destroyed a single floating island that had people living there.

The kingdom and Field House were enraged and defeated the military of the principality.

They were made to pay reparation, which was written in the document that Heltrude was holding right now.

「The principality attacked the kingdom again even after that. The damage became small after a feudal lord was positioned there, but the grudge didn't vanish. When the kingdom attacked the principality previously, the soldiers who marched there were the people who lived in the place that had been pillaged by the principality until then.」

She wouldn't say that the kingdom was absolutely in the right, but Mylene thrust the truth to Heltrude.

「The principality really loves to pillage from the kingdom aren't they?」

「Wrong! The principality fought for our independence. It was because the kingdom forced us into an unfair treaty!」

「We only demanded reparation. Though the principality didn't have any intention to pay at all at that time. They lost so they paid reluctantly. Was it the kingdom's fault that their living became tough because of that?」

Hertrude's face went red and her hand moved to take a cup, but teacher quickly moved.

「It seems the tea has gone cold. I shall brew another.」

Hertrude glared at teacher in frustration, even then Mylene told her as though to say that she was the one talking with her.

「You have the duty to know. Certainly the kingdom pillaged the principality's territory. But, it's troubling that you had forgotten how it started to reach that point.」

Hertrude was in confusion, but teacher suddenly turned his gaze outside the window.

The sound of siren resounded, notifying that enemy had come to the capital.

Mylene stood up from her chair.

「They're faster than expected.」

Teacher looked toward Hertrude.

「Are they here to rescue her highness?」

「That's possible. The magic flute mustn't be allowed to fall into their hand. Where is Leon-kun?」

「Partner is already sallying out. Mister Leon has gone out to intercept the enemy. How very reliable.」

Hertrude was trembling. She was looking down, unable to accept the fact.

「Both of you, please excuse me.」

Teacher made the two to duck on the floor.

Right after that, sound of explosion reverberated in the sky of the capital.

.

Part 3

Arroganz landed down on the palace's rooftop.

I immediately boarded it and received explanation from Luxion about the situation.

『They got us. It's a surprise attack from the sky.』

「Even your radar isn't a big deal huh.」

『I mentioned that the communication is bad. I wish that you will praise me for detecting the attack before it was carried out. Partner, scramble.』

Partner sallied to protect the sky of the capital. Seeing that I grabbed Arroganz's control stick and flew to the sky.

The sound of siren is reverberating through the capital.

「How many?」

『Thirty ships. They must be a detached force. The airships dropped down bombs at the same time when they were descending.』

「Shot them down.」

The barrage of bullet and explosions that Partner laid out hit the targets.

Explosions bloomed in the sky. Black smoke covered the capital.

The sky with beautiful morning sun suddenly became like a cloudy sky.

『Master, the kingdom's army is asking for order. It seems the sortie of the interception squad will be late.』

「Make them prioritize the evacuation. I and you will do something about those guys until our allies got up to the sky.」

『The enemy deployed armor and ground force.』

I tightly grabbed the control stick and took out a rifle from the container on Arroganz's back.

I picked up the voices of the pilots riding the armor of principality's army.

Noises were mixed with the communication. It's hard to listen to.

『The fiendish knight, he came out!』

『Captain, an armor that big is closing in so fast!』

I fixed my aim at the captain unit and Arroganz pulled the trigger of the rifle.

『No problem. That guy is a coward who can't even kill human—eh?』

The stomach part got shot through. When the armor exploded, the surrounding armors are panicking.

『CAPTAIIIN!』

『Wasn't that guy a knight who refuse to kill!?』

The enemies pointed their rifle to me. In respond I strongly gripped the control stick.

—What do you mean refusing to kill.

I persisted in not killing because the situation at the field trip was still manageable for me somehow.

If you guys attacked until the capital—I can't keep persisting in not killing anymore.

『It's you guys who cornered me until this far. Don't think bad of me.』

I dodged the bullets, and even if they hit they got deflected by Arroganz's armor.

I equipped the left hand with battle axe deeply cut into an armor that I passed by.

I kicked away another armor that drew near before readying my rifle and aimed at the engine part of an airship that is descending to the capital.

When I pulled the trigger, the bullet penetrated the airship—a bit later fire blew out from the airship.

The soldiers of the principality are running around in confusion at the sky.

I'm watching that from the monitor.

「It's the worst. This is really the worst. If only you guys don't come, I wouldn't need to do something like this!」

『Master wouldn't need to fight if you ran away though?』

「I'm fighting because I'll feel even worse doing that! I hate the kingdom but, I hate the principality even more! Rather than this worrying about marriage would still be better!」

I pushed down my urge to vomit and piloted Arroganz. Then the enemies around me converged on me.

My finger on the trigger is trembling.

Armors are coming toward Arroganz.

『Stop him!』

『This fiend!』

『Don't challenge the fiendish knight alone! Attack all at once!』

It seems fiend and fiendish knight are my nicknames. —What do you mean fiend.

The fiend is—you guys, for making me do something like this.

「You bastards, don't attack me just because of unjustified resentment!」

I destroyed another one and aimed my rifle to an airship.

.

Part 4

The sky of the capital became a battlefield.

Julius was running through a corridor in the palace.

「Jilk!」

He found Jilk wearing a pilot suit.

「Your highness, you are safe!」

Jilk ran toward Julius. Julius looked up outside the window while making a vexed expression.

「What the hell the principality is thinking? What is their reason attacking the capital at this point with a detached force?」

The principality army came attacking by themselves without bringing monsters with them. Julius thought of that as strange. In respond Jilk talked about his thought.

「Perhaps they are trying to take back her highness Heltrude—and the magic flute?」

Julius hit the wall with his right hand. He didn't even try to hide his irritation.

「What is Bartfalt doing!？」

「He is going out to intercept them. Your highness, please withdraw.」

「Don't be stupid. I'm going out too.」

While they were doing that, Mylene and Hertrude—and teacher appeared with royal guards protecting them.

Mylene told Julius with a stern tone.

「You're not allowed.」

「Mother?」

Julius turned around and requested Mylene to be allowed to sortie out.

He was unable to watch quietly in this situation.

「I'll also sortie out. Mother and everyone should evacuate right away.」

「Julius, you don't have the strength to fight. Also, your duty is to survive.」

「Jilk is going to fight! Are you telling me to run away by myself!？」

「Yes, that's right. The only thing you can do is to run away.」

「I'm not asking you to give me an airship. If you only give me an armor—」

「Julius, there is no one to prepare an armor for your sake.」

「Then isn't it the same with Jilk!？」

Jilk too should not own an armor just like him.

「I requested my house to prepare an armor for me. The other three are also the same. Your highness, please leave the rest to us.」

Julius powerlessly shook his head hearing Jilk telling him that.

「Why? Why are you four betraying me!? We spoke about us cooperating with each other. Were those words a lie? We said that we will protect Marie together!」

Mylene stopped Julius when he condemned Jilk who was looking down.

「Julius, there is no more armor or airship in the palace. You don't have the strength to fight. You should obediently evacuate together with us here.」

There was no armor for Julius to use because all the armors and airships in the possession of the palace were dispatched.

But, Julius recalled one thing.

「There is! The airship of the duke should still have left over armor. I heard that they are recruiting knights. If I head there immediately—」

「—Do you remember what you did to Redgrave House? The duke is not your backer anymore. Jilk, the enemy army is descending. Be quick if you're going to sortie.」

「Yes! My queen, and then your highness—I'm off.」

When Mylene said 「May the fortune of war be with you」 and saw him off, Julius ran away from that place.

.

Part 5

The inside of the palace was in chaos.

Ange was running while pulling Livia's hand.

Livia was looking anxious seeing outside the window.

「For them to approach the capital undetected」

「The noise of the communication devices is worse than usual. If Luxion couldn't detect them then it would be hopeless for us. In any case, we have to go to the royal family's ship.」

Ange turned her gaze to outside the window and saw Partner's figure.

It was protecting the sky of the capital by itself.

(Where is that Leon right now?)

Leon vanished after the two of them were recognized by the royal family's ship.

When they asked around, it seemed he was feeling dejected. After that the two of them also became busy due to being chosen by the ship and in the end they couldn't meet Leon.

Livia looked down.

「Have Leon-san become fed up with us seeing us getting carried away like that?」

「I, I don't think that's the case but—no, certainly it was our bad. But, I never thought that he would be gone without even giving us any chance to apologize.」

After that, the robots that Luxion dispatched arrived and started repairing the royal family's ship.

They pried open the door and entered inside before starting the repair. It caused a huge ruckus.

They could hear the sounds of bombardment and explosion continuing without pause from the sky of the capital.

(Both father and brother aren't here. The timing is too bad.)

Airships that sallied out to protect the sky of the palace showed themselves.

Three of the ships were airships that were left behind by the duke to protect Ange.

They were prepared in order to take Ange away to escape when push came to shove.

Julius appeared in front of Ange and Olivia breathing hard with heaving shoulders.

Ange was looking outside the window and only noticed him when he was already close.

「Your highness, what are you doing at this kind of place!? Please escape quickly.」

Ange proposed for him to hurry and evacuate, in respond Julius bowed his head.

「Angelica, I have a request. I want to borrow the military asset you have—the fleet of the duke.」

Livia couldn't keep up with the situation. She was only looking in bewilderment.

Ange was surprised for a moment but she immediately turned calm and shook her head.

「They are my guards but not my subordinates. The one who can command them is only father or brother—or perhaps Leon. I cannot abide by your request.」

Frustration appeared in Julius's face, even so he kept making his request.

「Then, it's fine even if it's just a single armor. I don't want to be a coward.」

Julius bowed his head, saying that he didn't want to run away from the battlefield. Ange strongly denied his words.

「You must not. Your highness, please evacuate together with us.」

Julius lifted up his face in respond to Ange's words.

「—Do you hate me for betraying your feeling? That's why you won't lend me your strength right?」

Ange noticed from hearing Julius's words.

(I wonder why—I don't feel any hatred or frustration anymore.)

Her worry toward Leon was stronger than her wish for revenge.

At the same time, she wanted to see Leon's face quickly.

「If you asked my just a little while ago, it's the truth that I hated your highness. But, now I'm—in love with Leon. I don't hold any resentment for your highness.」

When Ange said that with a smile, Julius was captivated by her face.

He was going to say something, but the knights of the duke found them and ran toward them.

「My lady, so you're here!」

Ange immediately ordered them.

「We will head to the underground from here. Bring his highness together with us too.」

「Yes-!」

The knights surrounded Julius, and then they started evacuating toward the underground hangar.

Livia gripped Ange's hand.

「Are you alright? That, err—」

「Don't mind it. I'm alright. It feels like I'm set free from many things.」

Ange said that with a smile. Julius looked down seeing that.

Livia looked at Julius and asked.

「What's wrong?」

Julius smiled in self-derision.

「This is my first time seeing Angelica smiling like that. —That's all.」

Ange could hear those words of Julius, but she didn't even pay any heed to it and worried about Leon.

(Leon, come back no matter what.)

.

Part 6

The principality's airship.

There was Garrett's figure in the bridge.

「You're getting in the way again, fiendish knight! Even though I volunteered to lead the surprise attack force because I thought you absolutely wouldn't appear!」

He thought that Leon wouldn't appear because he was imprisoned by the kingdom, so he was flustered by Arroganz's attack.

He heard that both Partner and Arroganz could only be moved by Leon.

Garrett immediately judged that in that case it was Leon riding them.

「Even though we have to recover the magic flute before the main force arrive!」

The main force was moving together with the gigantic monster that was said to be the guardian deity of the sky.

The spot where the monster appeared was far from the capital and there was also the flaw of the slow traveling speed of the guarding deity, so the main force still hadn't arrived in the capital.

「That magic flute is a precious item to summon the guardian deity of earth. We cannot lose—」

It wasn't Hertrude but the magic flute that Garrett wanted to recover.

It was a treasure of the principality. It would affect his future if it stayed lost.

Because of that he forcibly said 「We will rescue Hertrude」 and borrowed thirty ships from Hertrauda to launch a surprise attack at the capital.

A nearby officer reported to Garrett.

「Count, ten ships are already sunk. The armors are also getting shot down one after another.」

「I know that just from looking! That fiendish knight, giving up his policy of non killing like this, he has no pride as knight! At this rate if that guy come here, I—I, ca, cannot die in this kind of place!」

Garrett immediately decided to retreat, but it was already too late.

The airship's bridge—Arroganz appeared in front of it.

A voice came from the armor.

『So this is the flagship.』

Garrett covered his face with both hands in front of the gun muzzle aimed his way.

Arroganz's container opened and the missiles stored there were fired toward the airship.

「IN THIS KIND OF PLACEEEEE！」

Garrett's consciousness cut off the moment Arroganz pulled the trigger.

.

Part 7

At one of the evacuation sites of the capital.

Clarice was the one protecting the people who were trying to board the airships there.

She was giving instruction to board the airship.

She was helping the refugees boarding into the airships owned by Atlee House to escape from the capital.

「Protect the refugees no matter what!」

They were taking in the refugees in a hurry, but the principality army was pushing on fiercely.

The knights and soldiers were building barricade on the ground and fighting back, but they were getting pushed back.

Students riding air bike were battling the principality's air bike force in the air. Both the ground and the sky were noisy.

The armors protecting Clarice on the ground could be seen getting destroyed by the armors of the principality.

Clarice considered surrendering, but the enemy mercilessly launched attack at the airships.

She used a megaphone in panic to inform the opponent but—.

「Wait, these ships aren't warship! There are refugees inside!」

『It doesn't matter even if they're refugees. Die to make up for your sins you fiends of the kingdom.』

Clarice gritted her teeth in frustration at the enemy's voice.

「All of you, are also the same acting violently as you please!」

Then one armor—appeared in front of the bridge.

It swung the axe it was holding and dealt a gash at the ceiling.

The armor then forcefully widened the gash and entered inside. Then a vulgar laughter came from it.

『There's a woman here! What's more she is a noble woman!』

Clarice broke out in a cold sweat from the bad premonition she got.

Because she knew what would happen to woman who was captured in battlefield, her body was trembling from imagining the same happening to her after this.

The armor reached out toward Clarice. The nearby crews were firing their rifle, even then the armor's plating deflected the bullets.

『There is no way that kind of peashooter will work. Atone for your sins with that body of yours!』

The moment the armor's hand almost reached Clarice, the armor got torn away from the bridge violently.

There was Arroganz's figure there.

It pointed the rifle its right hand was holding toward the enemy army and pulled the trigger.

The bullet pierced the armor's stomach part and the enemy's movement stopped, then a voice came from the armor that Arroganz held up in its grip.

It was struggling fiercely though it was unable to get away from Arroganz even then.

『Let go! You—』

Shockwave was unleashed from Arroganz's left hand. The armor's pilot became quiet then.

The armor was tossed away and Arroganz immediately left toward the next battlefield. Clarice saw it off before letting out a small sigh. The armor that was tossed away fell on the ground.

The armor got its stomach shot through and became unmoving—that way of fighting that wasn't thinking of holding back made Clarice saw through how Leon was forcing himself.

「Leon-kun—so you have resolved yourself.」

And then she whispered with a worried look.

.

Part 8

「My lady Deirdre, please escape!」

Refugees were flooding into the mansion of Roseblade House in the capital.

Knights were riding armor and fighting in the sky while airships were firing cannons at each other.

The airships that were shot down fell onto the capital. Fires and smokes were rising everywhere.

Deidre declared to the knights guarding her.

「You are telling this me to run away? If I run away here, I won't be able to show my face toward Otou-sama and Onii-sama who are fighting to protect our territory.」

「My lady isn't a knight! There is no one who will condemn you even if you run away!」

The knights became desperate, but Deidre ignored them and gave an order.

「Send out the airships of our house! It doesn't matter what kind of airship it is. Evacuate the citizens immediately.」

「My lady will also board that airship won't you!?」

「Yes, I'll board it. —The last airship that is.」

「MY LADY YOU IDIOOOTT!」

The knight cried while running away to convey Deirdre's order.

The showy armors of Roseblade House that were protecting the sky above the mansion were heading away because some enemies were approaching from there.

A part of the armors of the principality army were hitting the mansions of the nobles thoroughly.

A principality's armor broke through the guard armors and landed on the mansion's garden.

The refugees ran around scattering like baby spider. Deirdre was enraged.

The principality's armor pointed its weapon to the refugees.

「That's not something a knight will do!」

「What are you doing my lady!?」

The knights ran toward Deirdre to allow her to escape.

The principality knight retorted back.

『You have no right to say that to us! The kingdom will sink anyway. Even if I kill you all now, that only means that you die earlier than the others!』

The principality's armor pointed its gun muzzle at Deirdre.

『Beg for your life!』

Deirdre was scared and became unable to move, but she acted courageously.

「Begging for one's life doesn't suit a daughter of Roseblade House. You plan to kill me anyway right? Then do it already!」

「My lady, please don't provoke the enemy!」

The principality's armor was enraged by Deirdre's stubborn attitude and about to pull the trigger—he was shot through from right above.

The principality's armor collapsed powerlessly.

When Deirdre looked up to the sky, the guard armors were rushing toward her position—behind them an armor with a container on its back were leaving away.

「Oh, not even giving me a greeting is he? What a detestable person.」

The guardian knight stroked his chest in relieve while saying.

「My lady, please don't put a brave front while your legs are shaking. Come on, let's evacuate quickly.」

「Wa, wait a second! —I can't move.」

The guardian knight let out a long sigh, then he lent Deirdre his shoulder and led her into the mansion.

.

Part 9

Inside the cockpit.

I puked into the vomit bag for who knew how many times.

The piercing smell of gastric juice was disgusting.

The descending principality army was rampaging inside the capital.

「Just surrender. Why are you guys rampaging? The battle is decided already.」

He crushed the flagship.

Even though he had beaten their leader, they still continued their opposition.

『They must think that they will be killed anyway even if they surrender.』

A part of principality army surrendered, but the kingdom army didn't accept it and shot them dead.

Smokes are rising from everywhere in the capital due to the urban warfare.

The airships and armors of the principality fell down and destroyed the buildings, turning the surrounding into a sea of fire.

「We will need to send rescue party after taking care of this. Those who won't obey me still need to work.」

『Even they will work if it's for the sake of their birthplace.』

I wiped my mouth and then looked around.

「Where is the next battlefield?」

I asked Luxion, but it seemed the time has come.

『—Master, looks like it's time. From here I can only give the bare minimum support.』

His voice was like usual but it sounded apologetic.

「I see. Work hard there.」

『Is it really alright?』

「I don't mind so just go. I can only ask this to you anyway.」

Luxion looked at me with his single eye, and then he nodded once and moved his eye.

『The repair of royal family's ship is finished. I attached a different AI than me for support. Please consult that AI in case something happen.』

「A different AI than you?」

『Yes. Also, remember to not be careless—if it's hopeless
re—tre—at—』

The electronic sound is mixed with noise before he could finish speaking. And then Luxion's voice changed slightly different from usual.

Even though it should be the same electronic voice, it sounded like a different person to me.

『The link with the main body is cut off.』

I felt slightly uneasy hearing the mechanical tone, even so I placed my arm back on the control stick.

「—I'm counting on you, partner.」

.

Part 10

Luxion was between the floating land and the sea.

The sunlight was blocked by the land. The limited space was dark.

The pillar of water extending from the sea was the seawater that the land was drawing up.

Other than that, there were also several arms that looked like tentacle piercing the land from the sea.

A large human face protruded out from the sea surface.

That monster that looked like an island was the gigantic monster that was called the guardian deity of the sea.

Airship—spaceship Luxion's size was more than 700 meters.

Even that Luxion looked small compared to this monster.

『What an extremely big monster.』

Luxion slipped below the land alone and stayed in the front of the monster that was called the guardian deity of the sea. He was calm.

『Well, there is no problem at all with defeating it continuously.』

When Luxion's main cannon unleashed light, the arms that were stabbing into the land were all severed and changed into black smoke.

When the eyes of the large face saw Luxion, tentacles came out one after another from the sea and entangled around Luxion.

『Don't touch me.』

After saying that, laser gun muzzle appeared from the grey colored hull one after another.

The lasers that were fired from the gun muzzles cleared away the tentacles.

Then a firing muzzle for missile showed up from the hull. It fired a single missile.

It caused a large explosion when hitting that blew away the gigantic monster.

The black smoke blowing out from the monster spread out to cover the surrounding view.

『It's gradually regenerating. So master's information isn't wrong.』

When tentacles appeared from the sea surface once more, he shot through them one after another.

The sea surface billowed in a grand scale when the monster that was like a squid with human face showed its figure in front of Luxion.

Seeing that figure Luxion—shot through it with his main cannon and it changed into black smoke once more.

『It doesn't look like that you will be able to achieve your objective as long as I'm here.』

The problem was the other one—the guardian deity of the sky. He was unable to face that one.

He could only leave that one to Leon and Partner.

He repeated his attack on the enemy that seemed to be regenerating or perhaps resurrecting. Luxion was sealing the enemy's movement completely.

『Certainly I won't lose, but it's also impossible to win. The problem is the other monster at the opposite side—master's survivability rate is going down more than expected.』

Luxion started improving Schwert—Leon's air bike in the factory inside him.

『Schwert, you shall be born again for master's sake.』

Luxion was facing the gigantic monster at the space between the land and sea.

Chapter 9: Devil

Part 1

The main force of principality army that was moving together with the sky guardian.

Hertrauda was in front of an old knight.

That old knight's right arm was covered with something black. He was Bandel, the former black knight.

Hertrauda addressed Bandel who was kneeling in front of her with a cold tone.

「I should have told you that I can't give you permission to sally out.」

Bandel didn't open his mouth. An influential retainer staying near Hertrauda explained the reason of this refusal.

「Bandel-dono, if you are after the kingdom then we the main force of principality is the same. We wish for Bandel-dono to fight together with us there.」

Hertrauda narrowed her eyes.

(The magic right arm—in the end Bandel is the only one who can use it.)

More than ten people became sacrifice in order to choose a knight who could use the magic right arm.

In the end, Bandel was the only one who survived having the magic right arm attached on him.

There was an incision on Bandel's black right arm. An eye appeared from there and looked around.

The raw naked eye turned its gaze toward Hertrauda and stayed unmoving.

「My apologies. I'm still unable to control it perfectly. Your highness Hertrauda, I beg you to give me the permission to rescue your elder sister.」

「The rescue force is already departing. Do you intend to run away from your rematch with the fiendish knight?」

The principality believed that the kingdom would charge toward this main force to decide the battle.

There was no way they would be able to face the guardian deity of the sky.

Similar with how the communication in the kingdom was in a bad condition, the principality army was also in the same state.

They were on guard, but they were unable to detect when the kingdom army would come at this situation.

The greatest danger was if Leon came out to the battlefield.

If that happened, Bandel was the only one who could possibly stop him.

They wanted him to remain behind for the protection of the main force.

「The princess can be rescued with certainty if I'm the one doing it.」

Hertrauda laughed slightly at Bandel's words.

「You're Ane-ueelder sister's favorite after all. Well, we have sent out the rescue force. Perhaps it'll be better if there is someone to ascertain their result.」

Even though the influential retainer opposed it, Hertrauda didn't respond to him.

Bandel stood up.

「Then, I will depart immediately.」

「I shall prepare a fast airship for you.」

「There is no need. This body—no, this one armor will be enough. An airship will only slow me down.」

Bandel said that and left the room. Seeing his back, the influential retainer wiped his cold sweat that trickled out from fear.

His gaze was directed toward Bandel's right arm.

The right arm that changed color to black looked ominous. In addition Bandel's eyes were also bloodshot.

「So that's a part of Lost Item 【Magic Equipment】. It looks like a monster.」

Hertrauda leaned on her chair's back.

「It's said to grant its user immense strength in exchange of their life, but I never imagined that the day I see it with my own eyes will come.」

「I wonder if he'll be able to win against the fiendish knight.」

「He will win. Even if Bandel cannot win, we won't lose.」

Hertrauda closed her eyes.

(Onee-sama, please be safe. Bandel is coming to pick you up.)

.

Part 2

The sky of the capital.

The battle is over. Airships are gradually gathering.

The figure of my friends who boarded their airship from their territory and returned here are on the deck of Partner.

Raymond is dumbfounded seeing the capital.

「—The city is crumbling.」

「There was nothing that could be done with them attacking from the sky.」

「Can we really win? There is this much destruction just from the attack of 30 ships.」

I cheered up my friends who are looking uneasy.

「Don't think that I'm fighting without even any secret plan. I've prepared properly. Look.」

Ahead of my gaze—a white and radiant airship is floating up from underground.

The royal family's ship.

It's troublesome to keep calling it that so Luxion gave it a name.

That name is Weiss—according to Luxion, it seems that the name has the connotation with white or something similar.

That name really sounded suitable. And also, I wish that he will tell me the meaning of the name Arroganz already.

Surely it has a meaning that suited me.

「That airship is a secret weapon?」

「It's smaller than Partner though.」

「Does it has some kind of amazing weapon loaded?」

My friends are showing interest, but they complained a lot that it's smaller than Partner.

The specs of the airship itself aren't as amazing as Partner.

But, Livia and Ange are on board inside it.

If the two of them who has confirmed their love to each other are on board, then that airship should display an amazing power without fail.

—I'm feeling complicated though.

To think that the two of them are in love with each other—what about my standing with them now?

Daniel is worried about me.

「Your complexion look bad. Are you alright?」

「I'm alright. More importantly, after you finished resupplying I'll explain about—」

While we're having that talk, something is flying toward the palace.

It went through a wall and smoke is rising from there.

I asked Luxion for confirmation in panic.

「What happened!？」

『Currently confirming.』

The reaction is slower than usual. And his tone made me thought that this isn't Luxion.

「Prepare Arroganz. I'm going out.」

『It's in the middle of resupply and maintenance. Please wait for a while.』

Furthermore this guy also isn't flexible.

When I looked at the palace, it's in commotion for some reason.

.

Part 3

It was Bandel who flew into the palace.

His left hand was holding the magic flute that was kept under heavy security in the treasure warehouse, while his right hand was holding his great sword that was kept here—a great sword for use of armor that was made from special metal called adamantis.

The corner of his lips rose seeing the great sword that was bigger than his body.

「Partner, I came to pick you up. Though you're secondary after the princess.」

He said that and placed it on his shoulder. There the knights of the kingdom stood on his way in front of the door.

「Who's there!？」

「Throw away your weapon and surrender!」

「Don't waste time, shoot!」

Bandel could see the kingdom's armors floating at the other side of the hole in the wall.

Even when the knights opened fire, something unseen protected Bandel and the bullets were deflected.

Several eyes appeared from the right arm. They rolled around restlessly observing the surrounding.

The knights were surprised seeing that.

「Mo, monster—don't stop shooting!」

The armors also entered inside the palace to pin down Bandel.

But, Bandel rushed at the armors without wearing armor himself. Without pause he swung around the great sword with one hand.

The armors were bisected. The knights were severed to pieces.

The battle was over in an instant. Bandel looked down on the knights.

「Worthless fools. Now then, I have to search for the princess.」

The eyes of the right arm rolled around restlessly. And then all of them fixed their gaze to a single place.

「I see, over there.」

Bandel started moving. He advanced while defeating the knights and soldiers on his way. He arrived until the room where Hertrude was apprehended.

He opened the door roughly. Hertrude was there safe and sound.

「Princess!」

All the eyes on the right arm closed.

「Bandel? Why are you here? Even though I heard that the principality army has lost.」

The principality army that came attacking was defeated.

Bandel too was vexed by that.

「All of them are pathetic. After all they were unable to save princess and lost against the cowards of the kingdom. Now, let's go back together with me. Her highness Hertrauda is also waiting.」

「Rauda is?」

Hertrude received the magic flute from Bandel, then she witnessed an unbelievable sight.

「Princess, please step back for a bit.」

The right arm suddenly swelled. It then swallowed Bandel and turned into the shape of an armor.

That figure—was similar in some respect to Arroganz.

But, the thorny and ominous shape looked like living thing instead of machine. It had wings like a bat and also reptilian tail with thorns on it.

It didn't give out mechanical sound, but a pulsing sound like heartbeat.

「Bandel, don't tell me you—that magic right arm」

Bandel was using the thorny black armor's right arm that Hertrude sent to the principality.

Hertrude who knew what that meant shed tears.

Bandel was slightly happy about that.

(Please don't shed tears for me, princess.)

「Why are you using this kind of thing!?」

The voice of Bandel who became one with the armor sounded stifled.

『Princess—this is the last duty of this senile old fool. Now, please get on.』

「Even though, everything will be taken care of if only I can use this magic flute here.」

Hertrude clutched the magic flute tightly with both her hands and looked down, but Bandel hurriedly stopped her.

『You must not! Her highness Hertrauda already summoned the guardian deities. Your highness Hertrude is the only hope for the principality right now.』

—Hertrude who knew the meaning of summoning the guardian deity shed a trickle of tear and nodded.

Bandel offered his left hand. Hertrude got on it and they flew out of the palace.

Many armors were lying in wait there but,

『Small fries of the kingdom! All of you aren't my match. Bring out the fiendish knight!』

He flew in the sky with a posture that protected Hertrude while destroying the armors of the kingdom with the great sword in his right hand on his way to escape.

Bandel came across Partner, but he ignored it for now because Hertrude was in his left arm.

Right now his priority was to send Hertrude to the main force.

He could also see Leon on the deck, but the match was postponed for now.

『Fiendish knight huh! I have taken back the princess.』

Bandel laughed while watching Leon's vexed face.

『I'll settle my duel with you soon.』

Bandel said that and escaped. The kingdom army didn't send out any pursuer.

.

Part 4

Both Hertrude-san and also the magic flute were stolen.

Or rather, it feels like I have seen that black armor that was rampaging somewhere.

I can't recall where did I see it, but it's useless to keep thinking about it.

My head is slapped by brother while I'm thinking with folded arms.

『Don't sleep!』

『Ouch. I'm not sleeping.』

I pressed my head while looking at the many airships floating around Partner.

My friends who are bound with contract came as reinforcement.

The airships of the kingdom army can also be seen at the sky of the capital.

The airships of the feudal lords who hastened here—nearly 200 ships are floating in lines.

Father looked nervous at that sight.

「I didn't hear that Leon is the one commanding this fleet. Just what in the world happened that it became like that?」

From father's perspective, his son had become the supreme commander when he came running. It can't be helped that he's shocked.

「I became the commander because of mood and momentum.」

「No way that's true! Normally this is impossible!」

Brother made a face of resignation and asked me.

「And, how are we going to win against the principality's army? I saw it from afar but, is it really possible to defeat a stupidly huge monster like that?」

I looked at the white ship—Weiss that was floating at the middle of the fleet.

「My principle is to not fight an unwinnable battle. I've prepared a trump card properly.」

Father sent me a doubting gaze.

「You mean Angelica-sama and Olivia-chan? You're sending those two to the battlefield? That's not good. That's obviously not good. You love those two right?」

—Don't say anymore than that.

「Those two are necessary no matter what.」

Father couldn't accept it. Even so I asserted that it's necessary, so he gave up.

「Protect them no matter what. —You will regret it for your whole life if they die here.」

I understand that even without getting told that.

Brother is also worried for me, so I smiled.

「I get it.」

Someone came interrupting our family conversation. It's Marie shaking her head.

「Wait. Why am I in this ship?」

「That's obvious. Partner is going to be in the lead and charge at the enemy. You are a substitute barrier, do your job properly.」

I also sto—borrowed the saint equipments from the reluctant temple forcefully.

I'll have this fellow to work.

Brother and father tilted their head.

「Who is this person? It feels like I have seen her somewhere. Father, do you know her?」

「I don't know her. Leon, who is this girl?」

「This girl? It's her holiness the saint. I'm thinking to make her the shield when we charged.」

The two of them looked at me and made a face that seemed to say 「No way~」.

「Using a girl as a shield, I'm ashamed as your father.」

「Shut up. My principle is to use anything that I can use even if it's my parents. Naturally I'll make this fellow to work hard like a slave too.」

「You're the worst!」

I poked at Marie's head, then I sent her a serious gaze.

「Do your job even if it kill you. If you do that then I'll help to have your life spared.」

Marie held her head with tearful eyes.

「It'll be meaningless if I die here!」

「I don't give a damn about that! Take responsibility at any cost. I'll kill you if you run away. I'll chase you until the end of the world and kill you.」

Marie looked down, but I cannot think of any other way than this to save her life.

She will die if we lose. Even if we win—this girl is a heinous criminal who pretended to be the saint.

The only way is to make her fight and risk her life and then holding hope that she would be given a pardon because of that.

「Marie, don't look so anxious.」

Armors with really showy colors landed down on the deck.

I wanted to click my tongue seeing the red colored armor.

「You guys—what are you doing here?」

Red, blue, purple, green—the four pilots came down from the armors and gathered around Marie.

「This Greg Fou Seberg is going to protect you.」

Marie cried seeing the confident Greg.

「You, you all—」

「I'll be troubled if you forget about me.」

Chris took off his glasses and smiled at Marie.

「It will be fine as long as we're here.」

Brad brushed back his front hair and took a pose. Then Jilk held out his hand toward Marie.

「Marie-san, this time we will be by your side. You aren't alone.」

「Everyone—I, I!」

And then a single armor landed down on Partner's deck, interrupting Marie's words.

「Allow me to also join you!」

It was a radiant white armor with blue mantel swaying from the wind.

I looked up and thought.

「—Go back.」

The chest armoring opened and a masked knight came out from there.

It's his highness Julius no matter how I saw it.

He is wearing a skin tight pilot suit, a mask, and also a mantle.

Just what are you coming here for? Stop with that idiotic appearance. It's embarrassing.

However,

「Who is he?」

Jilk who should be his highness Julius's foster brother and best friend is genuinely surprised. No, you're lying right? You're just reading the mood and pretend to not know aren't you?

Greg stepped in front of Marie and covered her.

His wariness was shown openly.

「Masked bastard, what are you coming here for!？」

—Eh?

I looked around. Everyone is genuinely looking surprised and wary.

Father and brother are dumbfounded because they can't keep up with the development.

Chris unsheathed his sword.

「Marie, step back.」

「Eh? But, that's Juli—」

Brad manifested flame in both his hands and started preparing to fight anytime.

What's with you guys! That's his highness Julius no matter how you look at him!

His highness Julius who is wearing mask jumped down to in front of us.

While the four are on their guard, he splendidly landed and slowly stood up—and introduced himself.

「It seems everyone is concerned about my identity. Let's see—I ask everyone to call me the masked knight.」

「Masked knight?」

Jilk aimed the muzzle of his handgun in surprise at his highness Julius who introduced himself as masked knight. It made me wanted to cry for real.

「That's right. I'm moved by everyone's spirit. Please allow me to help to the best of my meager ability—wha, what're you doing! Viscount Bartfalt, can you let go of me!」

「Shut up and come, this stupid bastard.」

My arm wrapped around the masked knight's neck and I dragged him away from everyone. The two of us moved behind a cover.

When my hand reached to the mask, his highness Julius held the mask in place with both hands.

「What are coming here for, your highness?」

「N, no! I'm not a noble personage like his highness Julius. I can't expose my face because there is a reason, but I come to join this battle as a knight. —I'm telling you I'm not his highness Julius.」

—Is he perhaps, making fun of me?

「Never mind that just go back.」

「Hold on! Viscount Bartfalt, you shouldn't refuse any help no matter how little it is at this kind of time!」

「I can't use a suspicious fellow with unknown origin. Come on, go home.」

「Wa, wait a second! I, it can't be helped.」

His highness Julius said that and took off his mask, exposing his face to me.

「—I am, Julius.」

「No, I know that already. I realized from the start.」

「What!? My disguise should be perfect.」

「I now get it that you're making fun of me.」

「Got it. Then I shall tell the truth to you alone. About this battle, I also want to participate in it.」

「The exit is over there.」

When I pointed at the exit, this stupid bastard clung on me.

「Please! I want to fight together with everyone.」

「If you die it will become my responsibility!」

「That's why I came wearing mask!」

So what if you're wearing a mask?

「Go back!」

「No way!」

This guy, even if I sent him back like this, won't he just come along secretly and die somewhere? This guy is too dangerous now that he have become this useless prince.

Just what should I do?

When I turned my gaze away, Weiss suddenly entered my sight.

—Yosh, then let's gather the troublesome bunch in one place together.

It'll be fine if I put him in Weiss as Livia and Ange's guards.

The protection there is also the heaviest, so his survival rate will be high there.

But, if I tell him to stay at the rear, this guy will undoubtedly grumble out complains continuously.

「—Are you serious?」

「Of course.」

「Then, I'll put you in the most demanding place.」

「You mean as vanguard? Fuh, so you get it after all, Bartfalt.」

I want to punch this guy's happy face, but right now is the time to endure.

「Don't be stupid. The cornerstone of our strategy this time is Weiss—the royal family's ship. In order to defeat that stupidly huge monster, we will use the royal family's ship. The enemy will focus their attack there.」

His highness Julius's expression became serious.

If I put Marie there too, then he surely will protect that place to the death.

「I'll place Marie there too. Enemies will march there and it will be the most dangerous place. Do you have the resolve for that?」

His highness Julius put on his mask while tugging a smile on his lips.

「You can leave it to me, lord supreme commander.」

—It really helps that you're stupid.

I'll have to place Marie behind too with this, but let's endure it if I can send the quintet behind too with this.

「Yosh, go to Weiss.」

「Yeah, I'll answer your expectation to me. —By the way, I jumped down by impulse but, where should I climb from to get to the armor?」

The masked knight looked up at his armor and thought how to climb up there.

—This is too idiotic.

.

Part 5

Weiss's bridge.

Livia and Ange were doubting their eyes. 「Err—Luk-kun?」

Floating there was a sphere with different coloring that Luxion with its white body and blue eye.

Its voice was also an electronic voice that was closer to a woman, so it was different from Luxion.

『Unfortunately you're wrong. I am what you call a familiar, ordered to control this airship.』

Ange was surprised.

『You can do something like that?』

『This ship's type is really old, but it's possible after it got repaired. With me here this ship doesn't even need any crew.』

There were robots moving Weiss just like Partner.

Riding inside it were Livia and Ange—and then the guards.

Livia touched the familiar that was similar with Luxion.

『What's your name?』

『That's troubling. It'll be wearisome to use my serial number here so—please call me Creare.』

『Creare-chan?』

『You can call me in any way you like. Even so, that sourpuss Luxion really likes the two of you. He asked me to protect the two of you properly.』

Ange looked down. Creare made a gesture that slightly looked like she was tilting her head in confusion.

『What's the matter, Angelica?』

『—Can't we meet Leon? We won't be able to convey our feeling to him if we depart like this.』

『Feeling toward master? —Got it. I'll connect you to him.』

『Eh?』

After Creare said that, an image was projected to empty air.

Leon's figure was there.

Glimpses of masked man could be seen but, Livia and Ange didn't pay that any mind.

「Leon-san!」

「Leon, you—that!」

『Mu? What's this?』

The man who wore a mask pushed Leon aside and covered the projection fully with his mask.

The two loudly asked the masked man to step aside.

「You strange person, please step aside from there!」

「What an appearance. What's with that strange mask and mantle? In addition a skintight full body suit? Are you a pervert? It doesn't matter, bring Leon forward already!」

The dejected masked man vanished from the screen. Leon was watching him with a really complicated expression.

Then seeing the two of them, he cleared his throat. He made an awkward face.

『Ee~aa~—what is it?』

Livia put her hands on her chest and spoke.

「Leon-san, we need to talk!」

『I have a briefing after this, if you can keep it short then it's fine.』

Leon agreed to hear them out. Ange calmed her breathing.

「It's about the matter before. Actually, there is something that I have to tell you no matter—」

When she spoke until that point, it was Greg who cut in this time.

『Oi, where is that masked knight? We've got to check that guy's face—hm? Oo, what's this!?』

The screen was filled with Greg's face fully. Vein pulsed on Ange's forehead.

Jilk, Brad, and then Chris also came along after that.

Everyone waved their hand at Livia and Ange.

『This is amazing. We can see the other side's face and also hear their voice.』

『We're going over there too so wait for us.』

『Marie will also come so please make the preparation.』

They suddenly said that they would intrude into their place, in addition they were ordering them to prepare a welcoming for Marie.

Ange hit the image in anger.

「Step aside all of you! We have something to talk with Leon!」

Then a noise ran through the projection and the image vanished.

「Ah!」

Livia looked toward Creare. She shook her blue eye in respond.

『The communication is bad so it's impossible to hold it longer.』

「Wa, was it my fault?」

Ange was worried that the communication was cut off because she hit the image.

『It's simply because the communication is bad.』

Livia casted her eyes downward from being unable to talk with Leon. Ange held her hand.

『It's fine. We're going to tell him our feeling no matter what.』

『—Yes.』

Creare told the two who were like that with a teasing tone.

『Oh my, how passionate. As expected from a relationship that is said to be true love. But, it will be time for departure soon.』

Livia looked forward.

『What amazing sight.』

Two hundred airships started moving to settle the decisive battle against the principality.

『It's practically a mishmash group that cannot cooperate with each other. We managed to gather the number at least but, it'll really be a miracle if we can win like this.』

『Even a miracle will happen if it's Leon-san.』

『You're right. I'm expecting a lot from him.』

Creare added more explanation regarding the coming decisive battle.

『It looks like the battle will be held above a large lake. It's the place that is drawing up the sea water, so it's also connected with the underside of the land.』

Livia pressed her chest with her left hand.

「A battle above a lake.」

「That's right. Because that way it's possible to survive even if you fall.」

Because of that a lot of times an air battle would be held above a lake.

Livia also understood that in theory. But, her face didn't look like she could accept it.

「The water will be dirtied.」

The garbage that resulted from the war would fall to the lake and dirtied the water.

It would be a bother to the people who lived around it.

「The battle this time is do or die. It's too bad but we have no leeway to bother about it. When everything is over we will send manpower for the restoration work.」

A small airship came out from Partner that was moving to the forefront of the fleet. The ship approached Weiss.

The masked knight from before, Marie, and others were inside it.

.

Part 6

I become alone on the deck.

I gave instruction to Luxion's empty shell before facing forward.

A thick cloud is visible at far away—the battle with the principality's army will start in less than a day.

「We have a trump card at our side. Though I don't want to bring those two to the battlefield.」

I have a lot of regrets.

Shouldn't I be able to do things better?

For example, if I used Luxion to gather information, the story shouldn't deviate so much like this.

Perhaps I would also learn about the other princess of the principality and also the other magic flute.

If I did better, there also wouldn't be any need for me to become the supreme commander.

In the first place, this fleet is a mishmash group that can only charge forward.

Does it really need to be me? Isn't this something that other people can also do?

「—Ah」

At that time I recalled a nostalgic memory.

About that mask worn by his highness Julius, it was worn by a character that appeared in the game.

That character stood out quite much, but his identity was unknown till the end.

In the game that person wasn't his highness Julius.

The character behaved a bit too theatrical and relatively no good but I think he was a strong character.

However, it's nice that I recalled it, but it's an information that isn't particularly important.

「But, if that guy is the one wearing that mask」

The masked knight—the real one, who could it be?

.

Part 7

The palace.

Roland was searching the hidden room inside his room.

「No, not here! My transformation set isn't here! The key for my custom made armor is also not here. Who, who did this? Is it Mylene? This is that middle-aged woman's work without a doubt!」

That Mylene came to the room of the enraged Roland.

「Your majesty, have you seen Julius?」

Roland who got his hidden room seen turned around in panic.

「Julius you say!? He, he isn't here but—yo, you, aren't surprised?」

Even though Mylene saw Roland's hidden room, she didn't show any surprise.

「If it's this hidden room, I have known about it since a long time ago. Though I don't know as far as the inside of the room. More importantly it's Julius. I cannot find him anywhere.」

Roland was displeased.

「You know about this room you say? Fo, for my hidden room to be found out—rather than that, if it's Julius then I don't know where he is. Perhaps he is sulking and locking himself inside his room?」

「He isn't there, that's why I'm asking. That child is similar with you after all. I'm worried that perhaps he is doing something reckless.」

There Roland realized something.

「—Oi, does Julius also know about my hidden room?」

「Naturally. He reported it to me when he found it as a child.」

Hearing that Roland rushed out of his room in panic.

「What's the matter your majesty!?」

「It's Julius. That guy, there's no doubt it was him who took away my transformation set and armor!」

Mylene's expression paled.

「Why do you have something like that!?」

「It's romance!」

Chapter 10 – Livia’s Power

Part 1

Principality army flagship—Hertrauda’s private room.

There was the rescued Hertrude beside Hertrauda.

「Onee-sama, please don’t summon the guardian deity of the earth. The sky and the sea—with those two guardian deities, it will be easy enough for us to accomplish our objective.」

「I have pushed that painful role to you. If only I used the magic flute.」

Hertrauda shook her head.

「One of us has to shoulder that role. When Onee-sama failed, it was decided that I’ll be the next one heading to the kingdom.」

Hertrude clutched the magic flute tightly, and then tears flowed down.

In case the magic flute’s true power was displayed—the compensation that was demanded from that was the user’s “life”.

In exchange of the user’s life, they could employ a gigantic monster that was called guardian deity.

「Rauda, I became unable to understand. I wonder which side is actually in the wrong.」

Hertrauda didn’t have a clear answer for Hertrude’s question.

Because the answer for that question was already meaningless.

「Even if Queen Mylene’s words are the truth, we can’t possibly stop. We will sink the kingdom, take away the floating island that

make their land float—and the principality will obtain a new land. This is something necessary for the principality to become a truly great country.]

The reason for the principality to sink the kingdom was because they desired the floating stone that was making the kingdom's land to float.

If they could bring back that floating stone, they would be able to expand their territory.

The principality was unable to win with a frontal attack. To fight the kingdom and won, they needed a method that was at least this coercive.

「Are we in the right?」

「I cannot decide that. Because the only thing I can do is leave the rest to Onee-sama after everything is over.」

The parents of these sisters died in accident.

There were other people that could be categorized as royal family, but only these two would be able to impart things like oral tradition or teaching or the like to the next generation as the heir.

One of them needed to survive and led the country.

「—Onee-sama, how did you spend your time in the kingdom?」

There was only a little remaining time where Hertrude could speak with her sister.

That was why, she wanted to have a conversation that was as fun as possible.

「I was placed in a place called the academy. I enrolled there as an overseas student. It was a place that is more horrible than I imagined.」

Female students were taking slaves around with them and they were looking down on the male students. Even Hertrude had heard about it.

But, it was even more shocking to see it with her own eyes.

「Even that fiendish knight was bowing his head obsequiously to the female students there.」

「The fiendish knight who defeated Bandel? How did the kingdom end up like that? I heard that the principality is still the same like the era when we were still archduke though.」

「Indeed. It's a really strange country. They even go out adventuring in airship for woman's sake. I also went to a floating island with village of elves and saw a ruin.」

Hertrude talked about adventure story seeing Rauda's sparkling eyes.

The ancestor principality—the former archduke house was also an adventurer.

They held interest because they were raised hearing adventurer story since they were children.

Rauda was grinning cheerfully when Hertrude finished her story.

「So Onee-sama has gone to an adventure. I'm jealous. I, don't have any more time.」

「—Rauda, I'm sorry. I'm really sorry.」

Hertrude pitied her little sister, but the time had come.

A knight came reporting.

「Your highness Hertrauda! We have confirmed the kingdom army approaching!」

Rauda's expression changed instantly from a childish expression to a cold expression.

「I will be there immediately. —Onee-sama, please take care of the rest after I fall.」

The distance until the capital—the center of the continent wasn't far.

Everything would end when they arrived there.

Tears flowed from Hertrude's eyes even while she was smiling toward her sister.



「Leave it to me. Also, I too will stay at your side.」

「That's reassuring, Onee-sama.」

.

Part 2

I made Arroganz sat on the deck.

Inside the cockpit, I whistled to put on a brave front seeing the sight before my eyes.

「The impact is even more impressive compared to the game.」

The principality's fleet is right below the gigantic monster as though they are under its protection.

They're escorting the monster that is slowly approaching the capital.

『Target is entering the firing range.』

The stupidly huge monster has the shape of many eyes and many arms with cloud enveloping it. Several of its large eyes are directed at the kingdom army.

I'm launching a charge toward the principality army along with the kingdom army's airships that are following behind Partner.

The gigantic monster stretched one of its hands toward us.

『Target is approaching.』

「Ram it!」

Following my words, Luxion that has completely become an empty shell muttered 『Roger』 .

He didn't even say his usual abusive words. He only talked the minimum required word.

『Missiles are fired.』

Three missiles are fired from the missile firing pod of Partner.

They rammed straight onto the gigantic monster's hand and caused a large explosion, blowing away the large hand.

The large hand that could even hold Partner in its grip is blown away. It's changing into black smoke.

「Keep firing without rest!」

『Beginning bombardment.』

Partner's large cannon spouted fire. It caused a large explosion when hitting the gigantic monster.

Missiles are fired one after another, blowing away the arms.

Partner then changed the direction of its bow and accelerated.

『Change in enemy fleet's formation is confirmed.』

「Too slow!」

They must be starting to prepare to intercept us in panic after seeing the arm of their prided last boss blown away.

Perhaps the other side is also in a state of bad communication, because their movement is sluggish.

Following right behind Partner are the airships boarded by my family and friends.

At present their airships has the best specs among our force.

I made Arroganz stood up on the deck and readied its rifle.

I shot down the monsters flying around the fleet of the principality army. Thousands, tens of thousands of monsters—the airships other than Partner will be the one facing them.

Partner is busy with attacking the gigantic monster.

I can only leave the shot exchanges of fleet battle and monster extermination to my allied warships.

When the distance with the enemies is rapidly shrinking, my allies started their bombardment.

The monsters are shot through and changing into black smoke.

Cannon shells are fired one after another toward Partner, but there is no damage even if they hit.

The barrier that is deployed to protect the airship deflected all of them.

Airship with cannons lined up at the sides of the hull is the mainstream. The enemies that are bombarding us are showing their flank at me.

「Bite a hole into it.」

When Partner approached until within a stone's throw from the principality army, the allied warships right behind me fired their main cannon that is installed on their bow one after another.

Even when the warships of principality army deployed magical barrier around them, it got penetrated and the airships are sinking.

「How does the latest style cannon taste? Don't think you can block it with just that much!」

When the enemy ships are sinking, armors are flying out one after another next.

One airship with its flank facing us appeared in order to hinder Partner's advance.

The lined up cannons fired simultaneously, but Partner blocked them all.

「You won't stop us just with that much. Besides, ramming attack is also Partner's forte.」

Partner's bow charged at the flank of the enemy airship, then the enemy bent into the shape of “<”.

Partner kept advancing like that. The airship is decapitated into two and fell.

「The battle is ours now that we've come this close.」

I already penetrated until right below the gigantic monster.

In this position, the gigantic monster won't even be able to attack me—maybe!

The kingdom army's airships behind Partner deployed their armors and both armies plunged into a fierce melee.

「First stage is cleared with this.」

Several missiles are fired from Partner. The gigantic monster is blown away by explosions when they hit and changed into black smoke.

The black smoke whirled and got absorbed into the cloud, becoming even larger and blacker.

This battle happened early in the morning, but the bright sky got completely covered with thick black cloud.

The revived gigantic monster appeared from that black cloud.

Its many eyes are all looking at Partner.

「Its revival is faster than expected. We're going to continue attacking it like this and seal its movement.」

『—Enemy approaching.』

Principality armors are heading toward Arroganz.

『Found you, fiendish knight!』

「Fiend? Don't speak like you yourself aren't stepping off into the wrong path!」

You who came to kill me and me who are going to kill you after this are both birds of a feather.

I pointed my rifle and pulled the trigger. The enemy's stomach is shot through and the armor fell on the deck.

When I looked up, airships and armors are moving to surround Partner.

I pointed the rifle at the airship right above and pulled the trigger. It hit the engine part and caused fire to break out.

It's falling toward Partner, but Partner that is protected by a barrier isn't even scratched.

I can hear voices mixed with noises.

『Destroy him with armors!』

『You'll get all the promotion you'll want if you take him down!』

『GOT YOUEEEEEEU!』

I used the axe in my left hand to cut down an armor that approached.

The armor got gouged from its right shoulder until its stomach. I immediately realized the pilot is beyond help.

Luxion pointed out to me.

『Your reaction is delayed.』

『Well yeah!』

I swung my axe to the head of another armor. The axe dug until the armor's torso. I didn't pull it out and let go of the axe.

I shot the third armor with my rifle and placed a new weapon into my left hand.

『—I'm counting on you.』

I turned my gaze toward Weiss just once before looking up to the sky and flew. (TN: I used Vice for the name of the royal family's ship last chapter, but some readers pointed out that the right name should be Weiss which is German for white.)

.

Part 3

Weiss's bridge.

The kingdom army charged at the principality army, bringing the battle into a melee. The battle was fierce.

Ange who was watching that hugged the trembling Livia to support her.

『Livia, rest for a bit.』

Livia shook her head. Tears were spilling from her eyes. She was holding her head with both hands and breathing roughly.

「It's painful. Why is everyone fighting? Even though it's this painful—why」

Ange was troubled of how to answer.

「—I wonder why.」

She knew the answer.

Ange had learned the answer for that question before, but now that she had actually witnessed it with her own eyes, she didn't know if that answer was the right one.

Livia pressed her hands on her chest. Then Marie yelled.

「Hey! Enemies are gathering around this ship too!」

Ange rebuked loudly at Marie who was dressed in saint's attire.

「Be quiet!」

「Ye, yes!」

「We have escort vessels around us. Besides, this ship won't fall that easily.」

The floating Creare nodded.

『The greatest threat is the gigantic monster right above us. This ship cannot be destroyed except by that monster. Rather than that, are you two prepared? Also, Marie too.』

Marie who was treated like an extra looked dissatisfied, but she was scared of Ange and stayed silent.

Ange supported Livia and then she talked to her kindly.

「Livia, let's end this kind of battle quickly. You can do it right?」

Livia nodded while crying. She joined her hands in front of her chest.

After she made a gesture like offering a prayer, Ange also copied her gesture.

(What? My chest feels painful. It also—feel sad tears are coming out)

She could hear the voices of the surrounding.

『Help! I don't want to die!』

『Mom, save me!』

『That's why I didn't want to go to war』

Ange felt the vanishing lives and voices. Her chest was also growing painful.

(You have been, feeling this all this time?)

Creare spoke.

『Should I call this as resonance? It's reacting to Olivia's ability. There is no explanation of this kind of function in the manual.』

Marie looked to the front and made a ruckus.

「NOOOO! A large monster is coming from the front!」

A monster with its mouth opened wide was approaching them.

When Creare muttered 『There』, Weiss's main cannon shot the monster, blowing it away.

『Marie too, please do your job.』

「Eh? What should I do here?」

〔Imitate the two of them, after that do something about this using the saint power.〕

Marie hurriedly imitated the two and started praying, then Weiss started shaking.

It was as though it was going to get serious—.

Ange looked up to the ceiling and spread both her hands.

(—Warm feeling is overflowing. It's also calming.)

What surfaced in Ange's heart was the summer vacation—the scene of the three of them on the way back from the hot spring.

The setting sun was pretty, and it was fun.

Ange thought that if only such day would continue forever.

.

Part 4

I turned around after cutting down an approaching monster.

The surrounding armors and also the airships stopped moving.

The battle stopped, and then the monsters became black smoke before vanishing.

A warm light enveloped the battlefield. That light is being emitted from Weiss.

「—So this is the ultimate weapon.」

The monsters are vanishing due to the light. Even the gigantic monster above is closing its eyes and crossed its many arms to protect itself.

But, that gigantic body is gradually vanishing due to the light.

「So it's the end with this.」

Many armors are dropping the weapon in their hand.

The communication is improving. Even the thick cloud covering the sky vanished and the blue sky became visible.

「Love is amazing huh! —Tsu!」

When I'm about to laugh thinking that we won, my fighting spirit is suddenly disappearing.

At the same time I felt—fear. It's a feeling like my fighting spirit getting forcefully taken away.

—I can hear a voice.

(Don't fight anymore. I—don't want to see a battle like this. Please, stop the fighting!)

It's Livia's voice.

「I see, so this is Livia's true—」

Livia's voice reached people's hearts clearly.

Even if it isn't anything like a wise saying that shook the heart, it will seized people's feeling if it's Livia saying it.

Livia's voice directly reached the surrounding people's hearts from Weiss.

—I can't disobey.

(Let's stop already. At this rate a lot of people will become sacrifice.
Please stop fighting.)

There won't be any hardship if war can stop with such words.

There won't but—the feeling that genuinely wished for the war to stop is penetrating into the heart.

Luxion's empty shell muttered.

〔Mind attack confirmed.〕

So it is. This thing is a really powerful attack.

Livia's ability that is strengthened by Weiss's function is outrageously atrocious.

The knights of the principality that are holding grudge to the kingdom threw away their weapon and listened to Livia's voice.

Don't screw around! or, Who's going to let it end like this!

—Such feelings are dissolving in front of Livia's sad emotion.

And then, the sight that I can see is—the nostalgic memory of my previous life.

I looked up at the gigantic monster raising an eerie voice and disappearing while—muttering.

〔What a really terrible attack.〕

This power must not be used—that's what I thought.

.

Part 5

Hertrauda was watching that sight from the flagship of the principality army.

Tears were flowing.

「Why are you grieving for our sake. Stop. All of you have to be our enemy. Don't feel sad! I'm begging you—stop already.」

The pain of Livia's heart flowed in. Her chest was painful.

The people around her were also in a daze or shedding tears and sitting down on the spot.

Their fighting spirit was taken away.

「Such thing. You are telling us to forget our resentment with something like this? Something like this」

—Mortifying.

But, her desire for revenge was being taken away.

Gradually they became unsure whether they were really in the right.

Hertrude hugged Hertrauda tightly.

「Rauda, let's end this already. The guardian deity of the sky, has vanished completely.」

Hertrauda shook her head.

「No. No way. If it ends like this, then I won't know what do I lost my life for. I, I have to fight no matter what! —Just what do I die for like this!」

Hertrauda gripped the magic flute tightly. Her heart was reluctant even though she wanted to fight.

She was unable to hate the opponent that she should hate.

「—Coward. The kingdom is the worst just as I thought, doing something like this. They're the lowest to do something like this that doesn't even allow us to hate or resent. To take away the will to fight from me like this. It's unfair to go as far as dominating people's heart like this.」

Hertrude hugged the crying Hertrauda and shed tears.

「I'm sorry. To make you do this in my place—I'm really sorry.」

The guardian deity of the sky vanished.

The magic flute in Hertrauda's hand broke into pieces.

「—Lies. Even the guardian deity of the seas is defeated.」

Hertrauda's vitality was gradually vanishing. Her consciousness was going far away within her big sister's arms.

「Rauda!」

「Onee-sama—for some reason, it's warm even though it's scary.」

All her fears were gradually disappearing due to Livia's ability. She felt like she was enveloped in something warm.

With her will to fight taken away, Hertrauda's face became peaceful.

「I'm sorry, Onee-sama. To leave you alone—I'm sorry.」

When Hertrauda slowly closed her eyes, she understood that her consciousness was vanishing.

She could hear Hertrude's sad crying voice, but even that voice was gradually vanishing from her hearing.

.

Part 6

Bandel stood beside Hertrude.

The crying Hertrude was gradually starting to smile.

「Princess.」

「Bandel. It's, strange. Even though I should be sad, my heart feels warm and happy. Even though Rauda died, I'm not even allowed to feel sad.」

The people of the kingdom are really horrible. Hertrude whispered. Bandel softly placed his hand on her shoulder.

「Please leave it to me. This Bandel will bring everything to an end.」

「Bandel?」

Perhaps because of the magic right arm's effect, the mind attack didn't work on Bandel.

「Now, please give me your order while you still have a will to fight remaining.」

Hertrude made a distressed expression. Bandel felt nostalgic seeing that face that was the same with her childhood.

「Princess!」

「—Bandel, go. Show them the principality's pride.」

Bandel nodded resolutely and walked away from that place imposingly.

When he got outside, his hand pressed on his mouth and he coughed.

His palm was dyed red with blood.

「Good work holding out for this long.」

He thanked his own body while looking at his right arm.

「At the very least I have to sink that ship of the kingdom no matter what.」

The white ship that he could see at the distance.

Bandel thought that such thing couldn't be left alone. He put strength into his right arm. It swelled and covered his whole body, taking the form of an armor.

『—Now, let's begin.』

Bandel flew away, charging toward the white ship—Weiss in a straight line.

.

Part 7

I'm feeling absentminded.

Even though I must not fall asleep in this situation, I'm feeling sleepy—that's my state right now.

Or is that not it?

Anyway, now it felt stupid to fight.

『Mental pollution to master is confirmed.』

The voice of Luxion's empty shell entered my ear, but I don't feel like doing anything right now.

Thinking back now, why am I fighting?

In the first place, it's Marie's fault.

No one would be angry at me even if I abandoned her.

No one—no, perhaps only my parents from the previous life who I won't be able to meet anymore will be angry at me I think?

You are her big brother, so look after your little sister, they would say.

But, that's not my character—.

『Enemy approaching. They're heading toward Weiss.』

When I turned my gaze, a black thorny armor that looked like an imitation of Arroganz is charging toward Weiss.

I felt like I have also seen that armor somewhere.

I still can't remember where did I see it.

「Hm? Weiss?」

Right after that, a hole is opened in Weiss's hull by the charging black armor and an explosion happened.

「This is bad!」

I gripped the control stick in a hurry. My mind cleared up when I moved Arroganz.

「What? It was like I was dreaming.」

『It was a mind attack. The mind attack from Weiss affected everyone whether enemy or ally.』

「—So this is Livia's mind attack. It is terrifying.」

The sensation of being enveloped in that warm something gave me euphoria, but at the same time I also felt fear.

The surrounding airships and armors are still unmoving.

「Even so, that armor—」

『It is the armor that took away Hertrude and the magic flute from the palace.』

「So it's the old man black knight!」

Thinking that it will be dangerous at this rate, I accelerated Arroganz to full speed.

.

Part 8

The reverse side of the continent.

Luxion confirmed that the gigantic monster had vanished, at the same time he judged that the power which erased the enemy was dangerous.

『So this is Olivia's power. Certainly it's fitting to be called as an ultimate weapon.』

Smoke was coming out from Luxion's hull.

『The communication is improving. My link with my extension will recover soon.』

He submerged the hull into the sea once, causing water to evaporate from the heat.

The surrounding was covered with white vapor. It was like Luxion's hull was enveloped in mist.

『It will be nice if nothing happen.』

He even thought that it would be fine as long as Leon survived even in the worst case.

Luxion cooled down his hull while thinking about the plan after this—then he slowly moved.

.

Part 9

Bandel used the great sword he held to cut apart the white and beautiful hull. He then stepped inside the ship.

『What?』

There he found something that looked like an armor without legs charging at him with weapon in hands.

He struck it with his great sword and grabbed it with his left arm.

『There is no pilot? How very weird.』

He crushed it in his grip, and then he advanced while destroying the ship.

『This kind of ship must not exist. As I thought the kingdom is evil. Evil—yes, it's an evil that has to be destroyed!』

His right arm swelled up, then several eyes opened up and magic was unleashed from them.

The inside of the ship was exploded. Weiss received a great damage.

The altitude was gradually lowering. Fires were starting to blaze up everywhere.

『That's right. I have to defeat them—the kingdom is enemy!』

Bandel caused destruction while advancing, then he arrived at the bridge.

There he found three girls.

『Women? I see. So it's you three who did that.』

Bandel raised his great sword in front of the three fearful women.

A brown haired girl stepped forward.

「Please wait. Let's stop this already. This kind of battle, it absolutely has to be ended!」

『Not yet!』

Bandel vomited blood while venting his feeling toward the three.

『It hasn't ended yet. I won't let anyone stop it! As long as the principality exist, and then as long as the kingdom exist, we will keep fighting. It's only natural thinking of what all of you had done!』

The other woman who looked strong willed opened her mouth.

「Don't screw around. Don't speak like all of you principality hadn't done anything at all.」

From her tone, Bandel understood that this woman knew about the principality's past.

But, Bandel didn't concede.

『So what about it. Do you girls know how it feels to see your family die huh! My wife tried to protect my daughter. My daughter was still little. Even though she was still little but all of you...!』

When Bandel was about to swing down the great sword, his back was attacked.

A wire bound him and he was forcefully dragged away from the bridge.

When he turned around, there were five showy armors with different colors.

『That's as far as you goes!』

A white armor wearing mantel came toward him with a sword in hand.

Bandel forcefully tore off the wire and blocked the attack with his great sword.

Bandel laughed inside the armor.

『Don't think you can stop me with your level!』

When he sent the armor flying, the green colored armor fired at him with a rifle this time.

Bandel didn't dodge that attack because he knew his armor would deflect the bullets.

『So this is deflected.』

He sensed clearly how his opponent was anxious.

When he looked around, there were spears floating to surround Bandel.

They attacked simultaneously and pierced the gaps in the armor—the joint parts.

『How's that! You can't escape from my spe—』

『Hmph!』

When Bandel exerted his strength, the spears snapped from the part that stabbed into him and became unusable.

『YOUUUU!』

『I won't let you!』

The red armor and blue armor launched a pincer attack at Bandel, even so he sent one armor flying with his great sword and struck away the other one with his tail.

Bandel was facing the five armors near Weiss that was starting to sink and laughed.

『What's wrong you brats! You think you can take down this Bandel with that level of skill!?』

The man piloting the white armor was surprised.

『Bandel? The black knight huh.』

『That's right. Right now I'm former black knight. Even so I can take care of the likes of you instantly.』

He accelerated and swung down his great sword to bisect the white armor, but the red armor tackled him and disturbed his swing.

The blue armor came forward and slashed at him.

『That swordsmanship. Sword saint huh! No, it's cruder than his.』

『UOOOOO!』

He defended against the blue armor's fierce attacks with his great sword while laughing even being surrounded by enemies.

『That's right. Show even more serious effort! Bring even stronger opponents against this Bandel—the black knight Bandel!』

His eyes were bloodshot, and his mind was gradually turning unstable.

The five armors were in disadvantage facing the rampaging Bandel.

Bandel's armor—the magic equipment swelled up and eyes appeared all over his body. That ominous appearance caused the five armors to flinch.



『So you got scared you cowards! Then die!』

When he swung his great sword while laughing, there was an armor that sent him flying.

『—What!?』

He was shocked by the great impact, but he rejoiced when he learned the opponent's true identity.

Bandel grinned fiercely from finally being able to meet him.

『I've been waiting, fiendish knight!』

Floating there was Arroganz.

『Sticking a strange name like that on me. If I'm a fiend, then you guys are even worse trash than that.』

Blood was flowing from the corner of Bandel's smiling mouth.

.

Part 10

When I looked at the ominous armor in front of me, it made me unable to comprehend just what happened.

The armor looked like a biological creature, but it also looked like machine.

The eyes on the surface of the armor are disgusting with how they are rolling around restlessly.

『I've been waiting all this time for the day I fight you.』

『Thank you very much for that unpleasant confession. I didn't want to meet you anymore though. More importantly, that's one strange armor.』

The black knight chuckled.

『I thought that I've to say thanks to you—to the kingdom. This magic right arm, it was lying idle in the treasure warehouse of the kingdom. You all didn't even know its worth and sent it to the principality!』

『What?』

『The difference in spec with your armor is gone with this. Let's begin a battle where pure skill is the only thing that matter!』

I dodged the black knight that tackled at me, but he immediately circled to my back.

The empty shell warned me.

『Enemy approaching from behind.』

『Your reaction is also too slow!』

I blocked with my rifle, but the great sword bisected it.

I immediately tossed the rifle and held a new weapon with both hands.

The new armor of the black knight that is moving really smoothly made me unable to feel any difference in specs with Arroganz.

If that's the case—I won't be able to match him.

『You're persistent, geezer!』

『I'm not going to die until I take your head!』

Just what have I done to you!

The black knight followed behind when I flew higher with Arroganz. Not just that—.

『FALLLLLL!』

The eyes attached on the black knight's armor unleashed magic.

Many fire balls are approaching me with terrifying speed.

I tried to dodge, but they're tailing behind me.

「This is cheating!」

Even when I raised Arroganz's speed to shake them off, the fire balls sped up even more.

「Sent out the drone!」

『Deploying drone.』

Drones are ejected from the container and they began attacking.

The round drones are equipped with machine guns. Those machine guns attacked the fire balls.

However although the fire balls can be shot down—the drones also got swallowed and destroyed by the fire balls.

There are also drones that got cut down by the great sword the black knight held.

「This shitty bastard!」

『Only you—no, wrong. The one that I have to defeat no matter what is something else.』

The black knight suddenly stopped moving, then he turned his gaze at Weiss right below.

「Oi, don't screw around!」

『That's right. I have to destroy that ship at any cost.』

The eyes all over the black knight are going to launch fire balls all at once.

I made Arroganz to swoop down in a hurry and floated in front of Weiss's destroyed bridge.

Behind me there are Livia and Ange.

Marie is also there. The passage is blocked so it seemed they cannot escape even if they tried.

「Deploy the shield.」

〔Deploying shield.〕

I became a shield to protect the three from the fire balls that came attacking one after another.

But, I cannot block all of them. The raining down fire balls hit Weiss and caused large explosions.

The five guys also came before I realized and protected Livia and others.

When Weiss got enveloped in flame and began to sink for real, the battle also started to resume at the surrounding.

「Even though it was finally going to end.」

I can hear the black knight's voice while blocking the fire balls that continued to rain down.

〔I won't accept this kind of end. This battle won't end until one side is destroyed! I won't let anyone end it!〕

I gave an instruction to the masked knight.

「Oi, perverted knight!」

『I told you I'm masked knight!』

『I don't care, just evacuate those three quickly. I'll hold him back here.』

『—Got it.』

He looked like he wanted to say something, but it seemed he thought that they wouldn't be able to do anything here and obediently obeyed the command.

—It's fine like that.

『I'll take on this shitty geezer.』

I made Arroganz charged forward. The black knight lifted up his great sword.

At that time.

The lake surface rose up and a mountain appeared from there.

『—You're shitting me.』

That mountain—an enemy that looked like one made me broke into cold sweat.

『New enemy confirmed. It's a different type from everything before but—it's concluded to be another species of gigantic monster.』

The voice from Luxion's empty shell entered my ear. The instant I let my guard down, Arroganz is slashed by the black knight and fell toward the ground.

.

Part 11

Hertrude who was holding the magic flute looked at Rauda who lied down on the floor.

She apologized to her beloved little sister.

「Forgive me. Forgive me for being a useless big sister—I wonder why it turned out like this?」

One high ranked authority approached the crying Hertrude.

He was wounded and bleeding from his forehead.

「These useless girls. It's pathetic how you two failed!」

There wasn't any respect toward the royal family there. This man who was shouting foul abuse was a noble who held an important office.

He moved to kick Rauda, so Hertrude immediately covered her body and got kicked in her place.

「Stop! Rauda has done her best!」

「So what! Just working hard is pointless. Show a result, result! You parents and children are really useless. Your father and mother were also opposing the war. That was why they were killed and we used you two as puppet, and yet」

It looked like the noble gave in to despair at this situation.

「It's the end. Everything is over. At this rate, the kingdom will invade the principality to keep their face. Even though I thought we can win using that monster. But for the kingdom to neutralize it!」

Hertrude clasped Rauda's unmoving hand.

「Just what are you saying?」

「You still don't get it? You parents and children are both stupid huh. All of you were just being used by us.」

Hearing the words of the men before him, hatred was born inside Hertrude.

The man looked at Hertrude and laughed.

「No, not yet. If I offer your head to the kingdom, then I alone will be saved. I'll become the hero who stop this folly!」

The man pointed a handgun at her, but the airship shook at that timing.

The magic flute tumbled toward Hertrude's hand.

「Da, dammit!」

The noble aimed his gun once more, at the same time Hertrude took the magic flute and blew it with all her strength.

(Everyone—everyone should just disappear!)

Then monsters appeared at the surrounding while emitting black smoke.

They attacked the man and devoured him.

「Sto, stop! Help!」

The man cried and yelled. The monsters devoured him to the death.

Hertrude slowly stood up. She went to a spot where she could see outside with the magic flute in hand.

The truth of the dead of her parents in accident, the man's words, Rauda's death—all of those made her unable to understand just what she had been risking her life for until now.

Hertrude went out to the deck. Her eyes were dull.

The battle had resumed outside. Weiss had just gotten destroyed by Bandel.

Hertrude shed tears and blew the magic flute.

Mysterious sound resounded through the area.

(Enough. I don't care what happens—but, everyone should just die.)

The magic flute summoned the guardian deity of the earth.

Originally it was a monster that should make its appearance as the last boss.

Hertrude let go of the magic flute and started laughing madly.

「Everyone should just disappear!」

—The guardian deity of the earth responded to that mad order.

.

Part 12

Leon's father, Barkas was giving order from the bridge.

「Another crazy huge monster came out! Just what the hell is going on?」

Just when the kingdom army had charged into the principality army, their consciousness was suddenly gone.

When they noticed the gigantic monster in the sky was vanishing, but next a large monster that was like a monster appeared on the lake.

He couldn't keep up with the situation.

Nix who was also in the bridge pointed outside.

「Father, the monsters appeared again. What's more, the number is a lot more than before!」

「Send out the armors. I'm going out too.」

「No, father has to give order here! I'll—」

「Shaddup! Listen, there is order for everything. You should just stay here. If something happen, protect our house and family. You get that?」

Nix couldn't be allowed to die.

Barkas thought that and put his hand on Nix's head before tussling it roughly.

「If something happen to me, you siblings must get along well. If Leon survive, work him hard to protect our territory. That guy is capable but he is an idiot after all. Look after him properly.」

「It's impossible for me to look after that guy! In the first place it'll be better for father to be the one remaining behind!」

「You brat isn't going to die earlier than me! You guys, take care of Nix.」

Barkas said that and walked out of the bridge.

.

Part 13

The last boss appeared just as expected, the dark knight is absurdly strong, I don't know just why the hell it turned out like this.

『FIENDISH KNIGHTTTT!』

Weiss is sinking and this time the black knight gramps kept chasing me.

I'm not happy at all. —Even though it would be better to have a cute girl chasing after me.

「Tsk!」

My axe is worn out from blocking the black knight's great sword.

「Missiles! All of them!」

『Firing all』

The container opened and small missiles attacked the black knight.

The black knight took distance from me and dodged all of them.

His movement was disgusting, in addition the eye balls all over his body shot out fire balls that intercepted the missiles.

My weapon is only the axe in my hand.

Even when I tried to grab him and hammer shockwave into him, I cannot catch up to the black knight in the first place.

「The situation is like this even when I have cheat. It makes me hate myself.」

I got cornered and ran out of any means—just when I thought so, the gigantic monster produced thorns from its body part that looked like mountain.

It fired those thorns and hit the surrounding airships one after another.

It started attacking without differentiating the kingdom or the principality.

「—Ha?」

As expected even the black knight got flustered.

『Princess!』

The gigantic monster is rampaging without discriminating enemy or ally.

「How is Partner's condition!?」

『It is hindered and cannot attack the gigantic monster satisfactorily.』

Partner continued to attack the gigantic monster, but the principality army is surrounding it and showering it with concentrated fire.

「—You guys, there is enemy that you should defeat before targeting my ship!」

I yelled while readying my axe at the same time. I swung it down and the black knight's great sword blocked it.

『I don't have any more time to take you on. Die already!』

「I refuse! I don't want to die in this kind of place!」

I absolutely refused to die in a place like battlefield.

『You have no pride as knight and also no willpower. You're really a fiend!』

「What about it. Don't force your pride and will on me.」

Chivalry?

My bad, it seems that the kingdom's chivalry exist to protect the girls.

That's why, I can't go along with your aesthetics.

Partner let out all its remaining ammunitions and blew away the gigantic monster.

At the same time Luxion's empty shell informed me.

『Partner is at its operation limit.』

『Tsu!』

Partner that is continuously showered with concentrated fire lost its barrier and got hit right after with cannon shells and magic. It burst into flames and falling toward the lake.

I feel sorry for Luxion with this.

And then the black knight's blade is approaching me.

『THIS IS THE ENDDDD!』

I gripped the control stick to struggle till the end—.

Luxion's voice—returned to its usual tone.

『Purging the container.』

『You!』

The container on Arroganz's back is purged, then it flew toward the black knight.

The black knight cut apart the container and he got swallowed by an explosion.

But, my armor's mobility became slow with this. Because the engine nozzles were attached on the container.

「What're you planning to do about this situation, appearing so suddenly like that!」

The next time the black knight attacked, I won't even be able to run away.

『There's no problem. Schwert is coming.』

Approaching from the sky above is Schwert with its shape changed completely.

「What's that?」

『It's Schwert.』

「The shape is different!」

『A minor matter.』

Schwert arrived on Arroganz's back and immediately combined at the part that was connected with the container.

「It combined! Awesome!」

『Exchanging parts. There is a great blade so please use it.』

Arroganz pulled out the sword that came out from Schwert. It's a similar great sword like the black knight.

Schwert's new shape can be seen as an aircraft or a shield depending on how you see it.

Arroganz that had such thing installed on its back looked like it had wings on its back.

「Can we fight with this?」

『There is no problem. The system update has been completed too.』

The black knight flew out from the smoke that came from the container's explosion, so I made Arroganz flew down.

The acceleration is greater than before. The control is difficult.

「This is too fast!」

『Please get used to it. Beginning attack.』

Lights that looked like laser are fired from Schwert. They attacked the black knight.

「The laser bent!」

『Please be quiet or you will bite your tongue.』

—What's with this AI who is treating his master not like a master.

I felt lonely before this but, now I'm strangely feeling annoyed.

「But, I guess it'll be possible to fight the black knight with this.」

I turned to face the black knight and took a stance with the great sword.

『Brat—you still kept such an ace up your sleeve』

「The one who win last is the strong one. So don't complain you geezer!」

Chapter 11: The Power of Love

Part 1

The sinking royal family's ship—Weiss.

Livia and others who escaped from there were riding on a small airship.

The masked knight got down from his armor and confirmed their safety.

「Looks like everyone is safe.」

Ange supported Livia who looked haggard from using her power.

And Marie was being supported by Cara.

Ange looked at the masked knight.

「You saved us. Thank you.」

「—No need. More importantly the battle has resumed. There is even a new gigantic monster appearing. We are at a disadvantage now that we have lost the method to defeat it.」

Partner had defeated the gigantic monster once, but after that it was shot down. Ange looked slightly sad seeing the airship that she had fond memories about sinking, but she shook her head and made a serious expression.

The newly appearing gigantic monster was attacking indiscriminately, because of that a three way struggle was started.

Jilk in his armor took an aim with his rifle and shot the approaching monsters.

『It will be dangerous here. Let's retreat.』

Greg opposed it.

『There isn't anywhere to retreat to here! That huge guy will go to the capital at this rate!』

『Then are you saying we can win against that!? Both Partner and Weiss has sunk, we don't have any way to win now!』

The masked knight watched Arroganz and the black knight fighting a fierce battle. He clenched his hand.

「—Bartfalt also his hands full. If only we can do something」

Marie lifted up her face when everyone was enveloped in a dark atmosphere.

「Wait. There is—there is a way to win!」

The masked knight questioned Marie who said that.

「Marie, no, Marie-dono, is that true!?」

「Ye, yes. There is the magic flute right? That big monster can be erased if we ask the user to blow the flute one more time. But—」

They didn't know where the user was located.

And then, would the user blow the flute once more for them?

「I see, so we will need persuasion.」

That would be difficult. —While everyone thought so, Livia made her decision.

「—Let's go. This battle must not be allowed to continue.」

「Livia, you should rest. You can't even stand straight anymore.」

Livia shook her head even after Ange told her that.

「I want to stop this battle. Besides, I have the feeling that only we can do it.」

The surrounding was in chaos and Leon also had his hands full. The communication was also worsening again.

「We are the only one, who can do it huh.」

The masked knight nodded slightly and spoke to Kyle who was steering the airship.

「Head to the magic flute's user's location!」

But, Kyle showed a very displeased face. He must be reluctant to follow the order of the masked knight.

「Why are you giving me order? In the first place, we don't even know the location of the owner.」

『Ah, I know the location you know?』

Everyone's gazes gathered on the floating white sphere.

『I've finished pinpointing the location. Leave the navigation to me.』

Livia asked Creare.

「Are-chan, please. Guide us there.」

『Oh, is that my nickname? It gives a feeling of familiarity. Now then, we should keep going forward like this.』

Kyle moved the airship following Creare's instruction.

「Advancing through a battlefield like this. I can't go on if I'm not given a special bonus.」

Kyle did his job even while saying that.

The masked knight took a pose.

「Let's go! We shall end this battle!」

Chris felt displeasure toward the masked knight.

『This guy, acting all familiar.』

Robots were gathering one after another around the airship.

「Wha, what!?」

The masked knight hurriedly raised his guard, but Creare told them it was fine.

『They're guard. It seems that sourpuss has arrived.』

「Sourpuss?」

A pillar of light appeared from the sky above. It shot through the gigantic monster, changing it into black smoke.

The airship slipped into that black smoke, moving toward the principality's flagship.

「That light just now?」

『Hahaha! —It was magic. An amazing magic.』

That was magic! The masked knight and the others said in surprise.

『It's coming into view.』

The masked knight couldn't see anything in this battlefield that was covered with black smoke.

「The visibility is bad that nothing can be seen though?」

『It'll be dangerous if we don't reduce the speed.』

Kyle hurriedly decelerated, then an airship came into view from the other side of the black smoke.

Brad was panicking.

『Oi, we're going to crash!』

Creare laughed in amusement.

『It's fine. We will arrive safely with this speed.』

They could see Hertrude sitting on the deck.

There were monsters around her, protecting her.

The masked knight got into his armor.

「I shall take the front.」

Ange who was supporting Livia smiled slightly seeing the masked knight like that.

「You're reliable despite your strange mask.」

「Please call me masked knight.」

The masked knight got into his armor and spoke to everyone.

「Follow me!」

But, Jilk made a dissatisfied face.

『Please don't order us around!』

The five defeated the monsters around Hertrude, then they helped Livia and Ange—and also Marie going down on the deck.

.

Part 2

Livia and other came down on the deck and stood in front of Hertrude.

The masked knight and the other four were around them to protect them.

Hertrude was only sitting down holding the magic flute. She showed no sign of resisting.

「Hertrude-san, we have a request.」

Hertrude didn't reply, but Livia continued speaking.

「Please stop this war already. Everyone will die at this rate.」

Even then Hertrude didn't react. Ange got angry.

「Is it your wish to rampage until the end? The battle is already decided. Surrender.」

Marie tightly clutched the saint's staff and looked around.

The battle was continuing. She was scared that any stray bullet would come their way.

Quietly, Hertrude lifted up her face that had dark circles under her eyes. 「Hih!」 Marie was shocked, in contrast Livia pleaded earnestly.

「Let's end this already. This cannot be allowed to continue. At this rate the people of the principality will also perish.」

.

Ange added on Livia's words.

「The principality army is also nearly destroyed. Retreat. That will be for the sake of both sides. That monster can be stopped with that flute right?」

Hertrude looked down once more and chuckled. She tightly clutched the magic flute and started laughing loudly.

「You're right. It'll be wiser to give up here. —But, absolutely not.」

Hertrude stood up and yelled with both her hands spread out.

「Kill me if you want! But the guardian deity of earth won't stop even if you kill me. It will keep resurrecting no matter how many times it is destroyed. I wonder how all of you will face such opponent.」

Livia persuaded Hertrude who was in despair.

Weiss had already sunk. They had no way to get rid of the gigantic monster.

The pillar of light too, it rained down each time the gigantic monster revived, even so the monster wouldn't stay defeated.

「It's also attacking the people of the principality. At this rate—」

「—What about it」

「Eh?」

「I can only laugh. One of my retainers said it at the end. How we were only used by them. I won't trust anyone anymore. Everyone—everyone can just disappear!」

Livia approached Hertrude and spoke.

That's wrong! Surely there are also people who thought about Hertrude-san.]

「Yes, there were! Though Bandel will also die soon. Besides, Rauda—my only sister has died.」

Livia drew back in surprise. Heltrude was laughing.

「The price for summoning the guardian deity with this magic flute is the user's life. Even though it ended in failure, my little sister also died when the guardian deity vanished. It was we were toyed around by all of you.」

Hertrauda breathed her last with her frustration, resentment, and also her hatred taken away.

「It was really cruel. All of you who even toyed with our hearts are the worst.」

Livia looked down, but Ange covered for her.

「Stop joking. Do you intend to turn a blind eye at what all of you have done yourself?」

Marie spoke timidly.

「If you blow the magic flute once more, it won't go as far as taking your life—I, I think.」

Hertrude was impressed with Marie.

「I'm amazed you know that. Certainly the user won't die if they stop midway. Though I won't be able to use the magic flute anymore and the guardian deity will try to kill me. But you know, I'm not scared of death at this point. I cannot help but wish to destroy this hopeless world. —I just want to take revenge for my little sister!」

Livia strongly opposed that yell of Hertrude.

「Even so—something like this is wrong. Revenge won't bring you anything! Your little sister won't be happy about it!」

The opinions of both sides wouldn't reach an agreement. The one enraged by it was—Marie who should be an ally.

Marie stepped in front of Livia.

「Shut up, this flower field brain!」

Both Livia and Ange were surprised. Even Hertrude was looking surprised.

Marie held the staff with her right hand and placed her left hand on her waist—.

「What are you calling wrong in the first place! Even if it's wrong for you, it's the right thing from where this girl's standing! Revenge is wrong? Who give a damn about it! Besides, are you saying that Hertrauda wouldn't want revenge? Don't act as other people's proxy as you please! That's shameless!」



「But, at this rate no one will be—」

Livia tried to argue back, but Marie didn't allow any rebuttal.

「Because of that, are you telling this girl to become unhappy without taking down her enemy? Please stop because revenge is wrong? Then what are you going to do about this girl's feeling! You're acting high and mighty scolding her but, will you stay quiet if your important person is killed? You won't take revenge because it's wrong?」

「Tha, that's—」

「Have you ever have someone important to you die? Have you experience the many regrets because of that? It's painful. It's really painful when your important person die! Besides—your words are shallow. You're just a little good girl saying pretty things without any substance in it!」

Ange protected Livia who was cornered.

「Whose side are you on! I have no interest in Hertrude's revenge or whatever. Stopping that monster is the priority right now!」

「Shut up! A world that'll get destroyed by just this much should just get destroyed already!」

Marie's yell that came from her heart made even Ange to flinch.

Even so Marie didn't stop.

.

Part 3

Marie was irritated.

Revenge is wrong—such thing was just for the surrounding's convenience.

(That's right. I hate this girl with flower field for brain. Even in the game she only said pretty words and lines that sounded fake. War is wrong? Revenge is not good? Is there something wrong with your head?)

「She know that it's something wrong and not good. Even so she cannot stop herself and tha's why she took action!」

Even Marie herself didn't understand why she was defending Hertrude.

But, she was unable to see Hertrude who was only getting told how she was mistaken.

Besides—Marie was also feeling regret when her important person died.

When her big brother in the previous life died, she felt really sad.

Ange reproached such Marie.

「And she is going to kill a lot of people because of that? Look around you! The battle is already decided. If it continues more than this, the important person of someone else will further die. Even more death will come. Don't you understand that!?」

—The soldiers and knights who died in battle must have their own important person.

There must be also people waiting for their return.

When they looked around—the principality army was raising white flag.

They were attacked by the gigantic monster and the kingdom army. The number of their airships that were still floating was few.

「There isn't any more meaning in fighting. If they withdraw here, there will still be ground for negotiation. Where is the need in continuing to fight pointlessly like this?」

Marie couldn't talk back.

「Do you intend to continue this completely pointless war of attrition?」

Even if the principality army rallied after this, their military strength would be diminished too much there wouldn't be any meaning in it.

They would only get attacked by another country one day and lost.

「Fanoss royal family was also a relative of Hohlfahrt royal family if their origin is trace back. It's still possible to hold a negotiation if they withdraw here.」

Hertrude looked down and chuckled.

「That's right. But, what will be waiting for the principality will be a future that is like a slave.」

Painful reality would be waiting for the defeated country.

Livia talked to Hertrude.

「The soldiers also have family waiting for them back home. Please don't let them die pointlessly more than this.」

Even Marie understood that much.

Livia and Ange were in the right—then, what would happen to Heltrude?

Hertrude moved her lips before Marie could say something.

「I never thought, that I will be defended by the pathetic saint. Just why are you defending someone like me. If only you aren't here—I won't have this kind of feeling.」

Saying that—Hertrude blew the magic flute.

That tune was gentle.

「Are you, fine with that?」

Asked by Marie, Hertrude separated her lips from the breaking magic flute and smiled.

「It's unpleasant being unable to take revenge. But, seeing the saint made me able to calm myself. That's right. I understand it. I know that there is no meaning even if I do something like this—but, I couldn't stop myself. Just why something like this happen to me, to us」

Hertrude burst out crying and crumbled on the spot. Marie gently hugged her shoulders.

When they noticed, the surrounding had stopped fighting.

The five positioned their armors to protect Marie and others. The surrounding had become really quiet.

Hertrude wiped her tears.

「The principality—surrender.」

Creare gave a warming after she declared that.

『An armor is rapidly approaching! Everyone, be careful!』

The five armors who surrounded them raised their guard. Then a black armor roughly landed on the deck.

The armor was battered and liquids were flowing out from it. It looked as though it was bleeding.

—It was the black knight.

『Get away from princess. You fiends of the kingdom.』

Several eyes appeared on the armor. They were looking at Marie and others.

『This guy is disgusting.』

Hertrude cried seeing the black knight looking like that.

『Bandel, it's enough. Let's end this already. You have fought well for the sake of someone like me. Thank you. That's why, it's enough already. It's over.』

The battle was finally over.

Everyone thought that, but the black knight wouldn't accept it.

『—Princess, have they deceived you?』

『Bandel?』

『Please don't worry. Watch me, I'm going to scatter the kingdom army immediately.』

The black knight stood. Liquids spurted out from all over his body like blood.

『You're wrong. It's over already, Bandel!』

『I'm not going to let it end!』

The masked knight slashed at the black knight, but it was repelled away with his great sword.

The other armors also attacked, but they weren't his match.

『That's right. It won't end. I still, cannot let it end yet—the revenge for my family isn't over. I'll make the people of the kingdom feel the same—it won't end until I take revenge for my wife and daughter!』

The black knight approached Marie and others.

And then, the revived gigantic monster also headed toward them.

For a moment Marie thought 『Is this the end?』 .

Even in her second life—she failed continuously it made her sad.

Livia stepped in front of the black knight and spread out her hands.

「Black knight-san, please stop it already.」

Marie reached out.

「I, idiot, what are you doing even at this situation!」

The black knight stopped moving, and then he raised up his great sword.

『You are the girl from that time. Then, I've to kill you here—you can't be allowed to live.』

Marie gripped her staff tightly. She deployed a shield of magic power with her saint power.

That shield was easily smashed by the black knight's left hand.

『So even the saint is only this much!』

「Stop it already Bandel!」

Even when Hertrude yelled, the black knight swung down the great sword at Livia.

「Livia!」

Ange rushed forward to protect Livia.

Marie closed her eyes.

At this rate the two of them—and then she would also die. The moment she thought that, what surfaced in her heart was,

(Save us, Onii-chan!)

Perhaps that voice reached. Entering their ear was—.

『—I'll murder you, you shitty geezerrrr!』

.

Part 4

「Damn bastards getting in my way.」

The principality's armors swarmed me to help the black knight.

After I defeated all of them and looked around, the black knight isn't anywhere to be found.

When I thought that I finally found him after chasing the fleeing black knight, he is on a principality's airship—on its deck.

For some reason Livia and others are also on it. They're going to get killed even now.

I instantly lost my cool.

「What the hell are you doing—I'll murder you, you shitty geezerrrr!」

Arroganz tackled him and blew him away from there. The black knight yelled something.

『It hasn't ended! I won't let it end! I'll massacre all the fiends of the kingdom!』

Luxion shook his single eye hearing that voice.

『He isn't sane anymore. He is being taken over by that.』

The black knight who was taken over by the magic right arm took a stance with his great sword.

『Master, let's end this soon. The gigantic monster is heading our way.』

I also readied my great sword and accelerated.

「Geezer, go to sleep already!」

The black knight drew near—I copied his movement, furthermore Luxion is supporting me.

We've exchanged blows with the black knight many times. We repeatedly did correction throughout all those.

It felt like the charm hanging on my neck shined slightly.

『YOU BASTARD!!!!!!』

Both of us swung our great swords. The black knight's great sword gouged deeply into Arroganz's shoulder.

—My sword entered the torso of the black knight.

「Luxion, do it-!」

『Please leave it to me. —Impact!』

The blade of the great sword shined red and unleashed sparks. The black knight was sent flying.

It was like a balloon filled with water got sent flying. Black liquid spurted out and the black knight geezer fell on the airship's deck.

Arroganz's left arm that was almost breaking reached out by itself.

The left hand grasped and recovered the part that looked like an armor's right arm.

An eye appeared on the back of its hand. When it looked at Arroganz, it rolled around restlessly as though in panic.

It looked like it's scared of Arroganz.

『Master, the preparation is ready anytime.』

When I tossed it away, light poured from the sky and annihilated the magic right arm.

「Feel refreshed?」

『Yes. That thing is next.』

Ahead of my gaze is a moving mountain—the gigantic monster.

「Make it flashy.」

『That will be good.』

Arroganz stored away the great sword and spread out both hands widely.

.

Part 5

Hertrude clung on Bandel who fell on the deck.

「Bandel!」

Bandel opened his eyes, but blood was leaking when he touched his stomach.

He also had lost his right arm.

「—Ah, so I lost.」

Bandel smiled seeing the crying Hertrude.

(That brat, has grown strong.)

「Princess, my apologies.」

「Don't leave me!」

「—It looks like this is it.」

When he looked to the sky, Arroganz was spreading its hands widely.

Several magic circles appeared and overlapped in preparation of something.

Even Bandel who didn't specialize in magic could guess that it must be an amazing magic.

And then, the overlapping magic circles emitted a beautiful radiance.

A great amount of energy was compressed, creating a light that looked like cannonball to be fired toward the guardian deity of earth. Arroganz let out crackling electrical discharge. From the sparks coming out from its joints, it seemed to be forcing itself.

And then—when the cannonball was fired, it hit the guardian deity of the earth and exploded. Seeing the explosion and smoke from above the shaking airship, Bandel keenly felt that everything was over.

Fire burst from every part of Arroganz due to the recoil of using magic. It then was falling toward the lake.

Livia and others rode an airship toward Arroganz.

But, Marie stayed beside the two of them. She was watching over Hertrude.

Seeing her, Bandel felt slightly relieved.

(Is she worrying for princess? If there is someone like her—perhaps, it will still be alright. With this—my revenge is also over. I'm going to where my family—)

Bandel vomited blood from his mouth. He smiled before closing his eyes.

.

Part 6

On the lake.

Arroganz deployed a life buoy and floated on the lake.

I'm looking to the sky inside the cockpit together with Luxion.

「Hey, I wonder if I'm right?」

If from the start I used Luxion's main body not at the other side—but at this side, then it would end without anyone dead. There was also reason why I didn't do that. But, it was me who chose this way of fighting.

『In case master exposed my main body, a life where master can't let your guard down will be waiting. Besides, fighting at the other side of the land would be too dangerous for the current kingdom.

The sea gigantic monster also couldn't be ignored. This outcome isn't the best but it might be the better one?』

Wreckages of airships and armors floated on the lake.

Seeing that I thought

Shouldn't I be able to do better?

「In the end, I was unable to use you skillfully.」

『I agree. But, it'll be alright as long as master learn from here on won't it?』

「A lot died. I killed a lot.」

『Humans have been fighting since the dawn of history so please don't worry. Someone like master is still in the lowest division.』

「I'm not happy hearing that at all.」

『I'm not good with consoling someone after all.』

「—I'm surely going to hell.」

『That's only if hell exist. Should I accompany master?』

「It feels like you're going to pick a fight with King Yama there. That will only make my sin heavier so I decline.」

『It's master who is always picking a fight with your surrounding.』

「You're an idiot huh. I at least understand which opponent must not be angered. I'm good with flattery. I've started thinking of words to butter up King Yama from now.」

『As expected. It's too horrible I have no word.』

I'm distracting myself by making stupid talk.

『—It's also a fact that a lot of people are saved due to master's action. Both the kingdom and the principality are exhausted and it will be difficult to continue the war. Seeing the outcome, I believe that master has done well. Master is also able to display that Partner and Arroganz are now beyond repair. Depending on the method, master might be able to obtain the peace that you wished for.』

If it was the actual main character of a story who did it, then surely he would save everyone and got happy end.

I couldn't get the happy end. —As expected I'm just a mob.

If there is a main character who can save everything, I'll do everything I can to butter him up.

—That's why, help me out. Anyone is fine, I want to be helped.

—I cannot obtain great achievement like a main character or a hero.

『I wanted to do better. It's my responsibility.』

『War would happen between the two countries regardless of master's existence. Master is being excessively self-conscious.』

That must be a consolation from this guy in his own way.

He is irritating but, this is far better compared to when he was just empty shell.

『My bad about Partner and Weiss. They got sunk.』

『I will recover Partner and fix it. Regarding Weiss, I judge that mind attack is dangerous. It seemed there was a device that was loaded into the ship later on. The ship itself didn't have such function.』

『It's scary to stop war with love. Getting your fighting spirit or your wish to fight taken away is too scary.』

『It will be more convenient to keep it sinking like that. If not, Olivia and Angelica's life will be in danger. —I understood the reason why the kingdom was hiding it as trump card.』

I don't want to make those two use that anymore.

If the ship kept existing, the two who became its owner would be constantly under the threat of assassination.

For their sake, it's important to make everyone think that trump card cannot be used anymore.

『I don't want to use it anymore. What do they mean love. That's just a mind attack.』

『A wise decision. But—isn't it a fact that love is what stopped the war?』

『That? Even I was appalled by it you know?』

『Didn't master lend your hand because you love those two? Besides master's feeling that want to protect your family and other acquaintances is also love. It's exactly because of that the kingdom is able to win.』

『That's wonderful. At the same time, what started the war was also love was it?』

『There were various reasons but, love is effective if it can be used. When instigating the populace, their morale will heighten if they're told it's for protecting their family and loved ones.』

『It made me want to vomit.』

『Human can fight for love. They can risk their life for other people's sake. It's something wonderful.』

While I'm going along with this guy's sarcasm, a small airship landed near Arroganz.

It landed on water which caused wave that shook the armor.

On the ship are Lilia and Ange.

The two of them are crying.

「Eh? Could it be they think I'm dead?」

『Don't be joking, how about master get out and reassure them? If master don't resolve yourself already, even I will be irritated. Master love those two right?』

「You're an idiot huh. —It's because I love them that I'm cherishing them.」

Resolve? Laying my hand on someone who I can't marry, or rather someone who I can't take responsibility for is impossible for me.

Because I'm—a sincere man after all.

「I have worked hard for a lifetime's worth. I want to live peacefully next.」

『Even if there is a peaceful future for master, I don't think that master will be able to get away from those two though.』

「Do you think I'm worthy for those two? There are worthier men for them.」

『It's for those two and master yourself to decide. Please rest assured. If it's about living expense then I'll do something about it.』

「I'm so happy I'm crying here.」

Arroganz's hatch opened and I went out. There Livia and Ange jumped down from the airship and hugged me.

「Leon-san!」

「This idiot!」

I'm embraced, and then I put my arms on the two's backs.

「I didn't think of what I should say here. But for now—I'm back.」

Livia shed tears and pressed her forehead on my chest.

「Leon-san, please don't make us worry.」

「Eh? You were worried?」

Ange pinched my arm, but I'm wearing pilot suit so it doesn't really hurt.

「Don't joke. Also, why did you run away that time?」

「That time?」

「That time in the underground—that, when it came to light that Livia and I are in love with each other.」

For some reason it made me want to tease Angelica when she is looking embarrassed like this.

「No, because, I thought it would be bad if I got in the way.」

「Who said that you would get in the way! —Don't say something like that anymore. You're an important person for the two of us.」

Father's airship landed near us.

It seems they came to pick us up.

The war also looked to be over. What remained is—tidying up and dealing with the aftermath.

.

Part 7

When we returned to the palace, the place is busy and many things are decided.

About the matter of the principality, both sides made peace for the time being.

The reason is because the kingdom is being attacked by other countries in various places and they don't have time to focus on the principality alone.

Even if the kingdom wanted to invade they don't have the leeway for it.

However, the country called the principality is terminated.

They ended up entering under the umbrella of the kingdom as Fanoss Duke House.

At the same time they are also tied up with a humiliating agreement.

Of course they have to pay reparations, but the kingdom will also be the one to decide the military strength that they can possess and they would be fined if they violated the agreement.

It's also decided that the kingdom will send an overseer to there.

They also have to send their army if the kingdom demanded it and they have no right to refuse.

—Their treatment is far worse compared to other feudal lords.

A future where they won't be killed but also won't be allowed to live while being exploited for several hundred years is waiting for them.

It's not a matter that involved me who returned to the palace.
Around that time I am—.

「Leon-sama, it seems that you have accomplished a great achievement.」

「Truly a hero.」

「Please allow me to listen to Leon-sama's achievement.」

—being surrounded by girls in the palace.

「Ahahaha! I wish I can show you girls my effort there. I kept tearing apart those principality bunch and tossed them away, rinse and repeat!」

By the way, the girls surrounding me aren't students of the academy.

They are the juniors who will enter the academy in the future.

They are high class young ladies who aren't even bringing slave around with them. They are pure girls who haven't been stained in a bad sense by the society or rather by the girls in the academy.

They're daughters of nobles so they must have various ulterior motives but, they're still better than the girls in the academy.

Besides—it's the best feeling to have girls making a fuss over me like this!

Everyday girls are coming to visit me who am currently being half imprisoned in the palace.

There are some signs of movement behind the scene but, I don't want to live worrying about a lot of things anymore.

Right now I'll just enjoy this moment.

「Next year when we enrolled, Leon-sama will be our senior.」

「It feels like a dream to be able to go to the same academy.」

「I'm looking forward to Leon-sama's tea party.」

I pressed my chest in front of the lovely juniors.

Unlike the girls in the academy, these are unsullied maidens—perhaps this is the beginning of my life? Has it finally started?

The war is over, I might have been freed from that otome game's binding!

「I'm also looking forward for everyone to enroll.」

The girls blushed.

Even someone like me will be popular when becoming hero.

My laugh cannot stop anymore.

I reincarnated to another world and just when I thought it's a world that placed woman above men—a normal harem development is waiting for me from now on.

It's the best feeling!

While I'm enjoying myself like that, Mylene-sama showed up.

「Viscount Bartfalt, can I ask for a bit of your time?」

「—Mylene-sama.」

Her serious expression is slightly colored with sorrow.

Stop it. Don't look at me with such expression.

When the girls read the mood and left from the room, I'm getting flustered like a man who got caught having an affair.

「Mylene-sama, the, there is various circumstances about this」

「I understand.」

「Eh?」

It seems she understand something but, she really can comprehend my feeling that is becoming loose from having girls fussing over me? She is truly a broad minded woman. Mylene-sama is just too lovely.

「You are distracting yourself by doing that right? We have made you go through painful things. I have heard, that you raised a truly spectacular achievement—that must be exactly why it's painful for you correct?」

—I thought that she is misunderstanding a lot but, it looks like she is looking at where she ought to look.

I stopped making excuse and shrugged.

「I'm beaten. But, it's the truth that I was happy having girls fussing over me. It's something I've never experienced in the academy.」

「Boys.」

Mylene-sama said that and smiled. She then sat at the opposite side of me.

「Do you remember? I said that I will tell you everything.」

「What Mylene-sama said before the battle is it? Is now the time for that?」

Mylene-sama nodded. She straightened her posture and looked straight at me.

「Will you be able to accept everything, Viscount Bartfalt? The thing called truth is cruel.」

She said something about the cause the kingdom became like this.

Is there any reason for the otome game setting?

I straightened my posture.

「Although I appear this way but I'm not a pure and innocent boy. I've resolved myself.」

I will later regret saying out this line so thoughtlessly.

「Then, I will talk while also explaining its relation with the conclusion of this incident.」

Chapter 12: A Cruel Truth

Part 1

「The beginning started from the insurrection of the archduke house. You understand that in war, the side that made the first move will have the advantage right?」

When it came to the war in this world, the attacking side will be in advantage in part due to the existence of airship.

「Yes. In fact the defensive battle in the capital was also a pain.」

Mylene-sama nodded and continued talking.

「—The royal family was harassed by the archduke house in the past, because of that they feared the second coming of another archduke house. As someone from feudal lord household yourself you surely understand but, when you reach the level above baron house, there is a way to rapidly increase your military strength.」

「By increasing the number of airships. I heard that in the past there was a method of attacking other houses and expand your power base like that.」

Because there is convenient thing like floating stone, the maintenance cost of airship is surprisingly cheap.

It's also possible to construct airship cheaply.

Increasing military strength and obtain new floating island through dispute between feudal lords.

In other words, even a baron could make the kingdom quake in fear as long as they gathered military strength and possessed the quick wits to use it.

—It seems there was that kind of era.

「Even worse, among the feudal lords who shut themselves within their territory, many of them thought that the kingdom won't be any match against them. In fact there were also a lot of feudal lords who made light of the kingdom and attacked.」

That kind of misunderstanding bastard lost against the kingdom.

But, the attacked side would be in disadvantage, so the damage to the kingdom also wasn't light.

「The kingdom prepared the academy is also for displaying their strength. It's for showing the capital to the feudal lords and made them understand the difference in strength.」

Luxion also said something like that.

But, just what relation it has with the truth?

From the way Mylene-sama spoke it felt like that some burden was forced on male but—.

「And then, the kingdom prepared one more plan. That plan was for shaving off the feudal lords' strength. They planted a new sense of values.」

「Shaving off their strength? Sense of values?」

「Do you understand why the females of the nobles were given extremely favorable treatment?」

「That is—」

「Originally the number of male is extremely few in part because of the wars. You won't notice while in the academy but, after the

graduation the number of male becomes insufficient. —In fact the number of female who cannot marry is numerous.]

Then why is the female given preference in marriage when the situation is like that?

—Somehow many things are getting connected.

「The nobles got conditioned to hold a shared sense of values in the academy. In so doing the kingdom favorably treated the female more. Even though it was somewhat horrible, the kingdom continued to take the stance that gave preferential treatment to the female.】

—Oi, wait a second.

Could it be, the kingdom was the one who created this situation!?

「Ple, please wait. What is the meaning of doing something like that? Because, you know! When the time comes it caused the nobles to be reluctant to do their duty!】

It was also like that this time.

The youths who were in the same environment like me tried to change side the moment they understood that the kingdom was in disadvantage.

Mylene-sama told me to calm down before continuing her explanation slowly.

「At first the kingdom never imagined that this kind of situation will happen. It will be alright if the feudal lords are taught to have the same sense of values and camaraderie with each other while shaving off their strength slightly, the kingdom only thought that far. But, the effect surpassed the imagination. The females grew impudent.】

The number of idiot who challenged the kingdom became few after they learned the kingdom's true strength in their youth.

At the same time, the idea of prioritizing female is fine and all, but the female grew to hold influence that surpassed the expectation.

The warped marital relationships appeared because of the kingdom's fault.

「Correct it along the way before it became like this.」

「There wasn't any need for that. In fact, if I was an official at that era I would also ignore it. It was convenient for the kingdom. After all the feudal lords will get impoverished even without them doing anything, and their riches will gather in the capital. The number of nobles that revolted also got reduced drastically.」

Mylene-sama answered bluntly. Then she spoke about one more meaning of the academy's existence.

「—And then, another objective of the academy is to establish an education method.」

Eh? Now that she mentioned it, I think I remember Luxion mentioning something like that too in one of his stories that I ignored.

「By establishing an education method, the kingdom intended to educate not the nobles—but the commoners. Do you understand what that mean?」

When I averted my gaze, Mylene-sama smiled.

「It's to create a world where the nobles are unnecessary a few hundred years later.」

—I don't want to hear it.

If I hear this kind of story, won't I get erased if I'm careless?

「The royal family at that time prepared the academy with the intention to carry out a revolution of the political system throughout several hundred years. No, they must be taking such action because halfway they realized they had to carry out such plan for the kingdom's sake.」

The royal family grew fed up in going along with the feudal lords and thought hard. The result—they wanted to change the political system.

What's that? Aren't they living too much in the future?

「Just as represented by the archduke house at that time, the nobles were overflowing with ambition in that horrible era. Viscount too should understand if you're a noble.」

There were also some good guys, but the majority was trash that made you wanted to tilt your head wondering if they were really human.

In fact, there were a lot of guys who would try to rise up in life using armed might if they had the power to do it, unlike me.

「The academy also attempted to correct such thinking of the youths. If the nobles are decent, then the kingdom would continue on safely, they thought. But, the situation progressed to a direction outside the expectation of the royal family at that time.」

It seemed that the position of the girls became stronger than expected was a problem.

「As the result of ignoring that problem because it was effective for shaving off the feudal lords' power, a part of the females from the

baron house until count house ran wild. It became a situation that was more horrible than the palace expected.]

And it led to the current situation.

〔What a horrible story.〕

〔Yes, it's a horrible story. But, it's also a fact that the riches of the feudal lords gathered into the capital. The females who wanted to live in luxury in the capital were also convenient existence for the palace. This is the reason why burdens were forced on the males.〕

From the kingdom's perspective, the nobles—especially the feudal lords couldn't be trusted.

They created the academy to give education to the commoners and reduced the number of nobles in the future. From the way Mylene-sama spoke, could it be they were turning a blind eye toward the girls who were running wild in the academy?

—It looked as though they were choosing which nobles to be cast away one day.

The houses with rank higher than count didn't allow their daughters to have slave—might also because they suspected or knew about this truth?

The remaining nobles must be aiming for the important positions in the new system when the political system is reformed.

Even if the nobles who don't know anything ran wild, the kingdom that possessed the trump card which was the royal family's ship should be feeling confident.

I never even imagined that the messed up academy actually had such calculation behind it.

I'll ask about the detail to Luxion later.

Also—.

「Could it be, Livia getting enrolled into the academy was for...」

「It was for the transition to the next phase. The nobles should be having a sense of danger. That girl was to be the beginning with the plan to increase the number of commoners enrolled increased each year. Well, it's an action that is thinking about 100 or 200 years ahead though.」

—I learned this in the school of my previous life.

After the feudalism it would be—absolute monarchy with centralized authoritarian rule was it?

「—Centralized authoritarian rule.」

「Oh, that's a good word to concisely state the result that the royal family is aiming for.」

I got praised after displaying my knowledge from previous life, but I'm not happy hearing that in this situation.

She is saying that the kingdom would steal everything from the feudal lords and made the commoners do the noble's job.

I never even imagined that the academy was established for that.

「But it didn't progress as planned.」

Mylene-sama said that and looked at me with a self-deprecating smile.

—Stop. Don't test me like this.

Right now I'm really worried that I might get killed after hearing this story.

If the male nobles heard this story, they would go mad with anger.

I understand that it's pointless even if I blame the current royal family but—this is horrible.

「As expected a hero is different. The likes of me was dumbfounded when I heard this story. But Leon-kun is really calm. Even though I thought that it can't be helped even if I got yelled and cursed at.」

It seems Mylene-sama is misunderstanding from seeing me speechless from shock.

「Also, let me say this not as a queen but as myself personally—」

Mylene-sama stood up from her seat before kneeling on the floor and lowered her head toward me.

—Eh? What's with the kowtow! Wait a second. There shouldn't be any custom of kowtow in this world! Is she imitating what I did at the school festival?

「Wa, wait! Please stop it. What's the matter so suddenly?」

「Viscount Bartfalt. I wish to make a request to you even knowing that how rude it is. Please, can I ask you to save my son Julius? This is my request as that child's mother.」

—What did that guy do?

.

Part 2

The six got put inside the underground prison.

Julius, Jilk, Brad, Greg, Chris, and also Marie were silently waiting for their treatment to be decided.

Marie was crying.

「Everyone—sorry.」

Julius smiled to console the crying Marie.

「It's because I could only help you by doing this. Don't mind it Marie.」

Jilk was looking at Julius with a sad expression.

「It couldn't be helped that your highness couldn't join the battle. Besides, someone who introduced himself as masked knight gave us help in that battlefield.」

Brad also recalled the masked knight and made a dissatisfied expression.

「That guy was suddenly gone. Well, he was quite the capable guy though.」

Greg sat cross legged and placed his chin on his hand while talking to Julius about the masked knight.

「I won't go as far as saying that guy was Julius's replacement, but I'll admit he was useful.」

Chris also nodded and recognized the masked knight's strength.

「He was piloting an armor that I had never seen before. His swordsmanship also wasn't bad. But, we never discovered just who he is until the end. Though it seems Bartfalt knew something about him.」

Julius made a small smile hearing those four's reactions.

「—I see. I also wanted to try meeting him.」

「No, there is no need for your highness to meet him. He was a man who suddenly appeared and tried to take control of the place. His identity has to be questioned the next time he appears.」

Marie was utterly amazed seeing the five's behavior.

Are they seriously saying that? Her face seemed to say that.

「Everyone, that man was Julius—」

Footsteps could be heard approaching the underground prison where the six of them were at.

The knights guarding the prison saluted and allowed that man to enter. A black haired girl was also following behind the man.

「Ah!」

Marie looked at the man with her eyes shining—it was Leon.

「—You guys are really stupid.」

Behind him her highness Hertrude—no, Duchess Hertrude was also present.

「I'm really astonished by all of you.」

Marie clung on the iron bars and asked for help from Leon.

「I have worked hard. So please save me from here.」

Leon made a pained face and confirmed the situation while pressing his hand on his forehead.

「Do you guys understand the charges that are placed on you?」

Julius looked straight at Leon.

「I don't believe we have done anything to be ashamed for at all.」

「You guys, be a bit more ashamed! The prince attacking a duchess after signing the treaty isn't laughing matter! The palace is shamed because of your fault!」

Hertrude sighed and looked down.

「Did you act recklessly like that for my sake?」

「That's a part of it. Because that treaty was just too horrible as expected. Besides, if it continued like that I would have to marry into your house. Other than that—it was because Marie asked me to.」

Marie requested Julius saying that she wanted to do something for the principality—for the duke house.

「So that's your true motive.」

The palace must be wishing to send Julius to put the Fanoss House under a harsh management.

If he was married off to Hertrude, the emotion of the principality's populace would also subside somewhat.

By doing that they thought the governing there would also go well, and yet—Julius attacked Hertrude.

Of course, he only pretended to attack.

Because of that the palace's face was completely ruined.

Even with the treaty in place, Julius's act made the palace to compromise to some extent.

Naturally the talk about Julius's marriage was also aborted.

(Even though it would be good if he marry like that.)

Marie thought such thing.

Leon turned his gaze to the other four.

「You guys also understand right?」

Greg's finger rubbed below his nose looking slightly embarrassed.

「It was to protect Marie. I got no regret.」

「Regret for a bit! Are you an idiot beating up the temple's people who came to take Marie into custody like that? Hey, are you really an idiot? You're an idiot aren't you!?」

Chris threw out his chest.

「It was a legitimate self-defense.」

「You guys overdid it. The temple sent us a protest! Even though I also got various arrangements created but you guys ruined it all.」

The people of the temple that came to take Marie originally only came to collect the saint's items back.

But, people who found Marie's existence inconvenient slipped among them and brought poisoned wine with them. They tried to make Marie drank it.

They tried to make Marie shoulder all the responsibilities.

The four came running and then—beat up all the temple personnel and kicking them out of the palace.

So far it was already problematic, but even Leon couldn't blame them for that. The problem was after that.

「Now see here. Marie was recognized by the saint's tools. She herself said that she's a fake, but there is no doubt that she is the saint. Do you understand until here?」

Marie seemed to think she was praised and looked bashful.

「Eh, is that true? What, then I'm really the saint.」

「The men of that saint beat up the priests so the matter got complicated though. You guys beat them up without even investigating further, so the temple also got obstinate and said that they won't recognize Marie now.」

Hertrude looked like she wanted to say something, but she didn't say anything and left it to Leon.

「Do you know how much I've been pulling strings behind the scene? Hey, why are you guys making all my hard works futile?」

Brad got enraged and stood up in protest.

「Are you telling us to let Marie die then!? We won't accept something like that.」

「Certainly, you four are in the right. Those guys tried to poison her to death. Even I thought that those guys are a real idiot. But see—you four making a ruckus after driving them away is no good. Assaulting the temple is really stupid.」

Marie defended the four.

「Wait! Everyone only protested to the temple because they thought I would be executed.」

「You don't call bringing out armors and rampaging a protest! You call that use of force! Even though it looked like the matter might be

resolved nicely because they got found out trying to kill using poison!」

From the perspective of the palace's official, these six who were thrown into the underground prison must be a very aggravating existence.

Hertrude was pitying Leon.

「You also have it hard. Want to come to my place? If it's now I can promise you a nice treatment. I'll prepare a rank of duke for you.」

「Not interested.」

Leon instantly refused and walked toward Marie.

Hertrude made a slightly vexed and sad looking smile. She was muttering 「Even though I'm serious this time, I got rejected again」 .

「The extraordinarily devilish woman who seduced the five who originally had bright prospect—you're being talked like that.」

「Eh, is that so?」

Leon showed an irritated voice at the bashful Marie.

「Protests are flooding in because of you guys! Your houses are enraged, the palace officials are saying that you guys are absolutely unforgivable, while the temple are raging to execute you all!」

Marie grabbed Leon's ankle.

「Please save us!」

「I was trying to save you! But you guys messed up everything! Hey, do you guys have grudge for me? How in the world you guys turned the situation to be this outrageous? Everyone was astonished!」

Leon felt like crying.

「You're wrong! We tried to do something about it by ourselves. But then it ended up like this.」

「It's the worst! Think more before doing something!」

Marie was crying.

「Then, we are going to die?」

Leo was about to say something, but he swallowed his words and turned his back on them.

「—I was also asked by Mylene-sama. I'll do whatever I can. But, don't expect too much.」

Marie's expression turned into a smile.

Yes, if her brother from the previous life—Leon was taking action, then most thing would be resolved somehow.

(Thank you Onii-chan!)

.

Part 3

I headed to where his majesty is in order to resolve the matter of Marie and others.

Vince-san and Barnard-san are also present around his majesty Roland.

Everyone is showing disapproval at my suggestion.

「It looks like you don't understand what it means to help those six.」

His majesty's words are cold even though this matter is concerning his son's like. In respond I—.

「I don't mind even if it's in exchange with my reward this time. If it's not enough then I'll also offer the assets in my possession.」

His majesty scoffed.

「The workshop in your possession has been transferred to your father the baron hasn't it? As for Lost Items, you have lost all of them. There won't be any meaning to obtain some fortune at this point. Besides, you even lost our royal family's ship. Isn't this your responsibility?」

This detestable bastard is making snide remarks insistently.

It's possible to repair Partner and Arroganz, but I should keep it quiet here. That way will be convenient for me after all.

「I'm begging your majesty to please be merciful there.」

His majesty is looking at me while grinning and acting cocky.

Isn't this guy hating me too much?

Then Barnard-san spoke.

「It's easy to save only their lives. But you see, I hope you understand those six cannot be leave to their own device. His highness Julius is a royalty. And then the other four are former heirs of noted houses. And then, there is even the saint who is considered as fake among them.」

His majesty looked back in surprise at Barnard-san's opinion, but even Vince-san is affirming my opinion too.

「It'll be safer to shut them up in a floating island where they can be monitored, but we have no leeway to prepare such convenient island. The palace also won't try too hard to search such a floating island. And so, in that case. —The island that you discovered will be used for it. Is that really okay?」

I'm told to hand over the floating island that I discovered and became mine.

His majesty doesn't look like he can accept that. He is looking at Vince-san reproachfully.

It seems that in the first place Vince-san and others are thinking that the matter of the royal family's ship is something that can't be helped.

They don't mention that matter at all.

Seeing Vince-san ignoring his majesty made me feel relieved.

But, it's painful to hand over the territory that is filled with my ideals.

Hm? Wait a second—in the first place I don't mind letting go of my territory.

On the surface it'll look like that I have nothing remaining but—that's just fine isn't it?

「I don't mind if their lives can be saved by that.」

Barnard-san questioned me.

「You will go that far to protect his highness and others? Can I ask you what make you go that far for them?」

I thought for a bit.

It will be fine to say something that will make them like me here, but I have learned that it will bring a lot of trouble if I forced myself and got favored by the higher ups.

That's why, I'll speak honestly.

「I'm tired with my position as noble. I also don't need the viscount rank. I honestly want to return it back. Actually I just wanted to spend my life leisurely as a quasi-baron or lower.」

「Hou」

I don't know what Vince-san is thinking behind the gaze that he directed at me.

「I also have lost my airship and armor. The me right now has no worth at all, so I'll start over from zero. As for me helping those six—I guess it's because of this troublesome inseparable relationship between us?」

The three listened to my talk attentively with serious expressions.

「Inseparable relationship is it? It seems his highness has obtained a good friend. Your majesty, is this fine regarding the treatment of those six?」

「Eh? A, aa, umu. I leave it to you.」

His majesty seemed to think of something when Barnard-san talked to him.

Vince-san told me to leave.

「Understood. We will take care of the rest. We have really asked a lot from you.」

「You have. That's why, please help me next. I want to retire and take it easy.」

「Having a comfortable retirement in that age? But, I guess. —I'll surely show you my gratitude.」

It's good I tried saying it.

Vince-san's gratitude—I can't help but looking forward to it.

.

Part 4

『Well, the things master lost can be recovered immediately though.』

「Oi, don't say that. It really hurt to lose that floating island. Even though that island will be able to finally produce rice, miso, and shoyu after this.」

I'm talking alone with Luxion inside my room.

『Even so, I'm amazed that they allowed master's retirement.』

「It's the fact that they're troubled of how to treat me, so the palace must also be thinking that it's not a bad idea. They might be thinking that I'm not a threat at all anymore.」

『Master seems happy.』

「I wonder~」

Now that it's over, the result settled into a form that I wished for although slightly different.

All those hard works are worth it.

「Now then, I'm thinking to depart to a new adventure journey for the sake of my new mob life but, what do you think?」

『I will accompany master. Because, master cannot do anything without me.』

「What a rude guy.」

When I become free, let's enjoy a trip in the sky using Luxion.

I have enough already of troublesome matter.

Wait a second. It will also be nice to take it easy at home. Second elder brother—no.

Now big brother Nix has joyously got promoted as the eldest brother and became the heir.

I can just help him out.

「My life is starting.」

『It hasn't started until now?』

Thinking back, various things happened since I almost got sold to perverted granny and everything was flurried.

「First I got to graduate from the academy. Eh? Is the academy going to get reopened in the first place?」

『I haven't confirmed it but, with the condition of the capital I think it won't be able to hold activity like before even if it's reopened.』

The room's door is knocked while I'm talking idly with Luxion and it opened.

Livia ran inside in a hurry.

「Leon-san, did you quit being a noble!?」

Livia is out of breath. I said 「What, you already heard about it?」 and told her to sit down.

However, Livia doesn't look like she will sit.

「Viscount peerage with lower fourth court rank doesn't suit me in the first place. I also let go of my territory, so even if I'm able to become independent I'll only have knight peerage or something at that level. Well, I'll be treated as knight more or less though.」

「Bu, but, that's horrible even though Leon-san has worked that hard. Even Ange was really—」

「Are you two worried about me? But, this is just right for me.」

「That's not it.」

Livia casted her gaze down.

She grasped her skirt tightly and tears gathered in her eyes.

「Ange, she kowtowed to Marie-san for Leon-san's sake. Now it become a problem. And yet, how can something like this happen to Leon-san too」

「—Eh?」

.

Part 5

Ange was summoned by Vince and she was questioned regarding the happening in the academy.

The reason she was called into a room inside the palace was because Vince was busy dealing with the aftermath.

「—I'm disappointed with you.」

「Yes.」

A daughter of a duke kowtowed at the academy's public square—what's more it was in front of a lot of people.

「What you did threw mud on our family's honor.」

「I understand.」

She bowed her head for Leon's sake.

She didn't regret doing that, but it was a mistaken choice if she thought about her house.

「The man who you placed your expectation on let go of his position, prestige—and even his territory. You disgraced the honor of our house for the sake of such man. How do you think I should deal with you?」

She was questioned, but Ange didn't try to answer.

She left it to Vince's decision. Even so if she had to answer—.

「Should I take my own life?」

「That's some resolve.」

Vince looked up to the ceiling.

「I can't keep a daughter like you in this house. I'll prepare a fitting person for you, so prepare to marry.」

Even this treatment could be considered affectionate.

When Ange replied 「Yes」 with a small voice, Vince smiled.

「You aren't interested who you will be married to?」

「Who will it be?」

She wasn't interested but, if she didn't at least hear the name then she wouldn't be able to investigate the person.

Vince said to Ange.

「There is this stupid knight who is trying to let go of his territory, peerage, and even his rank. He is an idiot who is thinking to retire even though he's still young but, don't you think someone like that will be a fitting husband for you?」

「Father?」

「This house will take care of it. I have also heard about your friend's circumstance but, my bad however that girl will be treated as concubine.」

It seemed that Vince was aware of the relationship of the three of them. He must had investigated thoroughly.

Vince laughed when Ange lowered her head deeply.

「Tha, thank you very much!」

「This talk is still not decided yet. I will bring it up with the person himself after—」

Gilbert ran into the room when Vince said until that far.

「Father!」

「You're too noisy.」

「Tro, trouble. Leon-kun is—」

.

Part 6

「LET GOOOOOO! I—I HAVE TO TAKE THIS GIRL'S HEADDDDD!」

I'm rampaging in the underground prison with my right hand holding a katana.

Marie is begging for her life while trembling inside her prison.

「Wait! It wasn't my fault. I was only joking when asking them to kowtow in public!」

「Is that all you want to say? Yosh, show your neck. I'll be slightly merciful and end it with one swing.」

Knights and soldiers are holding me down in the underground prison.

「Please calm down!」

「Viscount, put away your weapon!」

「I understand your feeling, so for now let's calm down!」

Marie is alone in the prison.

The other guys?

Their treatment has been decided, so they were let out of the prison and right now they are being scolded.

But more importantly—this girl is the only one I can't forgive.

「I was an idiot for pitying you. Pay for your sins with your life!」

「You told me that you will save me!」

「Do you think I'll forgive you after making Livia and Ange kowtow? I'll give you your judgment here!」

I dragged the knights and soldiers until near the iron bars, but then someone ran into the underground prison with loud footsteps.

It's Livia and Ange.

「Leon-san, wait. Calm down!」

「Just what are you thinking!?」

I turned toward the two and pointed to Marie.

「—I want her head.」

Both Livia and Ange are appalled by my words.

「Saying you want her head—Leon-san, what will you do with it?」

I wiped my eyes with my left arm. I feel guilty toward the two my tears won't stop.

「I'll present it to you two.」

「We don't need it so calm down. It won't do you any good even if you do something like this.」

It seemed Ange also doesn't need Marie's head.

The surrounding knights and soldiers also agreed with Ange and stopped me, but I've had it with Marie.

She is the only one that I have to end with my own hands.

In the previous life I had also cleaned up after her all the time, but in this life it's my duty as her former brother to assist with her beheading.

While we're making noise, Mylene-sama also came down in a hurry.

「Leon-kun, wait!」

The five guys are also behind her.

「Bartfalt, have you lost your mind!?」

I can't accept being told that by his highness Julius who has lost his mind right from the start.

「Not as bad as you!」

Marie cried toward the five.

「Everyone save me! This guy is trying to sever my neck!」

Greg grabbed my arm.

「Bartfalt, a guy like you! I absolutely won't allow you to take Marie's head!」

Chris grabbed my hand and took away my katana.

「I won't let you lay even a single finger on Marie!」

Kilk stood in front of the prison and told me.

「Step back!」

Brad grabbed my head to pull me away from the iron bars.

「What are you doing causing a ruckus even though the decision has been made!?」

「I don't want to be told that by you guys! Enough, let go of me!
—Luxion, DO ITTTT!」

Before I knew it the soldiers and knights were taking distance from me with the five surrounding me.

『Is it alright?』

「Do it already! Don't give any mercy to the guys who got in my way!」

『Then, excuse me—』

Something electrifying is emitted from Luxion and paralyzed us.

「GYAAAAA！」

The scream of six guys echoed in the dungeon. And then we collapsed.

「Yo, you! Dragging even me—」

.

Part 7

I'm sleeping on a sofa when I woke up.

Mylene-sama, and then Livia and Ange are near me.

They are relieved that I woke up and also exasperated.

「Good grief. I wondered what happened when I heard that there is a ruckus.」

I tried fawning on Mylene-sama.

「Mylene-sama—I want Marie's head please.」

Mylene-sama made a troubled face. It looked like her heart is slightly wavering at my pleading.

My tactic to stimulate her maternal instinct worked well. But, it seems that it's no good.

「I'm sorry. It'll be difficult to overturn the decision after it has been made. I'm sorry to tell you this after the many helps you have given us, but the saint has to be kept alive.」

It seems she is troubled that I'm saying I want her head after it has been decided to push the idiot six away into a floating island.

Ange is worried for me.

「What's wrong so suddenly? Didn't you want to save them so much you even presented your own territory?」

「Because she made the two of you kowtow.」

I looked down and muttered so. Livia smiled wryly.

「That was—it's」

Mylene-sama who also performed a kowtow seems to know about that matter.

「So Leon-kun didn't know. I thought you know about it, so I asked for help in the same way.」

That stupid Marie, what did she want to do spreading kowtow in this world?

I sat on the sofa holding my knees. To such me, Ange—.

「Leon, can we talk for a bit?」

「Hm?」

—When I lifted up my face, Ange and Livia are holding hands.

「A cruel truth」

Chapter 13: Game Clear

Part 1

Marie who was moved from the dungeon to a guest room is making a dissatisfied face.

「I don't want to live in countryside though.」

「What's with that attitude even after I saved you?」

I'm talking alone with the complaining Marie because I want to ask her various things.

I kept this girl alive in order to ask in detail about my parents—about what happened to them after I died.

Thinking calmly, my parents in the previous life will be sad if I kill her.

Personally I can't forgive her at all, and even if she can be forgiven I want to beat up those five.

No, wait. Would I be forgiven if I punch them if it's now?

「I'm a woman who shine in the big city!」

「You want to complain about the territory that I put much effort into establishing?」

「Big bro has this backward and negative thinking about slow life or the like, that's why it's no good.」

Slow life ain't backward or negative you idiot.

「I guess your good deed at the previous life is allowing father and mother to hold a grandchild. But other than that our parents were really pitiful.」

「Big bro yourself also died earlier than our parents!」

「The cause of my death was because of you!」

「Big bro was always grinning while playing game that has girls showing up in it! It was impossible for you to die just from that much!」

「You also grinned when playing a game that has men showing up in it though!」

While arguing it gradually grew into a talk of which was in the wrong.

「It was big bro's fault!」

「It was your fault!」

Luxion lightly floated while watching us without interest.

「Luxion, you tell her too. Tell her that it's her fault for aiming to something like a reverse harem and causing the situation to almost reach the worst result!」

「Big bro yourself is keeping the villainess and the main character for yourself!」

「In my case it's a pure relationship! It's not a licentious relationship like yours!」

「Big bro are just unable to lay your hand on them because you're a chicken and a wuss!」

「Luxion! Tell her quickly. Tell her that she is a wrong and dull witted woman!」

「The round thingy over there, say which one of us is in the right, to this pitiful and useless big bro!」

Luxion's single eye looks alternately at both of us before he replies.

『Then, allow me to say my opinion. Isn't it the parents of your previous life who are the most pitiful for having children like you two?』

—This guy, he is saying that? He is really saying that?

I abruptly cool down with guilt spreading inside my chest. Then Marie talks to me with a small voice.

『Hey, isn't this thing too cruel? Can't he read the mood?』

『It stab into the heart. I didn't want to hear those words getting said calmly like that.

『Perhaps it hurt your heart because it's the truth? Besides, can Marie face your daughter at your previous life like this?』

Marie pressed her hand on her chest and her gaze wandered around.

『Bu, but, that child isn't here—be, besides, sometimes I would meet and talk with her even after I left her on my parents' care. That's why I understand—that child won't abandon me because of something like this.』

So even someone like this girl at least has the self-awareness as a mother?

『When we had meal together she was a kind daughter who would worry for me and asked me 『Mom, are you living well?』 .』

—It seems my niece grew up wonderfully.

It's vexing that as an uncle the only thing I can do is wishing for the happiness of my niece and parents.

『If that child hear that her mother seduced six men and formed a reverse harem, she will surely cry.』

Marie fell on her knees. I held my stomach and laughed seeing her like that.

「You hear that! As I thought you're really the worst!」

『Master is also the same.』

「Eh!?」

Luxion listed my bad points.

『Even right now master is running away from the confession of those two. How about master resolve yourself already?』

Yes—that day.

I was called by those two and—.

.

Part 2

At a garden located in the palace's rooftop.

There the two of them were standing in front of me nervously.

Even I also got nervous.

The setting sun was pretty, but I didn't have any leeway to think about that.

「Leon—I love you.」

Ange looked straight at my face and confessed.

I gulped.

「I wonder when did it start. The time I was thinking of you instead of his highness increased. I had fun when together with you. I felt pleasant staying at your side.」

My mouth open and close repeatedly. Ange showed me a radiant smile.

「I love you.」

—This is the second confession in my life.

Beside her is Livia who gave me my first confession.

When I moved my head stiffly and looked at Livia, she is also smiling.

—What to do? I don't understand the meaning of this.

Why is she smiling?

Should I ask for help from Luxion? Thinking so I tried asking for help with my gaze, but there is a fake Luxion there with white spherical body.

「Who are you!?」

『It's Creare-chan. Long time no see.』

Long time no see? Just when I thought that the female electronic sound seems familiar, it's actually the AI who managed the ruin in the elf's village.

「Where is Luxion!?」

『I asked him to withdraw because his presence will be boorish here. When I told him that master will surely be troubled if he isn't present here, he happily left.』

—Isn't that guy's personality too twisted?

「Leon-san.」

「Ye, yes!」

I straightened my back and turned my body to face Livia.

「I love Leon-san even now. I believe that this feeling won't lose against anyone.」

「I, I see.」

I tried saying I see, but I never imagined this kind of situation.

I didn't have any plan in my life for a situation where I got confessed by two people at the same time.

「—That's why, please tell us. We want to know the answer here.」

Ange placed her hand on her chest while saying.

「I and Livia—no, it's fine even if there is someone else who you love. We won't hold any grudge no matter who you choose between us, and it's also fine if you choose neither of us. That's why, tell us your feeling.」

I'm thinking of a way to dodge the question and run away, but seeing the two's serious face made me resolved myself.

The wind blew—the two's hairs swayed.

The two of them who are illuminated by the setting sun looked divinely radiant.

I spread out my hands—.

「I love both of you!」

—The two of them slapped my cheeks with smiling faces.

.

Part 3

—It was amazing.

Ange slapped my cheek first, then right after that Livia's slap arrived on my opposite cheek.

It was an amazing combination.

『The worst.』

「You know, this is my second life, but getting confessed by two lovely girls at the same time was the first time for me.」

When I made that excuse, the shitty woman who did reverse harem looked at me with an appalled expression.

「Unbelievable. You're the lowest.」

「What? What does a woman who is six timing want to say to me?」

She is looking vexed when I provoked her.

And then, Marie spoke out her mind.

「—I'm reflecting. Reverse harem is really difficult and yet it doesn't make me happy at all. That was why I wanted to end it, and yet」

Even her half-baked knowledge is understandable now.

This girl only played the game until halfway and she only watched the movie and illustrations for the later part. From the start the amount of information she has is different compared to me.

As the result, she became the saint and messed up the situation—now six men are following her around.

「I sympathize with that part though.」

Marie who got fed up with reverse harem tried to dissolve her relationship with the five other than Kyle.

But, the five of them proclaimed an unexpectedly positive answer 「I swear that one day I'll make you fall in love with me」 to Marie.

Marie's current situation is one where she has to support five men who will be jobless in the future.

Good grief—we have good-for-nothing siblings here.

「Well, do your best. Though leave me out of it.」

「Haa?」

Marie is making a very surprised face, but from where I stand I think I've worked hard enough.

「I have worked more than hard enough in this world. I didn't think that Hertrude-san had a little sister, and it was really hard with you messing up the situation.」

I worked hard. I'm even thinking that I worked too hard.

「Little sister? You mean Hertrauda?」

「That's right. There is also many other things that were subtly different, perhaps this is that? The pattern that it's no good to think of this world as game world? Well, anyway, I've saved the country from danger. I'll get down from the stage from here.」

In the first place, is it possible that there will be any more event than this? If this is a game then this is where the game is cleared.

The main character Livia doesn't get together with anybody, while Marie made six guys into hers.

As the result although it's not a bad end, there is no doubt that this is one tricky situation.

But, let's be happy that the game is cleared up safely.

Marie opened her eyes wide.

She nodded several times as though she knew something and,

「—I don't think big bro know this but」

Marie said that and told me about a truth of this world that I don't know.

.

Part 4

Several days later. In a graveyard in the capital.

It's crowded with a lot of people in order to mourn those who fell in battle.

Those who lost their family.

Those who lost their lover.

Those who lost their friend.

Anyway, the other side of the tale is shown to me clearly regardless of my wish.

It's not over after winning, it's only the beginning from there.

I'm watching that sight from inside a carriage.

「It's inexcusable for the families out there, but I wanted to talk with you like this. Though it must be disappointing for you that you aren't talking with a young girl.」

The one who is sitting in front of me is Mylene-sama.

I was invited after the ceremony and we got into a carriage like this.

「The way Mylene-sama said that is a bit thorny. Are you angry?」

「You are always like that. You looked like you're flippantly laughing to the surrounding while keeping the problem to yourself. There are dark circles under your eyes.」

I touched below my eye with my finger. —I couldn't sleep too yesterday.

Perhaps I should make Luxion prepare sleeping medicine for me?

「Thank you very much for the matter this time. There is also only one remaining ceremony.」

There are various ceremonies being held like victory celebration and the like. The busy days are continuing.

「Is it about my dismissal and reward?」

「That's right. Although it was only temporarily, you still became the supreme commander. Besides, you showed result.」

At the surface I will receive huge rewards from the kingdom.

It's me who is giving various things to the kingdom, but it'll be no good if they don't make a show publicly that I received reward.

The kingdom will be troubled if they don't do that.

Because if they don't give punishment and reward strictly, the lower level will be dissatisfied.

「This is the first time there is someone who wish for demotion as their reward.」

Even if it's impossible to immediately demote me, but by doing it bit by bit for several years—I will become a mere knight at the end.

「The position of viscount with rank lower 4 in the court is too heavy for me. I have also lost my territory, being a simple knight is just right for me. I'm useless now that I can't use Partner and Arroganz.」

Mylene-sama made an apologetic face.

When I told her it's payback for just now, she looked away with a sulky face.

What an adorable thirty year old. I wanted to push her down.

「Also, about that mater, it's accepted without any problem.」

「That's great.」

A situation that is convenient for me is getting formed.

「What bothers me is your Lost Item. Does it look like they can be repaired?」

「They are collected but it will be difficult. They are being stored in our workshop.」

「—We have really relied completely on Leon-kun. Please tell me if there is anything that I can do. I will respond to the best of my ability.」

For an instant—really just for an instant I imagined an erotic delusion, but the other person is the queen.

My head will fly if I laid my hand on her.

「I'll consider it a debt. That way will be more interesting.」

「We have made a lot of large debts.」

We kept talking about various things like that and before long the palace came into view from the carriage's window.

Now then, let's do the last job.

.

Part 5

In the waiting room.

My family is there being noisy and hurried.

「I, is it fine like this?」

「Dear, your button is fixed wrong.」

There is mother tidying father's disordered outfit. While at a different spot big bro is checking his attire in front of a mirror.

Because of his participation in the war, it's decided that father will advance in rank to rank "upper" six.

「Why do I have to come too? There shouldn't be any need with father and Leon here.」

I calmed down the complaining big bro.

「Isn't it because big bro will be the next baron? It's great that your first campaign ended in a flashy victory.」

「I didn't do anything though. More importantly, what happened with big brother Ludward? No, he isn't actually our but brother but, I'm curious what will happen to their family from now.」

An airship fell during the defensive battle on Zola's mansion and they lost everything.

The capital itself is in a tatter. It will be busy with reconstruction work for a while.

But this world has armor that acted like powered suit, so the work is advancing without problem.

「Ludward had even his knight title stripped away because of desertion under enemy attack. In the first place Zola is just a noble's daughter. She doesn't have any court rank so she is neglected. Now Ludward isn't even a knight, so perhaps they're treated as commoner?」

Zola who is abandoned by father can only return to her family.

But even that family ran away from the war and it's decided that their house will be erased.

A lot of noble houses are erased. Zola's family is also included among them. —That's all there is to it.

「You're detailed.」

「I heard from Mylene-sama.」

Big bro is making a really conflicted expression.

「Why are you close with the queen like that? —I don't think it's possible but, you aren't laying your hand on her right? Stop it. Really stop it! I don't want to get dragged into your trouble even more than this!」

How rude. Even I understood that much.

「More importantly, where is big sis? I thought that if it's her she'll come to this kind of ceremony happily.」

「Jena is shutting herself in her room. She ranted after father killed her exclusive servant. Yumeria-san is taking care of her.」

I got the feeling that she'll get out of her room right away if she is given a new slave.

But, it seems that the academy is going to drastically change its policy, so even that is going to be impossible.

There is talk about abolishing the system of exclusive servant. The talk is progressing well to that direction.

It seems that Jena's exclusive servant Miall setting me up also became a problem. Also, the male camp is eager to use this chance to thoroughly crush the exclusive servant system.

Woman's grudge is scary but, man's grudge is also amazing. The male camp is united as one to re-examine the system.

The door of the waiting room is knocked. It seems the time has come.

「—Now then, let's finish this last job.」

This will really be the last.

.

Part 6

The audience hall.

I kneeled on the red carpet that is leading to the throne while listening to his majesty's words.

Everyone's work this time is truly splendid—starting from there his majesty also praised the surrounding nobles who participated in the war with grandiose speech.

While I'm wondering if he can hurry it up with the speech, his majesty said.

「Viscount—no, Count Leon Fou Bartfalt. You are dismissed from your position as the supreme commander. And then I grant you an advancement to the peerage of count and the court rank of lower third!」

While the surrounding nobles broke into murmurs, I kept looking down while my eyes snapped wide open.

—This idiot, what the hell is he saying?

「Yo, your majesty. Ple, please permit me to speak!」

I'm in shock from the sudden happening, but when I asked for permission to speak, his majesty twirled his moustache while looking down at me and said.

「I allow it.」

「My deepest gratitude! Can I ask your majesty what do you mean by count, and also the court rank of lower third? Such position for a youngster like me is—」

In my shock first I tried to convey how 「Me as count is impossible! And I can't do anything even if you give me court rank!」 to his majesty.

Even my surrounding is the same.

Among the voices that entered my ears I can hear things like 「Being a count in that age?」 「That's extreme even for being an

upstart」 「It's unprecedented to become a count in a single generation」 「Lower third—isn't that effectively a top rank?」 and so on.

When talking about court rank of lower third—that's already the rank of cabinet minister class.

The upper third that is above that rank is a rank for people related with the royal family.

I'm not happy at all even if I received such rank!

Even if you tell a student that he is going to be a cabinet minister starting tomorrow, he's just going to be 「Ha?」 won't he? That's like being the top brass in a company. That student isn't going to be able to take responsibility, much less doing any work!

When I lifted my head, his majesty—the son of a bitch Roland is looking down at me while smirking.

「The kingdom has to award you with the suitable peerage and court rank after you raised an achievement to this degree. Haha, there is no need to worry. If it's you then one day you will surely show a performance and contribution that are suitable for your peerage and rank.」

Thank you for your high evaluation of me, I'm going to vomit now!

This guy know.

This guy did something like this knowing that I'm not going to like it.

When I looked around, I can see that the officials are also in panic.

Mylene-sama also opened her eyes wide. It looks like she hasn't heard anything about this.

—This damn bastard, he promoted me without telling anyone beforehand.

Don't screw around.

When I'm about to say something, Roland opened his mouth first.

He talked with a theatrical act that stunk.

「Come forward if there is anyone who has any complaint.」

No one stepped forward.

Even if there is anyone who disliked my promotion, they will be troubled if my promotion is cancelled.

It's because they understood that if I'm not promoted, in the future—it would become hard to advance in rank no matter what kind of achievement they raised.

When their promotion is considered, their achievement would be compared with my effort and a lot of them would become unable to get the promotion.

「Count Bartfalt, I shall anticipate your contribution in the future.」

「I, it's a great honor to hear that from your majesty.」

How nice it would be if I could yell 「Don't screw around!」 here.

There is also my family here.

My family can also get troubled depending on my attitude.

These damn son and parent, heaping troubles on me like this.

Looking at that bastard Roland's smirk, I swore in my heart.

—I'll pay you back one day.

.

Part 7

I went berserk after I returned to the room.

「That son of a bitch! Even though I told him I don't want to get promoted, he intentionally made a count!」

I threw the cushion that was placed on the sofa.

Throwing a fragile object is scary so I can't do it.

Father and mother are whispering to each other seeing me.

「Say, how should I talk to my son now that he became a count? Should I use polite language with Leon as I thought?」

「Ma, maybe? But, it's unthinkable that child will be bothered about something like that.」

「But he's a count now. Rank of lower third, that's a god-like existence for us.」

「—Then, polite language it is.」

I turned toward the two and yelled with my finger pointed to them.

「A count in name only without any substance is just a joke! Something like this is just a bullying from the palace! Also, parents using polite language is disgusting so rejected!」

Big bro recalled something and said.

「You know, there's that. If father returned the workshop to Leon, your income will also increase.」

「I'm not going to be troubled if this can be solved with just that!」

The income from the workshop is considerable. It's considerable but—it's no good.

The position of count is very high.

It's not something that can be covered with the income of just one workshop.

Father hit his palm with his fist and said 「That's right!」 .

「Then what if you just go and become a palace noble? Look, you will get yearly wage from the palace then. You don't need to worry even if you don't have territory!」

「Impossible. Absolutely impossible! With my rank it's like the class of cabinet minister! I can't do the work at the level of a cabinet minister!」

「Seems so. I think this country will be over if you become a cabinet minister or some kind of big shot.」

I threw a cushion at my frank father. I ran out of the room.

「I'll leave this kind of country!」

Mother called out at my back.

「Come back before dinner!」

—Yes.

.

Part 8

A voice called at me while I'm walking through the corridor.

「Oi!」

It's Ange running toward me while slightly lifting up her skirt with both hands so she won't stumble.

Today she is wearing dress to participate in the ceremony.

When she caught up to me, she calmed down her breathing.

She must have happened to catch sight of me and hurriedly ran after me. Her cheeks are slightly red.

「What's the meaning of just now? Did you know about it?」

She must mean what happened in the audience hall. I shook my head powerlessly.

「It was something that his majesty decided arbitrarily. Even I didn't hear anything about it.」

「Well, certainly you couldn't be demoted in that place. It's also a fact that it'll be convenient for the kingdom to promote you. But, even father didn't know about it.」

That guy, did he really decide to do that without consulting anyone?

What a troublesome family.

Whether it's his highness Julius or the son of a bitch Roland, all of them are the worst.

「What now? What do you think I should do? I'm troubled even if I'm seriously promoted into a count.」

「Ri, right. Even if you're given peerage but right now you don't even have house or territory. There will be problem even if you become a palace noble, I think the best way here will be to obediently marry into a noble family.」

Marry into a family?

「If you marry into a powerful noble family, they might prepare a new house and territory for their daughter. If you can marry into such family, you will also obtain a backer. That'll be a really good deal for you.」

So there is also such a way. While I'm thinking that, Clarice-senpai showed up also wearing a dress.

「Oh, it's not like you need to marry into a noble family, you can also establish a new house. Right now the nobles in the kingdom are reduced in number too much. It will be a chance if you go independent.」

Due to the incident this time, the kingdom crushed many houses.

It went without saying for the houses that were connected with the principality, but those who ignored the kingdom's call for reinforcement are also crushed and their territory confiscated with no question asked. Various punishments are waiting for them.

In other words, there is a lack of manpower there is also an excess of territory, so it will be easy to go independent.

「Clarice, what's your business?」

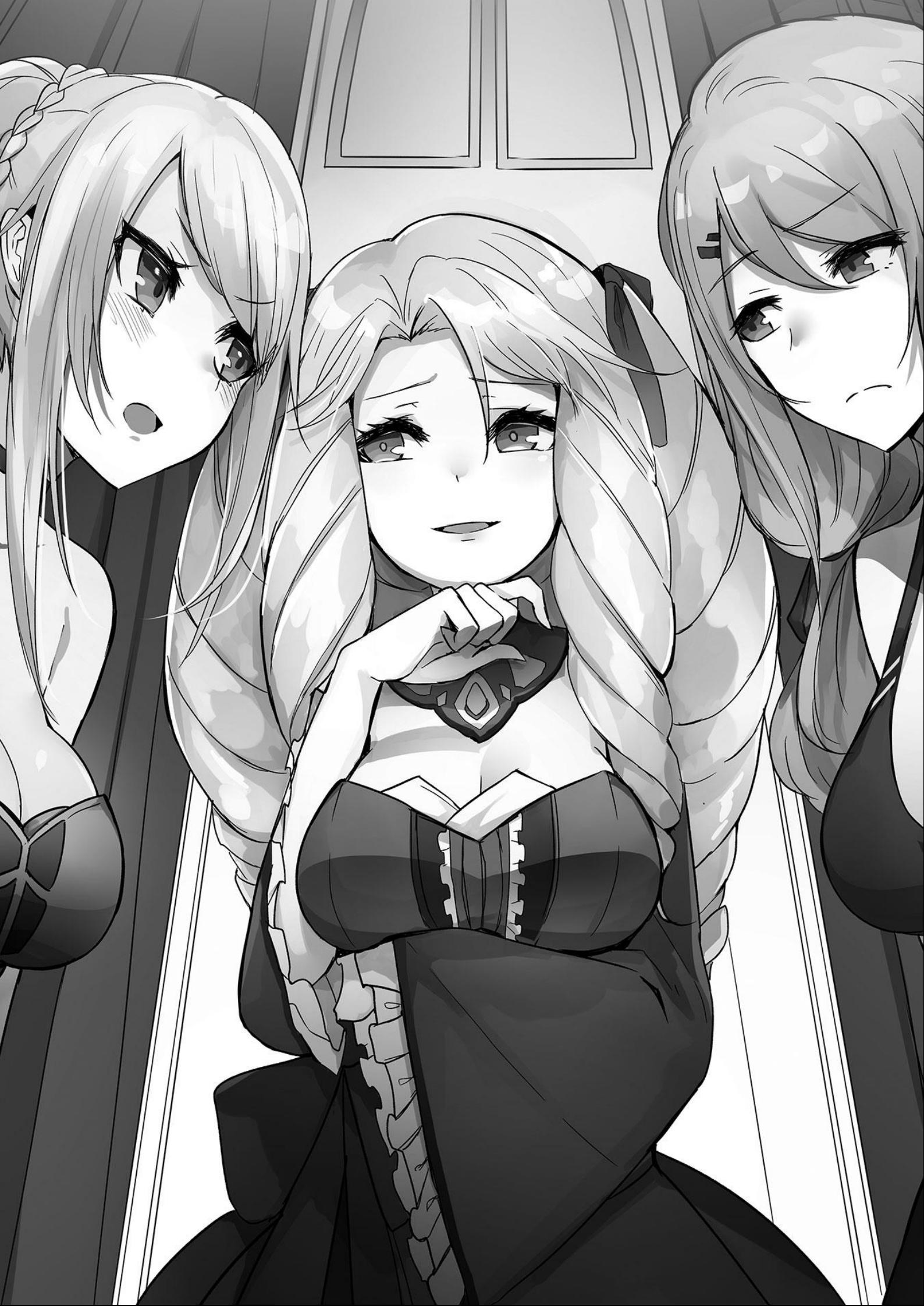
「It will be troublesome if you marry into a noble house. It also will be bad for your reputation if a count marry into other house.」

「Leon's case is an exception.」

The two started to quarrel.

「Marrying into other house, or going independent—but, in the you will go independent in both options won't you?」

Then Deirdre-senpai who is wearing a showy dress is approaching this way.



「I've been listening from some time ago, but I wonder just what are the two of you talking about?」

Clarice-senpai glared at Deirdre-senpai, but the person herself is making a composed expression.

「Can I ask you to not disturb us, Deirdre-senpai.」

「Claiming that there is only the option of being a feudal lord noble when it come to going independent, I think that both of you are too narrow-sighted.」

Ange raised an eyebrow and asked.

「—What do you mean by that?」

Deirdre-senpai threw out her chest and brazenly talked about my future.

「Right now Roseblade House is considering to have a palace noble as branch house. It seems that the number of palace noble has also decreased by a lot, so it's something to aim for. As for substance—Roseblade House will prepare it so the count can use that status and prestige to your heart's content.」

In other words, she is telling me to become the head of Roseblade House's branch family?

Is this also marrying into a family?

The three started to glare at each other, so I followed my instinct that is telling me it'll be better to escape soon and got away from that place sneakily.

Then, 「Kyah」 I heard such adorable voice and my legs naturally headed that way.

I walked through the corridor for a bit and turned at the corner. There I found Livia wearing a dress.

It looked like she stepped on the dress's skirt because she isn't used to wear one and fell.

There is a man who is offering a hand to Livia who fell like that.

「Are you alright, young lady?」

「Ye, yes.」

「That's good. If you like, how about we relax in the room over there?」

Livia's gaze wandered around looking troubled, so I approached the son of a bitch.

This playboy bastard who talked to Livia is someone hateful for me.

「Your majesty, aren't you embarrassed hitting on a girl in the palace like this?」

「Fool. Everyone did something like this—mu, so it's you.」

When he noticed that it's me, he turned around and showed a very delighted grin.

「Hey there count. How does it feel to get a promotion?」

「It's the worst. What happened to the talk about demotion? If I'm promoted, it'll be troublesome to demote me later on so my peerage will be left as it is, wasn't that what we talked about!?」

「That? Aa, I thought that. But, it was really troublesome. If the hero who saved the country get treated like that, my dignity will come into doubt. After careful deliberation, I concluded that as expected you should be promoted.」

「——I'll get demoted from here on right?」

「That's if you do something that become cause for demotion.」

This guy, he looks excessively happy messing around with me.

「This is different from the promise.」

「Aa, indeed. This also pains my heart. But you see, I hate you. So I decided that I won't do anything that makes you happy.」

This guy, he is telling me right at my face that he hate me.

While I'm getting taken aback, Roland got into a good mood and continued talking with theatrical hand and body gestures.

「It's unforgivable that you stood out even more than me before the war. What's with that 『If that is what your majesty wish for』 . Acting cool like that, it was unforgivable. It's your fault from getting in my way even though it was finally my time to show off.」

「Eh? That's the reason?」

Livia is standing still looking flustered.

Her troubled expression is cute.

But, the problem is the old man in front of me.

「That was the only time I could show off. I wanted to fluster you with my speech and then make fun of you before showing my dignity as adult, but you ruined my plan. Your conversation with the marquis after that was also standing out. It was irritating.」

「Your reason isn't because I beat up your son or wooing your wife?」

The son of a bitch Roland folded his arms and stared at me from my toes until the top of my head.

「You're really trash. But, I won't be fit for life in the palace if I get angry from just that much. It's my son's responsibility for getting beaten up, and even if you woo my queen I'll only think 『So?』 at this point. Though I'll sentence you to death if you lay your hand on my concubine.」

—Eh? Isn't this guy just plainly a trash? Isn't he a worse trash than me?

Roland turned back at Livia, straightened his posture, and offered her a hand.

「Now, young lady. Shall we create a memory of a night together?」

Come to think of it, the queen was also the main character's enemy.

But, in the game scenario the king was an understanding person for some reason.

I never thought that the reason for that was because he is a dirty old man who like young girl.

An otome game should have a king that let the player dream!

「Will I get demoted if I beat you up here?」

「Brat. It looks like you want to get death sentence. Very well, I'll call the palace guards here!」

Even his reliance on the guards is pathetic. While I'm thinking that,

「—Your majesty.」

Mylene-sama came with maids following her.

Roland tried to run away when he heard her voice, so I grabbed his hand.

「Le, let go!」

「Where are you going, your majesty~」

He made an amazing face when I smirked and grabbed his arm tightly. It made me want to laugh.

「Yo, you! I'll sentence you to death for real!」

「Mylene-sama! His majesty wants to execute me. Help!」

「You're making an advance to a young girl again! And then you're going to execute the one who remonstrate you for that! What's with that!? Even though the count is the hero of the kingdom. I really won't forgive you today.」

「Yo, you're wrong! This is my duty as a royalty! Making child is like a royal duty. Nothing wrong with me laying hand on young girl!」

「Just how many mistresses you're keeping already with that excuse!」

Mylene-sama dragged Roland away to somewhere.

My quarrel with Roland closed the curtain with my victory.

「Evil is driven away.」

Livia smiled wryly.

「Sa, say, Leon-san. Err—」

「Hm? Aa, that dress. It looks good on you.」

「Thank you very much. Tha, that's not it!」

Livia put her hands on her chest and took a deep breath.

「About the matter before」

She grabbed my hand when I averted my gaze.

「Why won't you answer us properly?」

What came to mind when I looked at Livia sending me an upward gaze with moist eyes is, how happy I will be if I have a girl like this as wife—that kind of delusion.

Even I want to nod if it's alright but—why are the two of them in love with me?

I should choose between them?

This me?

「I don't mind if you tell us that we are no good. But, we want a proper answer.」

Also—I acted like this world is a game, but is it okay for someone like me to fall in love with these girls who are living with all their effort in this world?

What is my difference with Marie who I had thoroughly criticized?

—That's why I'm troubled.

Livia tensed her expression seriously, and then she slightly widened her feet before telling me boldly.

「If Leon-san won't make your answer clear, then I too have my own plan.」

「Wha, what!?」

「I absolutely—absolutely will make Leon-san turn toward me!」

What a manly thinking.

When those five said the same thing I thought 「Those guys are really idiot」 , but when looking at Livia, I felt a manliness from her that made me want to say 「AnegoBig sister!」 .

I'll fall for her instantly if I'm a woman.

「That's why, please be together with me. Please be together with me forever.」

Livia's attitude changed completely and she looked like she is going to cry. I scratched my head and answered her.

「Sorry. That's impossible.」

Epilogue

Part 1

The spring back came a bit faster.

I returned home and showed up at the workshop.

In front of me I can see a 200 meter class airship with a single horn as its characteristic, the Einhorn.

Its appearance has a lot of decoration.

「That's a lot of decoration.」

『Prepare an airship that won't be shameful as the representative of Hohlfahrt. That's the condition from the palace.』

People and robots are doing work in the workshop.

The robots are working while the people are in charge of the miscellaneous jobs.

The workshop has only operated for several months, so there isn't anything like skilled technician here.

Perhaps there would be some among them who could be entrusted with the work after several years passed.

Until then the robots will do the works in their place.

「Partner cannot be shown even though its repair is finished. It's really troublesome. Eh? What about Creare?」

『She is staying in the capital. It looks like she took a liking to Olivia and Angelica.』

「She is an AI who is even more free than you huh.」

『I can't deny that. Well, she won't do any betrayal so it will be fine. More importantly, master will have it hard from here on.』

The reason I prepared a new airship is—for studying abroad.

『To think that otome game—has a sequel. It's completely unexpected.』

I recalled my conversation with Marie.

.

Part 2

That day when I talked with Marie in the palace.

I learned a new truth of this world—and trembled.

『I don't think big bro know this but—that otome game became a game series you know?』

「—Eh?」

It seemed that game with bad balance and caused dissatisfaction to explode from the users became a series.

It's good that Marie taught me various things but, what's with her self-important attitude?

『Hertrauda is a character that came out in the third game.』

『Thi, third game!? Oi, wait. Wait a second!』

If there is a third game, that means there is the second game in between.

—I never heard anything like that.

「It's obvious that big bro doesn't know. Big bro died after clearing the first game. The sequel came out after that. Julius's little brother appeared in the third game.」

「That guy has a little brother!?」

「He has. The king has concubines and he was born from a different mother. That's why he is a cool character who is a bit shadowy. He has this outlaw atmosphere.」

I don't want to hear about that inconsequential setting.

But, now that she mentioned it, I had seen someone like that several times in the audience hall.

I completely thought that Julius is the only prince.

Thinking carefully, certainly it'll be a problem if there is only one prince.

「Could it be, the two monsters that I didn't know about were the last bosses of the third game?」

「That's right. The guardian deities of the sky and the sea were the last bosses of the third game. By the way, the starting time of the third game is when Julius and others are third year. That's why, not only it's connected with the first game's events, it also came with special perks where you can enjoy the event after their graduation.」

I don't need such information—was what I thought, but there was that kind of event?

I don't know about any event of his highness Julius's little brother enrolling into the academy.

「No, in the game there wasn't any event of Julius's little brother enrolling when he is at third year though.」

「What are you saying? —It's obviously a setting that is added later.」

—Thank you for the blunt explanation.

Of course it is. That can't be helped then—you think I'm gonna accept that huh!

「Bu, but, the last bosses has been defeated, so it's already fine isn't it? The danger to the kingdom has left right?」

Marie smirked.

「Big bro, the stage for the second game isn't Hohlfahrt, it's Alzer Commonwealth.」

Eh? I've heard that country name before.

「Wa, wait. Wait! Then—」

「The second game's last boss is in good health.」

I looked at Marie's smirking face while holding my head and sat down on the spot.

「NO WAYYYYYY!」

There is no way this can happen. This world—that otome game has a sequel and the danger to the world isn't over, I don't want to believe that. Even though I thought that everything is over!

Marie is showing composure in front of me with a triumphant smile.

「Now then, let's negotiate.」

When she understood that I don't have any knowledge about the events ahead, she judged that there is ground for negotiation.

She is moving things ahead really confidently.

「What's with that haughty attitude.」

「Is it alright for big bro to say that? I have the game knowledge that big bro doesn't have.」

「—What do you want?」

「Let's see. First—I want allowance! I wish for living expense!」

Marie suddenly kowtowed. Her request is allowance.

「You don't need it right? You guys are going to get stuffed into a floating island, any necessary items should be prepared for you. Or rather, that island already has the necessary items for living.」

「That's not it! Our life there will have to be self-sufficient to teach everyone about a little hardship! Any necessary items and the likes will be prepared for us but, this is those five we're talking about you know? Kyle and Cara will be fine, but do you think those five can do something like farming? They'll absolutely fail.」

Well, they were ignorant young masters, being suddenly told to farm will be too high of a hurdle for them.

Or rather, Cara is going to come along with you too?

「I'll send big bro with things like rice and the like periodically, so please give me living expense! Everyone's family is also seriously angry, so I can't expect any allowance from them!」

The reason why Marie is anxious about her living from now is because those five are showing attitude like 「Just farming must be easy」.

The cause of her anxiety came from their carefree thinking that life of self-sufficiency won't be bad.

「It's impossible. If I leave it to those five, it will surely fail. My instinct told me that. Because, everyone is saying the same lines like my ex-boyfriend in my previous life. They're the same with my ex who had naïve thinking and spoke about dream and what not or that he will manage somehow even though he relied on me for money!」

What a coincidence. I also felt the same. I can already clearly picture those guys failing.

More importantly, Marie is really popular among useless men. Is it the useless men who approached her, or is it her who turned men into useless men—now, which is it? Perhaps she is even sending out signal that attract useless men to her?

Marie seriously and earnestly requested to me.

「That's why, I'll sell big bro the information so please give me allowance!」

I also wanted the information, so I shall accept her request.

「I'll give you allowance, so talk about that Alzer Commonwealth.」

「Thank you big bro!」

Marie rejoiced that she can receive allowance and stood up while doing a little dance.

When I told her to talk already, Marie coughed and talked about Alzer Commonwealth.

「Alzer Commonwealth is a country of noble commonwealth. It's more advanced than the kingdom and there is an academy where even the commoners can enroll. There the main character will get along with the boys who are the conquest targets.」

So it's an academy setting like the first game.

「And then, the main character is a girl who descended from a great noble house that should have been crushed.」

「Hm~」

「At the end, that main character and the conquest target will revive the noble house but—」

I'm dumbfounded by the information from Marie.

.

Part 3

「Stop it already with the danger to the world if the conquest failed. Spare me.」

In short, the world will be doomed if things doesn't go well with the main character of the second game.

This world is always under the risk of destruction due to love affairs huh.

『Master is really a worrywart.』

「No way I can just ignore a danger to the world! Shit, even though I'll be able to live my second year in the academy normally if I don't know anything.」

『Master now is a count with court rank of lower third after all, surely you will be very popular. The marriage situation is also going to improve due to the case this time, so the boy will be in the position to choose this time and yet—master has to study abroad, it must be hard.』

You can say that the marriage situation has changed 180 degrees.

In the middle of that, the clever girls are starting to panic.

『If master stay here, a happy academy life for master will be waiting, and yet...』

『Even I want to stay here. But, I also can't leave this problem alone.』

The problem is the existence of reincarnator like us.

That kind of existence hasn't been confirmed but, if they existed—what if they do as they please like Marie and pushed the world into danger at the end. I cannot have a peace of mind when I thought of that.

Even though I have worked hard until now, it will be pointless if the world is destroyed.

『We're going to observe the situation while studying abroad. If nothing happen then it will end with me simply studying abroad.』

『Will it be fine about the language?』

『I've learned simple things like greeting, but I think it'll be impossible to have conversation.』

『I'll be able to translate though?』

「Then say that from the start! I've already studied extra hard which was really unlike me!」

『Master should do your best just like that.』

Big bro came for me while I'm making noise.

「Leon, father is calling for you.」

「Father is?」

Part 4

What is waiting for me when I showed my face in father's office is—a talk of marriage.

「Marriage ceremony?」

「No, an engagement ceremony. I'll have you join it too so prepare properly beforehand.」

「Could it be it's for big sis?」

「Jena is no good. Mum said that she can't even do housework properly so we can't send her out to marry. Right now it's the girl who has it hard to marry after all. If we want to marry off Jena, it's essential to train her in homemaking arts.」

Setting aside the academy, the number of male is fewer than the female in general.

The position of the male regarding marriage is stronger.

Amidst that, Jena who can't do housework at all is out of question.

She is in the middle of reeducation with mother.

She will be able to somehow land herself a husband if we used my connection or my status as hero.

But, my parents seems to think that it won't be a laughing matter if we do that. They absolutely won't allow it.

Then, this engagement must be for big bro.

Right now big bro is a heir of a baron house and he is helping with father's work.

He also has graduated from the academy, so it won't be strange for him to marry.

「Why is it not marriage?」

「There are various circumstances. Sorry that it's too rushed like this but, you need to participate too before you go studying abroad.」

From the way father spoke, it'll be big bro's engagement ceremony as I thought.

「I don't really mind.」

「I see. Then go prepare.」

.

Part 5

I got out of the room and walked down the stairs. I found Jena who was promoted from second daughter to eldest daughter there.

She is being taught the way to clean by Yumeria-san.

「My lady, it's no good if you are wiping that crudely. You have to wipe thoroughly like this.」

Big sis who is staying quiet looked extremely dissatisfied.

「Ah, don't! Do it like this—」

Even though she is being taught to sweep by Yumeria-san who is this adorable despite being a mother of one child, big sis threw away the dust cloth.

「I can't do this! A chore like this can be left to the servant!」

「Bu, but, I'm told to teach my lady to clean.」

It seems big sis hasn't understood the reality yet. She is still dreaming all the time.

「There will be heirs of baron house when I return to the academy. I can just marry with them. Ah, Leon! Introduce your friends to me. This time I'll tolerate even if they're just feudal lord noble in the countryside.」

Yumeria-san is looking panicked. She bowed her head at me.

I told her 「Aa, it's fine」 with a kind smile, then I turned a ridiculing smile toward big sis.

「Oi, you've got guts talking like that to a count. Also, my friends are already receiving passionate approach from girls. They got a lot of choices available. Someone like big sis won't even enter their sight.」

—I'm really envious at them.

My position as count got in the way and the girls who approached me are all young ladies from houses that aren't laughing matter. I'm happy that many young ladies are fussing over me but, I can't carelessly play with them because if I lay my hand on them then I'll be made to take responsibility right away.

「Yo, you, what's with that attitude toward your big sister!」

「I wish you won't forget how I covered up for you after you got into trouble because of your slave's fault.」

In fact, because Miall lent his hand to Marquis Frampton, big sis herself almost got asked to take responsibility too.

It was me who settled it somehow with the power of money.

When I looked at big sis biting her lips in frustration—my mood brightened up. Today is really a refreshing day.

「E, err, young master? No. Lord count? E, eh? A, anyway, Leon-sama, Jena-sama is pitiful.」

I'm healed by Yumeria-san.

For me who only have sisters with trash personality, this person is an existence who is like an adorable little sister.

Though in reality she is older than me and a mother of a child.

This slightly clumsy atmosphere of hers is nice. In addition she is serious and kind.

This person is the best.

「I'll forgive you in deference to Yumeria-san but, work a bit harder. Seriously speaking, there won't be any prospect for big sis to marry at this rate.」

「—I, if I can just return to the academy, I'll have my picks of boys there.」

「Look at reality. Right now the number of men is fewer while the women are in excess.」

When I laughed at her, big sis picked up the dust cloth and threw it at me.

She got worked up and her face became bright red. It's really funny.

I cleanly dodged. Mother saw that happened.

「Jena. It looks like you still don't understand.」

「Kaa-san! Forgive me already!!」

I watched Jena running away while laughing.

I'm hearing how the marriage situation is improved but—watching big sis made me felt that the path ahead is still long.

.

Part 6

Night.

I'm lying down in my room and idly talked with Luxion.

I'm getting sleepy so I'm not really conscious of my reply.

『So master's older brother will be engaged.』

「Looks like it. I've got to congratulate him.」

『By the way master, between Olivia and Angelica—does master feel like choosing either one of them?』

「Even I myself don't understand my own feeling. I like the two of them but, as expected I'm scared when thinking of the responsibility and so on.」

I got sleepy and yawned, then Luxion formed a conclusion as he pleased.

『In other words, master like them so much you can't choose either of them?』

「That's right. That was why I said I loved both of them and got slapped. Even though I answered honestly, that was just horrible.」

『Does master has the intent to marry either of them?』

「It'll be nice if I can do that. In the first place I won't be troubled if I can do that. I love them though. It's because I love them that I want them to be happy—but I'm not suited for them.」

They are too much of good girls that someone like me isn't suitable for them.

Those girls even kowtowed for my sake you know?

If they're going to marry then they might as well marry with even better man and become happy.

『Right now master is a count and a hero. Master is suitable enough for them.』

「—I don't want to make use of my status. —After all it'll make me feel I've done bad thing to them.」

『Is that so—master, I'm looking forward to tomorrow.』

「Yeah. Let me sleep already. I'll sleep—and tomorrow morning—」

When I closed my eyes, I could see Livia and Ange smiling happily.

.

Part 7

The next morning.

I'm wearing an extravagant attire in the waiting room for relatives.

「Isn't this strange? Big bro is the main star of today right?」

Big bro is also wearing an expensive suit, but mine is more eye-catching.

「—You know, it's because you're the count. I'm just the heir of a baron house. Perhaps it's that difference?」

「No, that's not good. It'll be better if big bro is the one who dressed crisply.」

My little brother Collin looked up at me.

「Leon-niichan's clothes are amazing! They're sparkling.」

Father is standing nervously in front of the door.

Perhaps it's just my imagination, but he seems to be cautious toward me.

When I looked around inside the room, mother is also fidgety without any composure.

「Luxion, isn't the situation strange?」

『Everyone must be nervous.』

Well, perhaps it can't be helped because it's big bro's engagement ceremony but—it feels strange.

「We aren't going to greet the woman's relatives?」

Big bro averted his gaze from me.

「—It's that kind of arrangement. The greeting will be after everything is over.」

This engagement ceremony is really hurried.

I'm thinking that while waiting in the room, then father looked at the clock—.

「It's time. Yosh, let's go. Leon is over here.」

「Yes ye~s」

This is the first time I attended something like an engagement ceremony, so I'm looking forward to it a little.

The main star today is big bro, so I'm also relaxed. I'm planning to tease him later.

.

Part 8

「—Father, what's the meaning of this?」

「It's just as you see.」

The engagement ceremony is held in a place that is like the church in my previous life—a temple.

A red carpet is laid out on the floor and there are couches lined up beside it for the attendants to sit.

Participating in this ceremony are people from the duke house—including Vince-san, there are a lot of big wigs here.

Big bro nonchalantly mingled among the attendants.

Deeper inside there are two women wearing pure white dress waiting.

「You guys tricked me!」

「Don't speak something that sound bad in people's ear like that. I never said that it's Nix's engagement ceremony even once. It was only your misunderstanding.」

The two who are waiting for me are Livia and Ange no matter how I saw it.

Their faces are hidden behind a veil, but I immediately identified them from their figure.

In addition even Vince-san is attending. I don't have any place to escape if they went this far!

「I never heard anything about this!」

「—It's because you're acting irresolute and pathetic. If it's not made clear before you study abroad, who knows what you will do there.」

Even I have been thinking a lot about this! —Don't call me irresolute.

I just don't want to take responsibility!

Father looked at Vince-san.

「You will throw mud at the duke's face if you run away here.」

「You're the worst. Creating this kind of situation where I can't run away is really the worst thing to do! —Wait a second. Luxion, don't tell me you knew about this?」

Luxion is floating nearby. For some reason he looked delighted to me.

〔Yes. I think that master who won't make it clear is pathetic as a man, so I arranged this.〕

What have you done?

Gilbert-san came over here while we are arguing at the entrance.

He is smiling but, it doesn't reach his eyes.

「Leon-kun, the two of them are waiting. You can't keep them waiting forever. Or perhaps, you are dissatisfied with Ange?」

「Do, don't be absurd.」

I, I have no dissatisfaction.

But, as a man I still want to play around more, and yet!

I never heard about any engagement before this!

Father is making a troubled face and told me about my situation.

「You don't know about it but, there are a lot of request for marriage interview coming to me. There are also a lot of marriage interview request that don't give a damn about appearance anymore which is troubling. The oldest is at her fifty while the age of the youngest hasn't even reached double digit you know? Even you don't want that right?」

—Noble society is really rotten.

Previously there was also talk of marriage with fifty years old hag, but a girl whose age hasn't even reached double digit, isn't she still a kid?

—Not a chance. No way in hell.

Gilbert-san added on father's talk.

「If you get engaged with Ange, you will be freed from those annoying matter. Besides, you don't hate her right?」

When I looked at Luxion, he averted his single eye from me.

This guy, he blabbed about my feeling to other people.

「Bu, but, I'll be studying abroad.」

「Yeah, that's exactly why you should get engaged before departing. When we consulted his majesty too, he gladly approved this marriage. He also entrusted me with a message.」

He took out a single paper and when I spread it open—I immediately crushed it in my hand.

.

『Welcome to the graveyard of life. Also, when I heard about how you are running around to escape from marriage, I did all I can to direct the talk to the direction of you marrying the two of them. You can cry tears of gratitude and thank me. From the capable and wonderful king』

.

—I absolutely won't forgive that son of a bitch.

Father pushed on my back.

「Go there already! Those two young ladies are too good for the like of you. Or rather, you are really a troublesome fellow. Those two are saying that they will marry you. Be happier. What are you thinking being so irresolute like this? Get married already. I'm getting annoyed just from watching you.」

I'm refraining because they are too good for me!

When I looked toward the venue, I felt Vince-san's gaze.

—His gaze is scary that I took a step forward.

When I walked on the carpet, applauses broke out.

Big bro saw my face and averted his gaze. Big sis saw how I acted and gave applause with a nasty smile.

Yumeria-san and some more are giving applause while crying tears of joy.

Mother? She is crying. She is saying 「To think that child will have wives this good coming for him」 .

Those words gouged deeply into my heart. —The faces of my parents in the previous life surfaced in my mind.

When I arrived between the two who are standing side by side, Ange talked to me with a small voice.

「Sorry to ambush you like this.」

「You don't need to go this far.」

Livia slightly casted her gaze down, even so she spoke reproachfully at me.

「It's because Leon-san is always avoiding to answer.」

No, I'm still like a student in his second year of high school based on my age.

I think it's still too early for me to marry. Is it because my common sense from previous life is still remaining in me?

「Don't blame me later okay. You two might get fed up with me in the future and think if only I didn't marry him at that time.」

Livia replied with a smile hearing my remark.

「I won't think that.」

「Be, besides, even though I'm a count I don't have any income.」

Ange boldly accepted someone no good like me.

「Then, I'll provide for you. Don't worry, even like this I'm a daughter of a duke. I have also made my house to promise that they will give the necessary support for you to be independent. Even like this I've received education to some extent. If you don't have any earning that I'll just earn money myself.」

—She is too manly it shocked me.

Ange turned around to look toward the entrance.

「—The way out is over there.」

「Though I think that there will only be hell waiting even if you run away here.」

It will be hell if I advanced, and there will be hell even if I retreated—or perhaps not.

「I wonder why the two of you are in love with someone like me.」

「I fell in love with you because you are you. I want you. Leon—become my husband.」

My heart goes *kyun kyun* at Ange's reply.

「Ye, yes.」

Livia drew near beside me.

「I fell in love because of such Leon-san. I will never let go of you.」

Shivers ran through my back hearing the line that is slightly filled with yandere.

「Just do as you like. I won't run away anywhere.」

「—Yes!」

Even with the veil in the way, I knew that they are making a wholehearted smile.

Well, in the first place I—don't dislike these two.

Because I like them. I love them.

My only regret is only something trivial like wanting to play around more as a student.

The priest is speaking some kind of celebrating words, but it doesn't enter my ears.

I'm tricked but—it's not a bad feeling.

.

Part 9

『Congratulations for the engagement.』

『Is that all that you want to say, you piece of junks.』

『Oh? Isn't it too cruel to also blame me? I was only giving a push to those two's backs. I told them that master just need to be cornered.』

Luxion and Creare tricked me together.

Certainly I'm happy to be able to escape from the marriage hunting, but when I heard more about it later there are a lot of problems.

『Even though I'm engaged, the marriage hunting is still not over. This isn't what I heard.』

Luxion and Creare looked at each other with their single eye inside the room and then they shook their eye left and right in exasperation.

『Master is the hero who saved the country. You're a necessary existence for rebuilding the ruling class of the kingdom.』

『If master feel like it then even harem won't be a dream. Congrats!』

『I ain't happy at all! It's troubling even if they suddenly change their attitude like flipping their hand even though they were really cold to man until now! It's scary instead! I can only see that they got ulterior motive!』

『Please don't worry. The situation hasn't changed that drastically. It might take around twenty years before the people's awareness change for real.』

—I'm not happy hearing that info.

Is she saying that haughty girls will still be many in number just like before?

This world is really harsh for man.

『I'll go study abroad right away even if I'm engaged. I feel like a worker who got job transfer away from home immediately after my marriage.』

Creare is laughing.

『I will stay over here so master don't need to worry.』

Even though she seemed serious when in the ruin, it feels like her personality got lighthearted after she received spherical body.

Is that round body the cause?

I heard the door getting knocked, so I replied.

『The door is open.』

「Excuse me.」

Over there is Livia wearing sleepwear while hugging a pillow and—.

「What, you aren't preparing to welcome your wives?」

—Ange standing.

「Kyyaaaa!」

「Why are you screaming?」

I who was sitting on the bed jumped from being greatly shocked.

「Be, because. It's already night, besides you two are wearing sleepwear.」

Their sleepwear is really—they are negligee that can only be seen as them tempting me.

「Leon-san, you are going to go study abroad soon, so before that—we want to properly」

Don't continue those words further.

Even I am a man. I want to do it, I want to play around but, I will over think it when responsibility and so on come into the mix.

「You, you two—i, it's no good!」

Ange tilted her head hearing me saying that.

「Why?」

—Oh no, our sense of values is too different.

「I want you to wait. I still haven't finished preparing my heart.」

「What are you saying? Livia is saying that she want to talk.」

「——Eh？」

Ah, that. That huh—so it's that.

「You want to talk? To me? At night?」

「Err, I want to talk about a lot of things. Until now all of us were always busy with something that there was no time to talk leisurely.」

Is it not good? Livia requested earnestly. She is too cute that I could only nod repeatedly and said 「It's fine」.

—It's a secret that I'm feeling a bit disappointed. No, sorry—I'm feeling extremely disappointed.

「You, what are you thinking?」

Ange looked at me teasingly, so I reflexively averted my gaze.

「I'm thinking about love.」

「Hou, love you say. That's great. I also wish to hear about your love very much.」

—I wonder what is love. I also don't know the answer.

Without me noticing Luxion and Creare has erased their presence and gone into hiding.

Those two, they really cannot be relied on.

The two of them sat beside me. Our skins touched each other at this distance.

「I wanted to say thanks to you.」

Ange started the talk before Livia continued.

「I have been wanting to say this all this time. A lot of things happened since I met Leon-san in the academy. Leon-san has helped me so much.」

—It was really a disaster though.

The five idiots who lost their mind with love affair and my little sister from the previous life were really horrible.

「I also have Luxion with me. —It's not just my strength.」

「You are wrong. It's because you were there that Luxion helped us. —Leon, be more confident. You are the man who become my husband.」

When Ange told me that—I felt embarrassed for some reason.

I'm still not used with the word husband.

I didn't marry in my previous life after all.

「Leon-san, please return home safely. We—will be waiting for you.」

The two of them hugged my arms. Then we talked until late at night.

—It feels like I'm getting killed slowly.

.

Part 10

The day of my departure to Alzer Commonwealth.

At the port in the floating island floating above the capital.

A lot of people gathered to see me off.

Daniel and Raymond are happy as my friend for my studying abroad.

「It's unfortunate for you Leon. Even though the invitations from the girls are finally increasing.」

「I never thought that boys will be in the side that get invited.」

The smirking faces of my friends are the most irritating.

Even I wanted to return if it is to the academy where the marriage circumstance has been reformed.

I wanted to enjoy the academy life.

「—You guys, I'll remember this when I get back.」

「As expected Leon is this kind of guy.」

「I'm relieved instead that he is like usual. Even though I thought that he would say something like I'm a count you know, you're holding your head too high!」

My image inside you guys is that horrible? It's a bit shocking.

Even though I'm this earnest, virtuous—and compassionate Leon-kun.

While I'm talking with the two, two girls are approaching.

They're Clarice-senpai and—Deirdre-senpai who has auspiciously graduated from the academy.

「Congratulations for your engagement.」

「Congratulations. It's extremely unfortunate.」

Clarice-senpai is smiling cheerfully while Deirdre-senpai is looking dissatisfied—I don't know just what they are thinking. When I looked at their hangers-on, they are glaring at me.

Are they angry that I got engaged?

Even my life is finally visited by a popular period, an outrageous one at that for me at my second life huh.

From here on, this kind of fortune—this popular period will surely not come again in my life.

「If you get sick of Redgrave House, you can rely on Attlee House anytime.」

Clarice-senpai—what do you mean by those words?

「Oh, if it's Roseblade house we will accept you even now you know? Rather, how about taking me away and elope just like this?」

Oi oi—if I do that, I won't be able to laugh at his highness Julius and others.

But, is it just my imagination that Deirdre-senpai's eyes looked serious?

「You, you two are really good at making joke! Really funny—」

I laughed to gloss it over but, the two aren't laughing.

Daniel and Raymond seems to sense the indescribable atmosphere and took some distance from me.

「Leon is really popular.」

「Yeah. I'm not envying him though.」

The one who came at that timing like a savior is—teacher.

His standing posture looked dazzling.

「Teacher!」

「Mister Leon, I've come to see you off.」

「Thank you very much!」

About teacher, actually it was decided that he will take up the headmaster seat from this year.

The academy is also trying to change. It was decided to place the suitable person to be in charge.

That person is none other than teacher.

「Going to look at other country will also be a good experience. Work hard to study there.」

Actually I'm going to Alzer Commonwealth to observe other people's romance situation but—I can't say that truth.

「I will continue practicing tea over there too.」

「Please do so by all means. But, I'm also looking forward to your growth as a gentleman—no, as a person. I'm looking forward to Mister Leon who has grown even more when you come back.」

Teacher—I'm aiming to become a gentleman like teacher!

Luxion came to tell me the time.

『Master, it's time to depart.』

「Aa, let's go.」

I—boarded Einhorn without looking back while everyone sent me off.

Something like me not looking back because Clarice-senpai and Deirdre-senpai are scary isn't the reason at all.

It's because it feels like I'm going to cry. —Really.

.

Creare was at Ange and Livia's side in the academy.

『You two, is it okay to not see master off?』

Ange drank her tea while replying.

『It will be a bother to him if we cry in public.』

Livia was also the same.

『Besides, we have finished saying farewell before the departure.』

Creare made fun of the two of them.

『How praiseworthy. Master has really good fiancées.』

Ange put down her cup and looked outside the window.

The conspicuous Einhorn—could be seen departing from the port.

『Besides, we have things to do.』

Livia also nodded a little. Creare asked seeing that.

『Do you two have some kind of plan?』

『We want to be of help to Leon-san. In order to do that, I will study a lot and become an existence that can be relied on.』

Ange was also the same.

『From how he act normally, not only he isn't interested to foreign countries, he is a man who will even say that he hate going abroad. But then he suddenly said that he will study abroad—there must be something.』

Creare answered vaguely.

『That might be so. Perhaps master has been thinking a lot in his own way.』

『It feels like he is hiding something but, he won't tell us because we are unreliable. Then, we can just become an existence that Leon will rely on.』

『Hm~, that enthusiasm is praiseworthy but, it's fine to not get that worked up isn't it?』

Livia seemed to understand that.

『I understand. But, next time we want to be relied on. I need to study a lot more in order to become helpful for Leon-san. We will shock Leon-san when he come home.』

Creare's single eye turned toward the books on the table.

In front of Livia were books related to magic, while in front of Ange were books related to territory management.

『It will depend on the situation but, I'll be able to contact the sourpuss Luxion if you two asked me. Tell me if you have something you want to tell master.』

Ange looked happy.

『Really? Then I'll count on you at that time.』

Livia looked outside the window.

『—Leon-san, I wonder what is he doing right now?』

.

Part 11

Inside my room in Einhorn.

I'm lying down on my bed—.

「Damn it! I departed with good atmosphere but, I DON'T WANT GOING TO OTHER COUNTRYYYYY!」

I threw a tantrum like a kid.

Originally I'm not really interested with foreign countries. And yet, I got stuck studying abroad miserably.

『Master don't know when to give up.』

「It should be okay for me to complain at least! Just why do I have to watch over the romance of other people in foreign country huh.」

The world will be in danger if the new main character's love failed.

Is it alright for such unreasonable situation to exist?

『Putting that aside, how about coming over here?』

There is an unnaturally large box inside the room.

I'm curious toward that very suspicious box.

「What's this?」

『It was sent here from the palace.』

「Come to think of it, they told me to carry souvenir for Alzer Commonwealth.」

『As expected from master, calling gift to other country as souvenir. By the way, this one is addressed to master.』

When I opened the box—Marie is sitting while hugging her knees inside.



I felt like I'm watching a horror movie.

When I closed the box again, Marie jumped out.

「Why did you close it!？」

「It's scary! I'm breaking out in cold sweat here.」

Why is this girl here?

When I looked at Luxion, he looked like he knew about this from the start.

『It'll be better for master to hear the situation directly from Marie.』

When I looked at Marie, she poked her fingertips on each other in front of her chest while looking embarrassed.

「A, actually—about the allowance from big bro, it was used up.」

「—Ha?」

「It wasn't me! It wasn't me who did it! —Those five were」

.

Part 12

The floating island that Leon gave up was moved to the sky above the territory that the kingdom managed.

Marie lived there since the spring, but a problem suddenly occurred.

「—What's this?」

There was something covered in sheet in front of the mansion that Leon prepared for her.

Julius took off the sheet with a smile.

「We prepared this for Marie. We believe it will make you happy.」

There is a stone statue there. It's a stone statue of Marie looking like a goddess.

(—Wha, what's this!? Really just what's this!?)

Jilk sent his gaze toward the statue of Marie like he was looking at a holy object.

「I asked a craftsman who is still young but famous to make this.」

Brad was also satisfied with the workmanship.

「The craftsman immediately tried to make the chest bigger, so it was a pain to make him correct it.」

Looking closer, the statue's chest was as flat as Marie's.

(My, my chest is bigger than that! Or rather, isn't the chest shaved too much? Wrong. That's not it. I need to confirm the important matter.)

「Thi, this statue, just who was it who prepared this?」

Greg made a thumb up while saying.

「We prepared it with everyone's money. Well, it was just a bit lacking to request a skilled craftsman to work on it though. That was why, we sold the items in this island to get the money.」

Items like the important farming tool, or the food that Leon sent—these five sold off those things.

It seemed they were thinking that if they requested it then the things that were lacking would immediately get delivered here.

(Do, don't tell me, they came to big bro's floating island earlier than us for this? IT'S A LIE RIGHTTTTT!!)

The money that Marie obtained by kowtowing was used by these five who didn't know about the circumstance.

It seemed they got on the floating island ahead of her and prepared this to make her happy.

Chris also showed no guilt at all.

「If we're receiving money each month, then just this much is a cheap purchase.」

The five was happily saying that Marie's statue would be set up in the fountain that would be prepared later.

Its seemed they were thinking that their house would send them money.

「There won't be any allowance from your houses!」

The five were puzzled by that fact.

Kyle was appalled by the five who were like that.

「There is no way that they will send you money each month after what everyone has done and they became that angry. The money that everyone used was our living expenses for this one year.」

Cara who was carrying Marie's luggage was also dumbfounded.

「A, all that money, was used up!? That much money, all of them!?!」

Julius tilted his head and made a confused expression.

「Eh, is that so? Then let's contact the palace and request them to increase the budget.」

Marie's sight turned dark from seeing the way the five were thinking.

(These guys, they're just gods of pestilence when they aren't rich anymore.)

Marie held her head and fell on her knee on the spot.

She didn't have any composure to think of anything else like her skirt was getting dirty or the like.

(I, impossible. Even though they were living expenses and food that I finally obtained after begging big bro!)

She was given not just goods but also cash because merchant ship would come here periodically.

Originally they would the crops that they produced themselves. This was to teach them the importance of earning money.

Marie didn't think that they would be able to do that right away from their first year, that was why she relied on Leon.

「If that kind of request can go through, I WON'T HAVE IT THIS HARDDDD!」

Kyle and Cara ran toward the bawling Marie and consoled her.

.

Part 13

Marie looked down with a pale face.

「Even though I didn't do anything bad, I got scolded by the queen.」

「That's horrible. Even I feel sympathy.」

Marie and others who suddenly became incapable to continue their living got called to the palace and received scolding.

In the first place, it's unthinkable that those five can change their money sense in this short period.

Being suddenly told to live in poverty after being raised as young master for more than ten years is quite unreasonable.

「And then, the queen said that it's a mistake to suddenly throw them out—she said, that's why go study in other country. She said, that way might be better if big bro is with them.」

By that, did she mean them coming along with my study abroad?

—Eh? I have to look after those guys? Looking after those gods of pestilences!?

「Oi, where are those guys?」

「They're in the warehouse. Also, this」

Marie handed me several letters.

First I opened the letter from Roland roughly.

『Take care of the troublesome matter well.』

I immediately crushed the letter and crumpled it.

Next is the letter from Mylene-sama. I gently opened the letter and—.

『Please take care of Julius and others. Actually—』

It seems there is a force that is unable to forgive Marie and others.

Because of that, Mylene-sama want to evacuate them to other country temporarily.

Or rather, his highness Julius—let's stop using honorific and just call him Julius now.

It seems that in reality the kingdom is busy dealing with the aftermath of the war and cannot look after Julius and others.

After the war against the principality, Julius's right to inherit the throne is stripped and he became a simple prince.

There are also various other problems and the palace is really busy.

If I stayed in the country, even I might end up getting involved with those problems whether I wanted it or not.

Thinking about it, perhaps studying abroad is the right choice?

In Mylene-sama's letter there is also writing that is worrying about my welfare. It moved me to tears.

I can't forgive the son of a bitch Roland, but I'm praying for that person's happiness.

「Eh? There is one more letter—」

「That one is from Hertrude.」

Part 14

I got out to the deck and read the letter.

In the letter there is a simple greeting written at the beginning.

I thought that perhaps she was writing her grudge to me who killed the black knight, but there isn't even a sentence about it anywhere.

But—.

〔I'm wondering that perhaps if I was seriously trying to win you over, then the future might change.〕

—Such thing is written.

From here on a painful life is waiting for her. The palace let her live because that way is more convenient to rule the territory of Fanoss House. Rather than executing her and making other ruling the territory, they will send royalty like Julius and made her bear a child. Because by doing that, the territory can be taken in with smaller opposition from her retainers and population.

〔Recently I'm often recalling the words of the elf's village chief. Surely I made the wrong choice.〕

Seeing that sentence, I thought that everyone is expecting too much from me.

I'm just a mediocre person who luckily obtained Luxion.

And then, I'm unable to use Luxion's power well.

I threw a question at Luxion who is floating beside me.

「Luxion—do you have the thinking that you want to serve a more capable master?」

『Even if it's someone capable but I refuse if they're the descendant of new mankind. In the first place, I'm not expecting any competency from master.』

「You're really an unpleasant guy.」

I sat down on that spot and put the letter into my pocket.

「—Foreign country huh. I wonder what kind of place it is.」

I'm not expecting much from Alzer Commonwealth that I'm heading to right now.

After all, it's the sequel of that—"that" otome game.

—Really just spare me.

Extra Story - Rude and Rauda

The cemetery of Fanoss House territory.

The new tomb that was prepared beside both her parents belonged to her little sister Hertrauda.

It was decorated with many flowers. Her elder sister Hertrude also placed a flower bouquet there.

「Rauda—I can finally visit.」

The duke house was busy after they lost the war.

From a princess, now Hertrude was a duchess. Her days were busy as the acting duke.

Because of that, she was unable to visit the grave until now.

Hertrude shed tears.

「I wonder why it turned out like this. Even though originally I should be the one who died while Hertrauda survive. How can I be the one who survive.」

There were also the maids who took care of Rauda and her guardian knights at some distance away.

Originally it should be Rauda who survived.

Because of that the number of people who took assisted Hertrauda numbered a lot more than Hertrude.

But right now they were assisting Hertrude.

「Everyone is gone. Father, mother, and even Bandel are gone. Onee-chan is all alone if even Rauda is gone.」

When they were children, they decided to use the magic flute in order to take revenge against the kingdom.

The user would die if they summoned the guardian deity.

That was why Hertrude volunteered herself in order to protect Rauda who was younger than her.

「Actually I should be—and yet I'm the one who live.」

After losing their parents, they only had each other as family.

Sometimes they also quarreled, but they would reconcile right away.

Her previous little sister Rauda—Hertrauda, she wanted her little sister to live.

Hertrude remembered the time before they proclaimed war toward the kingdom.

That day, Rauda came to her room and said she wanted to sleep together.

She accepted and the two of them sisters slept together after so long.

Even now Hertrude could recall Rauda's face that was crying when she saw her off.

「If only, I was smarter」

Thinking back now, they were just used by their retainers as they pleased.

Hertrude burst into tears and clung on the gravestone.

「Rauda, I'm sorry. Because Onee-chan is unreliable, you became a sacrifice—I'm really sorry.」

Just where did they go wrong?

The people around left alone Hertrude who was crying in front of her little sister's grave.

Amidst those people, a man who was dispatched from the kingdom looked at his pocket watch and spoke.

「Acting duke, it'll be time soon.」

The man informed that it was the time to return to work. The people around him protested.

「Be more flexible for this kind of time at least.」

「There is no way you don't know how long Hertrude-sama has been waiting for this.」

「This is why the kingdom's people is just」

The principality—the duke house's people defended Hertrude.

But, the man who was dispatched from the kingdom made a cold expression.

「The procedure in the kingdom will be slowed if the affairs here are delayed. Besides, I wish that you all can be thankful just from me allowing you to take time for this kind of chore.」

Both countries were at war just a little while ago.

From the perspective of the kingdom's people, they wouldn't care about the circumstance of Fanoss House at all.

「A lot of people died in the territories that were trampled by all of you. This result came from your own doing.」

The man didn't hold any positive feeling toward the duke house.

In the first place, it would also be a bother for the kingdom to spend effort to crush Fanoss House.

They simply let them live. That was the kingdom's attitude.

Hertrude wiped her tears and stood up before returning to the carriage.

「Excuse me. Let's return quickly.」

The people of the duke house looked down with frustration welling up inside them hearing that.

The man who was dispatched from the kingdom scoffed.

「Very well. I wish that you will be obedient to the kingdom from here on too. Well, even if you oppose us, I don't think the Fanoss House right now will be able to do anything though.」

「You!」

One knight was about to punch the man, but Hetruude stopped him.

「Stop! —My apologies. Let's hurry to the castle.」

When Hetruude hurried toward the carriage, the man turned toward the knight and said.

「If something happen to me, Count Bartfalt will be dispatched next. Do you have the resolve for that?」

The knights of the duke house averted their faces when Leon's name came out.

But, Hertrude knew—.

(A small fry who is getting full of himself by hiding behind Count Bartfalt's name.)

—That Leon wouldn't march against the Duke House just from this much.

Hertrude got into the carriage and gazed outside the window. She recalled when she went into an adventure before.

She only entered a ruin in the elf's village, even so that memory felt really nostalgic right now.

(Come to think of it, the village chief told me at that time.)

If you can walk together with your fated partner—when she recalled the result of the fortune-telling, it would be Leon's face that came to mind no matter what.

(—Would my fate change if I persuaded him more seriously?)

Rauda would still be alive, and Leon would be here—would the principality be able to continue as it was and not getting reduced into a duke house?

Hertrude imagined that, but she immediately shook her head.

(No good. I have to get a hold of myself right now.)

Hertrude couldn't just keep grieving for the sake of the duke house.

While the cemetery was getting distant, Hertrude talked to Hertrauda and others inside her heart.

(Rauda—and Bandel. Please watch over us together with father, mother, and everyone else.)

Afterword

Thank you very much for buying the third volume of 『Otomege Sekai wa Mob ni Kibishii Sekai Desu』 !

This is the author Mishima Yomu.

It's also thanks to all of you reader that the third volume can be safely released.

My thanks.

And then about the third volume—it's thick (sweat)

I was thinking it since the time I was writing it, will the page number alright like this? —Who cares, just write!

And, from there it ended up like this.

When I lined up volume one until three, isn't the thickness like four volume of books?

Considering that, it's a bargain to buy Mobseka isn't it. (TN: Mobseka is how this series is called in Japan)

Now then, about the third volume, it became a story where various truths of 「that」 otome game world are coming into view.

The distorted marriage situation, and the reason why elves and other demi-human races were born.

And then, the truth of that otome game that came into light after the war against the principality.

There was also a shocking reunion for Leon, but the person himself must felt complicated.

Surely he is holding his head at his wits' end while feeling apologetic toward his parents in the previous life.

The third volume—it's the third section in the web version but, it became a story that even I felt emotional attachment to.

Because in here there is a character whose evaluation got drastically changed.

What kind of reaction it would be in the light novel version. I'm feeling scared but also looking forward to it.

The third volume is the improvement of the third section in the web version, I modified the part where Leon got dragged into power struggle.

Because of that, there might be a part that is not connected if you continue reading from the web novel version.

I'll be glad if you readers can enjoy the light novel version in its own way.

Speaking of the difference with the web novel version, I was worrying until the end of how to treat Hertrude.

Inside this story she became a very pitiful character.

I didn't really make any plan for her character at first.

In the end, I kept that part the same with the web novel.

But, I regretted it a bit when receiving her rough character design.

If it's like this then I should make a different route from the web novel—was what I felt.

You can't let your emotional attachment get stronger when a character received illustration huh.

I'm thinking that perhaps one day it will be nice if I can write a different route for Hertrude while thinking to end this afterward.

Well then, please keep rooting for me from here on too.

Short Story - Marie Route

Part 1

The world couldn't go like game.

There was no save function or load function in real world.

In life there was no chance to redo.

But, if—one could redo?

If one could redo the time when choosing an important choice, what kind of life would be waiting for them?

If, there was a save data at before enrolling the academy, if Leon chose a different route, how would the story progress?

This was that kind of story.

.

Part 2

The spring of my first year where I'm able to safely enroll into the academy.

I, Leon Fou Bartfalt am hiding in a bush of the academy's backyard.

Hiding together with me is my partner Luxion.

「The prince pondering in front of the pond really look artistic huh. Though in his heart he is only worrying about something trivial like how he is tired being the prince.」

It's his highness Julius, one of the conquer targets in that otome game.

He is pondering in a place where there is no sign of other people but—this is what you call an event.

『Peeking like this, master has a bad hobby.』

「Because I'm curious. Don't you think it's a precious experience to be able to see in real life a famous scene of a game you had thoroughly played?」

It's the encounter event of the main character with the prince.

The main character who was enthusiastic with expectation toward the academy life slapped the rude prince.

If I can watch the refreshing scene of the prince getting slapped, then of course I'm going to peek.

『Didn't master say that it's not your business?』

Certainly it's not my business but, there is also a curiosity in me.

—I at least want to confirm what kind of girl the main character is.

Is there any difference between the main character that was controlled by player and the real main character?

I'm peeking in order to erase that kind of question.

「I wanted to watch when a handsome man get slapped.」

When I spoke out a random excuse, Luxion shook his single eye horizontally.

His gesture said that he can't understand.

『Master has a really wonderful personality.』

「You got a lot of sarcasm as usual.」

『Isn't it master who is giving me a lot of chance for it? —Oh?』

Luxion's single eye moved and discovered a girl sneaking toward this way.

She doesn't notice us hiding here.

That girl—isn't the main character.

This girl doesn't look like anyone in the illustration of that otome game's package.

『That girl—I saw her at the entrance ceremony.』

She was an irritating girl.

It's not like I hate her but, it made me irritated when seeing her face.

『Master, she is going to talk with Julius. Is she the main character?』

I started moving.

『There's no way that's the case. Her look is too different.』

The main character in the game's illustration is taller and with nicer body style.

She isn't the main character—maybe.

When I observed her, she is muttering something to herself.

『Calm down, Marie. If you use the encounter event with the prince well and become acquainted with him, then it's your win.』

I comprehended everything in that instant.

—Aa, this girl is the same like me.

『Luxion, come.』

I sneaked toward the girl—Marie who is measuring the timing to come out, and then I jumped her when she is about to call out at his highness Julius.

I grabbed her arm and covered her mouth before taking her right away from there.

「Nh!」

Marie doesn't understand what's going on. She is terribly shocked—and then she became scared.

I kept my hold on her and hurriedly got away from that place to a place where there is nobody else before letting her go.

Then she glared at me while looking scared.

「Wha, what have you done!? I'm in a hurry here. Do you think that it will end well for you after doing something like this? I'll never forgive you.」

She is acting strong but, it's clear as day that she is scared.

It felt like I'm facing my little sister from the previous life.

Is that why I'm irritated?

「—Is it because you don't want me destroying your encounter event with the prince?」

Then Marie's eyes opened wide before they slowly narrowed.

She is making a colder expression than before.

「Looks like you're the same like me.」

It seems I'm not mistaken.

「What were you trying to do? Why were you going to come out?」

I somehow guessed what this girl is trying to do.

But, I wanted to confirm it.

「—It's not your business isn't it?」

Marie averted her eyes. It seems she tried to make use of the encounter even to get ahead of the main character.

「Obviously it's my business. You, do you understand what are you doing?」

「You're annoying! More importantly, release me already. The main character will come if I don't hurry up!」

Marie tried to run away. I cornered her to the wall and put both my hands on the wall to cut off her path of escape.

The petite Marie is anxious.

「Don't get in the way. Listen to me, the world will be destroyed if the main character and the conquest targets don't meet.」

Speaking in game term it means game over.

It's still too fast for me to meet game over in my life so I'll refrain from it.

「Haa? Why would that happen? Think of a better line if you want to threaten me. If you don't let me go, I'll yell so that people come here. If I yell here, your academy life—no, your life will be over.」

This girl—her personality is as bad as my little sister.

Certainly if this girl yell here, I'll be seen as the bad guy.

But, it's strange no matter what.

Why is this girl aiming for the prince?

「You, you have played that otome game right? Then why are you trying to crush the encounter event huh?」

「That's obvious—」

While she is talking, the sound *Slap!* came from far away.

We knew what is the meaning of that sound.

「So I missed the encounter event that won't come again.」

Marie fell on her knees while leaning on the wall.

Tears gathered in her eyes.

「No, no way—even though I finally entered the academy. Even though I've waited for ten years!」

Tears spilled out in large drops and she began to cry.

「O, oi」

「Even though I thought that I'll be able to become happy for sure this time! It's your fault. Because of you, I'll be poor forever!」

—I don't like seeing a girl crying because it made me irritated.

『Master, won't it be better to share information for now?』

I also felt the necessity for that from Luxion's suggestion.

If she has cleared that otome game, she shouldn't have any thinking to crush the encounter event.

「Yeah. Oi, stop crying already.」

But, the sound of *kuuuu* came from the stomach of the crying Marie.

Marie instantly stopped crying and pressed her stomach with both hands. She looked embarrassed.

「—Are you hungry?」

Marie nodded a bit.

Her gesture is similar with his little sister from the previous life that he can't just leave her alone.

Besides, they are fellow reincarnator. —He can't just ignore her.

「I'll treat you to a meal, so let's leave this place for now.」

Marie grasped the hand that I offered her.

「Ri, right.」

.

Part 3

We got out of the academy and went to the city.

We entered a cheap restaurant. There Marie ate the ordered food ravenously.

She already devoured three portions of steak and yet she still ordered even more additional food.

Right now she was chewing at meat still attached on bone.

The way she ate was like a hungry beast.

「Eat slower. No one will take it away from you.」

It felt like I'm full already just from watching her.

Luxion floated beside me while observing Marie. He was greatly interested.

『Master is also very curious, but this person is actually also very curious.』

Hearing that Marie is also a former Japanese, Luxion said 『So she is an old mankind』 and interacted with Marie friendlily.

『Marie, there is enough food. Can we continue our talk?』

What we were talking before the food came shed that Marie was a former Japanese woman.

She won't tell us her age, but from the content of her story I think her age previously was around the middle of her thirty until her early forty.

It seems she was disowned by her parents and lived with a useless man as her boyfriend.

After that, she thought that she fainted because of her boyfriend's violence but when she woke up she was in this world.

—Her story was too pitiful I can't laugh at it.

It's troubling because I can't make fun of this kind of pitiful topic.

Marie washed down the food she put into her mouth with water and resumed talking after she came to her senses.

「Where did we left off again?」

「From where you reincarnated as the youngest daughter of Viscount House of Lafan.」

「Aa~, that's right.」

Luxion placed a handkerchief in front of Marie because the area around her mouth is dirty.

Marie took it and wiped her mouth before continuing.

「The house I reincarnated into is a terrible house. It's a viscount house that has territory in the main land, but right now its territory is small and it's also really poor. In my family there is also only my parents who only has high pride and big brother and big sister who are scum.」

Marie looked down and said 「They're completely different from my Onii-chan in the previous life.」 with a small voice.

This girl, it seems she had a big brother in her previous life.

What a coincidence, I also had a little sister.

That's why this girl made me excessively irritated—that I can't leave her alone.

Could it be, she is my little sister? I considered such possibility but, it's impossible so she must be someone else.

Both big brother and little sister reincarnating to another world together won't be funny at all.

In the first place, can such thing happen? —Feels like that the possibility is low.

「You targeted the prince because you wanted to get out of such life?」

I sympathized with her, but it's no good to target the prince of all people right?

「—Because, I didn't clear the first game, so I didn't know about the detail.」

Marie looked like she is going to cry.

I also wanted to cry here. After all, I didn't know that otome game had sequel.

I'm really glad that I was able to talk with Marie.

「Certainly the first game was difficult. I also cleared it using paid items. Even so, I still can't believe that it had a sequel made.」

「Right!? It was impossible to clear it normally. It can't be helped even if I don't know isn't it?」

『Marie, the food you ordered came.』

The waiter brought a lot of food.

Marie immediately resumed eating.

When I'm looking at the way Marie ate, she started making excuse shamefully.

「I, it has been a long time since I can eat a lot. I couldn't eat until I'm full in my home. There was even some days where there was only tasteless soup to eat.」

Just what in the world this girl's family is doing?

「That's horrible.」

「You better realize just how blessed your life is.」

「I'm feeling complicated.」

Am I who even almost got sold to an old hag still has it better—I don't want to believe that.

But, it's a fact that I'm more blessed than Marie in the family department.

Putting aside Zola, I think that father and mother are good parents.

My big brother Nix can be relied on, and Collin is a cute little brother.

「You won't be troubled with food when you're in the academy though.」

「I, I'm hungry! Since I reincarnated here my stomach always felt overly hungry, and for some reason my growth is also slow—」

Luxion who observed Marie seemed to understand the cause.

『From Marie's story, I assume that her excessive training in healing magic might be the cause? Originally it shouldn't be strange for her to physically grow more.』

「Is that so?」

I asked Luxion to speak in more detail.

『Yes. This is the result of her forcing herself too much during her growth period. Her physical growth stopped, but she obtained the skill that allows her to become a specialist in healing magic. She must have forced herself so much. How about master following her example for a little?』

Is he telling me to work harder?

「I want to live my life efficiently. It's my principle to not do pointless effort.」

『As expected from master. How about you boil the dirt of Marie's nail and drink it?』

「I refuse.」

When I refused firmly, Marie looked exasperated.

She dropped the knife and fork in her hands.

「O, oi, what's wrong?」

Marie trembled—.

「Eh? —Eh? Co, could it be, I'm looking like a child like this is because—」

『It's the result of your effort. Perhaps you should feel proud? There isn't any problem with your feminine functions, you simply won't be able to grow further than this.』

In other words—Marie's appearance would stay childish than her age suggest like this. It seems that she can't expect anything more from her growth in the future.

After that, Marie is crying while eating like crazy to drown her sorrow.

.

Part 4

「I can't just keep crying!」

The next day.

Marie came talking to me in the academy's corridor. She said she wanted to talk about the plan going on ahead and I brought her to a place with nobody around.

And then she declared—.

「I'll target the conquest targets that the main character aren't targeting! It's the leftover plan!」

Main character—when I investigated her, it seems her name is Olivia. Marie proclaimed a hyena-like plan of approaching the boys who that main character doesn't target.

「You don't know when to give up huh.」

「Obviously. I don't want the world to be destroyed. But, this and that are different matter. That's why, you help me too.」

Marie pressed her hands together and asked me for help. I turned a smile at her.

「My bad but it's impossible. I'm busy searching for marriage partner.」

「What, you cheapskate! You can put off something like marriage hunting for later!」

「Shut up! It's a life and death problem for a man, idiot!」

Luxion watched the surrounding vigilantly while saying something like 『You two are getting along well』 .

I told Marie just how painful the boys' standing is.

「Now listen, a young man who hasn't married until twenty years old will have even his personality seen in doubt. It will affect their life from there on. We are different from girls who will have boys flocking toward them even without doing anything.」

Marie objected.

「Haa? Even the boys will only call out to girls that they targeted. Someone like me still haven't got invited to any tea party just so you know.」

「That's because the tea party will be from the fifth month. No one will call out to the girls right after enrolling to the academy.」

「Are you an idiot? The first years are going to do tea party from the fifth month, but that's unrelated with the seniors. I'm saying that no second year or third year is calling out to me.」

I'm getting irritated talking with this girl.

Marie spoke her dissatisfaction toward the boys.

「In the end you boys are only looking at girls who are convenient for you. Even though upper years are calling out to the girls around me, everyone will look away just from me saying that I came from Lafan House.」

Marie looked down.

But, that can't be helped.

「Because, your house's reputation is really bad.」

When I investigated her house is very horrible. It's a house that made me hesitate associating with her from now on.

Marie wiped her tears.

「This is unreasonable.」

In the first place, obviously anyone will hesitate if the house of the girl they will marry has a lot of debt.

I can imagine them asking for money to anyone who want to marry their daughter.

It's troubling even if they ask for a lot of money to a baron house at the frontier.

Because they won't have that much money.

But, it will also be troubling if I ignored Marie like this and she caused some kind of trouble.

「I got it so stop crying. I'll help you out.」

「Really!?」

Seeing Marie stopped crying and became all smile—she really reminded me of my little sister.

At the very least, I hope that girl was happier than Marie.

A part of me can't forgive her but, I won't be able to laugh if she met an experience as terrible as Marie.

「And, who are you targeting?」

「First is~」

Marie talked happily about her plan.

.

Part 5

In the training field with logs lined up.

There a blue haired young man, Chris Fia Arclight is training hard.

He looked intellectual with the glasses he is wearing, but actually he is the son of a swordsman who is called as sword saint in Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

This person himself has obtained the title of master fencer at his age.

Marie is talking to that Chris.

I'm observing them from behind a cover but—

「—I'm sorry but I'm not interested.」

「Eh? —Err?」

I was impressed because she pulled off a nice greeting at him but—Chris isn't interested to Marie.

Chris wiped his sweat while sending Marie a doubting gaze.

「I don't know what you are thinking to approach me like this but, I already have a fiancée. It will be dishonest of me to get too close with other female student. Please don't talk too much with me from now.」

Marie is dejected after being warned with that sound argument.

「Ye, yes.」

Chris started swinging his wooden sword after the talk is finished.

「Go back if that's all. I can't concentrate.」

His attitude is curt and blunt.

Come to think of it, this guy's cold attitude was standing out.

Marie returned back to me and,

「—I failed.」

She is dejected.

It can't be helped. Arter all—.

「It's the fourth successive failure with this.」

—Not only this is the last one, it's game over already.

She called out to the conquest targets—the boys other than the prince, but she splendidly failed all of them.

「Isn't it horrible that everyone is so cold!?」

Not everything can go well like in game.

I turned my gaze to Luxion.

「Oi, Olivia-san is really intimate with the prince right?」

『They are intimate. From the information of master and Marie, I'm presuming that she is targeting Julius.』

And yet, the other conquest targets won't even look at Marie.

Reality is harsh.

I talked to the dejected Marie.

「Cheer up. I'll treat you.」

Hearing that, Marie wiped her drool while retorting to me.

「Do, don't make fun of me. Do you think I'll easily get into a good mood just from getting food?」

「I get it so wipe your drool.」

While I'm hiding from Chris and talking to Marie—Olivia-san came to the training field.

She is a girl with an unsophisticated feel. And then she waved her hand to Chris.

Chris is normally cold but—he is showing a smiling face only to Olivia-san.

Even though he didn't show any smile at Marie, what's with this difference in attitude?

But, I also understand Chris's feeling.

Olivia-san who is bright, energetic, and also big breasted is a charming girl.

Even I will surely become all smile if she called out to me.

—Compared to that.

「Oi, which part you are comparing me with that woman?」

Marie is giving me a really cold gaze, so I averted my eyes.

「Now then—let's go have some meal.」

「You looked at my chest and compared it to that woman right!? Say it clearly!」

「Sometimes the truth can hurt. It's impossible for someone kind like me to say the fact.」

「That's the same like you saying it! Damn it! Is it breast as expected!? Men are all stupid idiot!」

In reality shape or roundness is more important than size but, let's not say it out loud.

After all Marie's flat chest doesn't have any relation with shape or roundness.

「Aa~, I'm annoyed. Today I'll eat ten portions of steak!」

Luxion joined the talk.

『You ate twelve portions before this though? Marie, certainly you won't grow but, fat will still attach in your body. Especially not in the chest or butt—but around the stomach or arms.』

Marie turned quiet hearing that.

「——I, I'll stop in six portions.」

This girl is a good-for-nothing as expected.

It's impossible for the conquest targets to get cajoled by this kind of woman.

I'm really worried.

It won't be a problem even if I ignored her but, I can't do that at this point.

「Come on, let's go.」

「Wa, wait for me!」

.

Part 6

Now then, the new students are going to call out to the girls for real from the fifth month.

Why is it from the fifth month?

I don't know the reason, and I don't even want to know.

But——.

「I'm reborn.」

—I was made to realize that tea is a wonderful culture.

My friends Daniel and Raymond are looking at me with cold gazes but I paid them no mind.

「You are looking really happy huh.」

「As I thought a capable guy is different.」

I can feel jealousy from the two's gazes and tones clearly.

I wonder why?

「What's wrong? You two are looking really annoyed today.」

On the bench at the academy's courtyard.

The three of us are sitting and talking, but I felt a distance from the two.

Raymond's glasses glinted suspiciously while looking at me.

「I heard the rumor. It seems that you have gotten really close with a girl in upper level who isn't even bringing around any exclusive servant.」

Daniel clenched his hand,

「I'm jealous you bastard! Please introduce her to us too!」

They are irritated at me, but they are trying to use me so I introduced them to a girl.

I don't hate you guys who are like that but—but you guys are wrong.

「You mean Marie? My relationship with that girl isn't like that.」

Raymond looked doubting.

「I wonder. Besides, I'm envious just from you simply having a girl as close acquaintance.」

Daniel casted down his gaze.

「I also want to get close to a girl who doesn't have exclusive servant.」

A girl in upper level who doesn't have exclusive servant—is a special girl.

Because in general girls in upper level has exclusive servant.

That girl is either poor like Marie—or,

「Ah, it's his highness.」

Raymond muttered. There at the courtyard the prince—his highness Julius came with his step sibling Jilk in tow.

Behind them there are female students following the two of them.

His highness Julius and Jilk who are basking in their shrill voices doesn't look interested toward those girls.

「What an envious bunch.」

When I said that, both Raymond and Daniel looked at me and clicked their tongues.

You guys, treasure your friend more!

While I'm thinking that—.

「Ah, it's the scholarship student.」

When Daniel said that, his highness Julius and others are in some kind of quarrel.

His highness Julius's fiancée, Angelica Rafa Redgrave is also there.

「Your highness, please think of your station!」

His highness Julius is treating Angelica-san in annoyance.

「Angelica, we are in the academy. Stop bringing in status at the outside to here.」

「Bu, but!」

He is defending the scholarship student Olivia-san in front of his fiancée.

His highness met Olivia-san and invited her to the tea party at the fifth month. It was then Angelica-san came.

In the game this is an event in the early stage, but seeing it like this, it looks like a scene of carnage to me.

「It's nice being handsome. They are forgiven even if they get intimate with other girl in front of their fiancée.」

When I said that, Daniel quickly shook his head.

「No no, that's no good. Besides, the girl is the scholarship student—a commoner.」

Raymond also agreed.

「It's possible even for commoner to be accepted as concubine isn't it? There is precedent for that.」

「Is that so?」

There is Cinderella story of a commoner woman being accepted into the palace.

But, acting like this in front of his fiancée—it's problematic.

Looking at it like this, the main character of that otome game is unexpectedly a bad woman.

The group broke up while we are watching quietly.

「Yosh, let's get going too—oi, what's with you two?」

Daniel and Raymond grabbed me when I'm about to return to the school building.

「We're in the middle of talking!」

「How about you tell us in detail about your relationship with that girl called Marie. We want to hear it as comrades in the same group.」

The comrades in the group of poor baron.

Looks like it will be troublesome if I don't dispel the misunderstanding.

.

Part 7

—And, because of that I consulted Marie.

But that Marie is being seriously despondent right now.

「—No one invited me to the tea party in the fifth month.」

Not only the group of five of the prince and others, all the boys who held tea party in the fifth month ignored her. Marie is sitting while hugging her knees.

『In Marie's case, perhaps the boys hesitated because her house is too horrible?』

Marie stood up and held her head hearing Luxion's calm reply.

「I'm tired hearing that kind of correct answer! They should evaluate my personal character more!」

「Don't be unreasonable.」

Marriage between nobles is political marriage no matter how you cut it.

For example, there are many stories of people who love each other are unable to marry because of their houses' circumstances.

Like difference in status, or the difference in faction between the two houses, and many other reasons.

「Why! That otome game's world should be a world that is kind to girl!」

「It's hard mode for the men though.」

It seems that Marie is also in hard mode.

I'm getting sad watching her.

「More importantly, I explained my relationship between you and me to my friends. They're getting noisy asking me to request you and introduce them to girls.」

「You, be kinder to me! —Or rather, how about you introduce them to girls?」

「But I don't have any girl acquaintance.」

「What do you mean by that huuuh!」

「Ouch!」

『You two looks like you are having fun.』

Marie kicked my shin. It really hurt.

Or rather, this girl has a power that can't be imagined from her small body.

I waited for the agitated Marie to calm down before we resumed talking.

「No, that's why—I don't have any acquaintance who seem like they will be able to introduce girls. Jena—my big sis has bad personality, so surely her friends also has bad personality.」

If I asked her to introduce girls, I can imagine her saying 「We have no time for poor nobles from countryside」.

Even though she herself is also that countryside poor noble.

「Then, I can introduce them to girls.」

「Eh, you can do that!?」

When I looked shocked, Marie looked at me and said 「You're looking down on me too much」 angrily.

.

Part 8

I came to the bar that is often used by the poor baron group.

Marie brought the girls who she will introduce. The atmosphere inside the bar is different from usual.

The seniors and students from the same grade—everyone is smiling at me.

「Leon-kun, I believed in you.」

「Leon, you are the best friend one can ask for.」

「Talk to me if you need anything. I'll do everything I can if it's for your sake!」

I let out a strange chuckle seeing the guys who were glaring at me until several days ago when we passed each other changing their attitude so easily like flipping a hand.

Inside the bar there are three girls other than Marie.

One girl is fiddling with her hair, and another girl is looking nervous.

The last girl has unkempt hair and her clothes are also a bit messy.

There are painting tools attached on her uniform.

I approached Marie and asked her.

「Oi, where did you find those girls?」

We were also gathering information but, we never catch sight of these girls.

Marie is eating meat while teaching me about the girls.

「They are the shut-in girls.」

「Shut-in!?」

「The girl fiddling with her hair is a lazy child. The nervous girl is not good with place that has a lot of people, so she is studying alone in the dorm. The last one is something of an artist—she doesn't really has much interest in anything else.」

The three of them are problem children.

But, Raymond's glasses glinted hearing that explanation.

「Marie-san, can I ask the reason why the three of them has no exclusive servant?」

Marie drank her juice to wash down the food in her mouth into her stomach while answering.

「They aren't interested. It seems the nervous girl is scared toward demi-human. It seems the three of them don't want to get out of house after marrying. It doesn't matter whether it's at the countryside or the capital, I think they will marry you if you can provide them with an environment where they can be shut-in.」

The girl who is fiddling with her hair doesn't want to work so it'll be indispensable to give her servant.

The nervous girl wanted books so her condition is to let her buy books periodically.

The artist girl's condition is to let her paint.

—What's with that favorable condition?

Daniel stood up.

「—I'll go into offense seriously.」

「Wait, Daniel! I'm first!」

Seeing the two starting to quarrel, I shook my head in exasperation.

「How ugly to quarrel like that. Then, I'll—」

While I'm thinking of who to speak to among the three—Marie glared at me.

「What?」

「Nothing.」

Marie turned away and resumed eating again. While I'm looking at her in confusion—Daniel and Raymond looked at me with appalled look.

「Leon, that's not right.」

「Yeah. You're the worst.」

I can't believe their reaction.

「What's with you guys!」

In the end that day a conflict revolving around the three girls erupted within the group.

That was just how great the three girls' conditions are.

If it is the previous life—the previous world, the three of them might be problem children but, in this world they are too much of an excellent product that it made you wanted to doubt whether it might be actually a trap.

—I also wanted to aim at them.

.

Part 9

The tea party in the fifth month.

「In the end it's only you who came to my tea party huh.」

Marie's eyes sparkled in front of the prepared tea and snacks.

She looked like she is going to drool even now.

「It's alright. It's better than not having anyone coming at all. More importantly, this is the sweets from a famous shop right? I wanted to try eating it just once~」

Holding a tea party inside a room that you borrowed and invited girls. That's the tea party of the fifth month.

It's the common sense of this academy for boys to entertain girls like this.

Luxion floated inside the room and looked toward me and Marie alternately.

『Master, it's good that the sweets and tea you prepared doesn't go to waste isn't it?』

『Really. Everyone got heated up saying I'm going to the tea party of prince and the others~. They are really a bother to the other boys. Are the prince and the others really that great?』

I heard that Daniel and Raymond also have it hard.

Boys with popularity numbered five. They said that the venues where they held their tea party are spacious and wonderful.

The girls who are invited there are also many, because of that the number of boys who got rejected when inviting girls to tea party is a lot.

—Honestly, it's also troubling for us to get compared with the prince and the other conquest targets.

Marie looked at me.

『What?』

『—You, aren't you embarrassed comparing yourself with those five?』

『I, it's none of your business. You yourself, you also aimed to have reverse harem with those five.』

Marie held her cup with both hands and sipped the tea bit by bit.

『Aa~, that. Thinking back now, I'm glad I didn't do that.』

『So you finally gave up.』

Aiming for reverse harem is unfaithful no matter how you looked at it.

Marie placed down her cup and started eating a cake.

「The conquest targets are even more lacking in charm than I thought. They are only acting soft toward Olivia, and they are a bit stupid.」

Luxion agreed with that evaluation.

『Even though they also have fiancée, they are often together with the main character Olivia. They also have their status to think of. —I can't comprehend them.』

「Luxion, you don't get it at all. What Marie wanted to say is she can't forgive those five for choosing Olivia rather than her. Those things about charm and whatever are just excuse.」

Good look, good finance, great authority—those guys have everything.

Marie pouted while objecting.

「Even personality is an important factor. What I want to say is that those five are failure in that respect.」

「Is that so? Their reputation is quite good though.」

Their surrounding might only flattering them but, I haven't heard any bad rumor about them.

「Or rather, thinking carefully it'll be impossible to go out with them. Did you hear? The venue of Brad's tea party reserved a garden in the capital.」

「Aa~, in the game it was also like that.」

「That sounds plausible if it's in the game, but doing that in the real life is just no good isn't it? Just how much money he is using for only a tea party I wonder.」

When it came to a topic of money, I can feel that this girl also commoner like me.

But—.

「By the way, the snacks and tea that you are eating right now—they will fetch a really high price if they are totaled.」

The sweets in this world are really expensive.

Even the sweets I prepared are something I especially ordered from a patisserie chef. So the price is really high.

Marie's eyes opened wide hearing that.

「Tha, that much!？」

「It takes money to order special sweets from a chef of famous shop.」

Marie muttered 「How many underwear and socks I'll be able to buy with that much money」 with a serious face.

『Do you have problem with your underwear and socks?』

「—My, my growth stopped, so all this time I'm using hand-me-down—that's—even if there is hole in my socks I can't buy a new one.」

Marie looked embarrassed, but I'm pitying her even more than that it felt like I'm going to cry.

「Yo, you—said that from the beginning!」

「There's no way I can say something so embarrassing easily!」

This girl too must be desperate to get out of her harsh life.

「Do you understand my feeling when my family told me there is no need to buy new clothes because I'm not growingggg!」

I calmed down the agitated Marie.

「I, I get it so calm down. Let's go out to the city and shop after this. A, anyway, let's quickly buy the necessary items.」

「I don't have any money. Soon it will be the adventure part—that's not it. We will be able to enter the dungeon soon, so I'm planning to earn money there. That's why, I'll bear with this for now.」

Luxion honestly evaluated Marie highly.

This guy, isn't he spoiling Marie?

『Earning money yourself if you don't have money. What a wonderful mentality. It's also admirable how you don't simply run toward doing crime.』

「Eh? Is that so? This girl is a woman who aimed to get reverse harem in order to get out of poverty you know?」

『—It'll be better if master learn from Marie more.』

Is he telling me to aim for reverse harem?

It should be harem for a man—but a harem in this world—there is no such thing huh.

I'll rather be a bachelor rather than providing for women like big sis.

Although, the demerit of being a bachelor is too many that I can't choose it. It's frustrating.

Marie muttered with a dark expression—.

「I need to work hard to be able to buy the necessary items at the very least. —When I become able to enter dungeon, I'll earn money every day in the dungeon. I need money to become independent.」

—This girl, it looked like she is seriously planning to challenge the dungeon every day.

「I'll buy you the necessary items at least, so stop with the stupid plan like entering dungeon every day.」

When I said that I'll buy them for her, Marie clasped her hands and made a smile.

She pressed her arm to her sides and took a sly pose.

「You will!?」

「A girl at your age wearing socks with holes in it is just too pitiful. I'll pay that much money at least.」

Luxion looked at me and,

『Oh, is master hiding your embarrassment? Won't it be fine to honestly say that you pity Marie?』

「—Shut up.」

Thanks to one of her anxiety vanishing, Marie continued enjoying her tea and sweets with a smile.

.

Part 10

Now then, after that—there isn't any big event occurring for a mob like me.

I normally went through my academy life and normally challenged the dungeon to earn money for the tea party expenses—such days were continuing and before I noticed the first term is about to end.

When I noticed, there is only Marie showing up even when I held a tea party.

Other than her there is only the second daughter Jena who sometimes will come to make fun of me.

—Like today.

「Foolish little brother, are you seriously going to marry Marie?」

「Haa?」

Jena talked without any interest toward me who is preparing second serving of tea.

「You invited that girl to your tea party every time right? Though it seems she isn't here today.」

「Today she is going to the city to get her dress. That girl don't has any dress, so she was worrying what to do for the party before the long vacation.」

「That girl is really poor isn't she? —Even if there is no problem with that girl herself, that girl's house is a trouble.」

I don't understand the true intention of Jena who is saying that while eating sweets.

It's like she is giving me a warning.

「I don't have romantic relationship with that girl. —We are friends, or perhaps just two people with troublesome tie you can't cut off?」

We both are fellow reincarnator.

We can understand each other better than anyone else in this world.

My Japanese sensitivity from the previous world doesn't really work in this world after all.

Jena is looking at me with a doubting gaze.

「Well, it's you who will have it hard, so I'm not going to stop you.」

「What's with you today? More importantly, big sis yourself, have you managed to land a marriage with someone?」

「Unlike you I have a lot of choices. Even now I'm receiving advances from several people.」

Jena's personality became worse due to the capital's influence, even so there are still boys approaching her.

Her look—isn't that bad.

Our house also has no more debt and in the middle of developing thanks to my investment.

She is from a baron house in countryside, so she is also not involved with any bad faction. From those it seems she is an excellent article.

For this kind of horrible woman to be an excellent article, this world is really terrible.

Even so—Marie's house is a problem huh.

When she earned money, her family seemed to catch wind of it and made a debt using Marie's name.

The culprit was Marie's actual big sister so it's not funny at all.

.

Part 11

The party before the long vacation is separated by the academic year.

The party that is held in a wide venue is really extravagant.

It's a buffet party and the foods that are lined up are cooked by first class chefs.

Live music is filling the inside of the venue. I have no memory of attending a party of this level even in my previous life.

「Another world is really amazing.」

「Rright!」

I looked at Marie who is stuffing her mouth full of foods.

She is eating food enjoyably in her dress that she just bought.

As for her dress, it's the cute type if I have to say what kind of dress it is.

There is also Marie's atmosphere to consider but, she looked childish no matter how you see it.

She looked like a little girl wearing dress to act like an adult, making a really warming sight.

Setting that aside,

「—Why am I alone with just you?」

Both Daniel and Raymond are with the girls that Marie introduced to them so they aren't here.

Originally I wanted to go around together with them to talk to girls and yet—what heartless friends they are.

They are trying to find partner quickly to escape from the harsh marriage hunting race by themselves.

—That's unforgivable.

When I'm thinking to get in their way, Marie loaded a mountain of food on her plate while moving her gaze.

When I followed her gaze, over there is his highness Julius—and Olivia-san.

Olivia-san who is wearing uniform is also surrounded by boys other than his highness Julius.

「Do you still have lingering attachment?」

While I'm wondering if she still hasn't given up yet, Marie shook her head.

「Stupid. The world where we live is too different~, I'm just thinking that. I understood a lot of things in this term. I and those five—won't be able to see eye to eye.」

Even luxury that is shocking for Marie is normal or modest from those five's perspective.

It seems she is also feeling jealous but, she is also accepting that it's fine like this.

「It helps that you understand. With this there is no one getting in Olivia-san's way.」

If the main character Olivia-san become a couple with someone among those five—the world will also be saved.

A great uncertain factor will disappear with that.

The two of us are watching the party of the nobles from near the party venue's wall.

It's really a different world.

It's not about other world or anything like that—the world we are living in feels different from them.

「—Ah」

Marie let out her voice. There Angelica-san is talking to his highness Julius.

She is glaring at Olivia-san and trying to separate them.

His highness Julius got angry from that.

Seeing that Marie is—.

「Hey, thinking carefully, isn't it wrong to be all over other woman in front of your fiancée? Even without thinking carefully, it's no good to get close to a man who has fiancée.」

「How about you look at mirror? But, I agree with that opinion.」

It's the scenario of that otome game so it can't be helped.

Thinking of it like that, then that's that but—it's certainly a horrible story.

「Does she love a man who abandoned his fiancée to choose her? I don't get woman.」

It looks like I can't understand woman's feeling.

Marie talked about this situation from the perspective of woman.

「But, to abandon his fiancée like that when he met someone that he love—putting it another way, it's like he is proclaiming that he

will abandon that girl too if he meet a more charming woman. I'll be put off if it's me.]

「That should be a situation a woman will yearn for shouldn't it?」

「Yearning and reality are different. It's only a misunderstanding that came from the heat of the moment. But when you cooled down, you will think 'no way~' about it.」

Certainly, that kind of situation happening in reality will make you tilt your head.

The people themselves might be getting heated up saying 'It's forbidden love!', but the surrounding will be cooling down watching it.

But, hearing that from Marie made it sounded like a gag.

「Those are words that I wish a certain someone who was planning for reverse harem can hear.」

Marie is hitting me repeatedly when I laughed at her.

「What's with that! Say it if you've complaint!」

「Not really. I'm also agreeing with your opinion.」

Then—the venue got strangely quiet.

When I looked around, I saw gazes gathering on us.

Luxion who is hiding nearby explained the situation.

『Since some time ago everyone in this place is listening attentively to the argument of Julius and Angelica. There is also the timing of the change of music where the place became quiet at the same time when the conversation of the two of you was heating up.』

—So our talk got heard by the surrounding.

I and Marie broke into cold sweat.

「Wha, what now?」

Asked by Marie, I—took Marie's hand and escaped from the venue.

「Pa, pardon us!」

「Pardon us!」

We escaped from the venue together and after that the live music resumed playing.

—Too late! Read the atmosphere more you guys!

「What have you done huh! We became conspicuous just now!」

「Don't make it sounds like my fault! More importantly, I can't eat all the types of food now!」

So you're prioritizing your hunger rather than sex appeal huh—this girl is really a good-for-nothing reincarnator.

The area is dark when we got outside.

Luxion's single eye shined and illuminated the surrounding.

Marie turned back toward the venue and—.

「I wanted to have more fun.」

She casted her gaze down in dejection.

A bit of guilt welled up inside me.

After all this girl was enjoying the party in her own way.

「There will be a lot of chance to go to party as long as you are in the academy so don't worry.」

「The parties that I can come to are only the parties that I can join while I'm in the academy.」

When the party before the end-of-term ceremony is over, a long vacation will be waiting.

「—More importantly, what is your plan for the summer vacation? Will you return home?」

When I asked her that, the answer she gave me is horrible.

「I was told with a letter to stay in the academy and earn money. The letter also told me to send money home. The letter came from the whole family.」

It's too horrible I can't even say anything.

The silence continued for a while, then I can't endure anymore and invited Marie.

「It's not the capital but, want to come to my home?」

「Your home?」

「I plan to return to my own territory during the long vacation. Over there—it has hot spring.」

「Hot spring!」

Marie suddenly turned happy. I felt a bit relieved seeing that.

「Not just that! —There is also rice.」

「RICEEEE!」

Marie rejoiced and ran around on that spot.

For us reincarnator, it's really difficult to be able to eat the staple food from our previous world.

She is really happy that it became possible to eat that food.

「What about miso!? Shoyu!?」

「No, those are still impossible.」

Hearing that Marie said 「Ee~」 in disappointment. Luxion are complaining beside me seeing Marie like that.

『I'll be able to prepare them immediately if only master isn't fixated with the natural product though.』

That kind of thing is the same but different in nutrient or taste.

This guy can prepare that, but I'm a member of natural faction.

「I want to eat the natural product」 「I like the natural product better」

We looked at each other's face hearing that our opinion overlapped.

It felt a bit embarrassing that both of us averted our face.

Luxion said 『Is that so. Then please wait one more year』 .

This guy is amazing.

It seems he will be able to prepare miso and shoyu in just one more year.

—Can't he make it faster?

Marie is getting into high spirit looking forward to the long vacation—and fell down.

「Oy, are you okay?」

「—It has been a long time since I'm wearing high heel, so my feet hurt.」

This is because she forced herself and bought something like high heel.

Marie used healing magic to her own ankle. Seeing that I recalled the past.

Once my little sister from the previous life said that her feet hurt and cried. She wouldn't move then.

I left her and went home, but I got worried after a while and returned.

—That girl, she got tired and fell asleep.

Recalling that, I turned my back toward Marie who finished the healing and crouched down.

「Come on, I'll send you back so hop on.」

「Aren't you considerate. Take me till the girl dormitory then please.」

How far you are going to act similar like my little sister?

Say thank you first.

.

Part 12

Marie recalled the past on Leon's back.

Luxion was illuminating the dark path inside the academy.

(I'm recalling the past. Come to think of it—big bro also carried me on his back like this.)

She recalled that annoying big brother.

Since he died because of her fault, she was regretting it all the time.

She recalled what happened in the previous world and strongly hugged Leon's back.

「Oi, that hurt.」

Leon complained, but seeing how similar he was with her big brother she was irritated—and happy.

「Don't complain and walk quicker.」

Tears came out. She got embarrassed and buried her face on Leon's back.

(In the end, I was hopeless all the time without big bro there.)

Her life went off the rail since her big brother died.

He got bad mouth and his personality—was also bad, but at heart he was a kind big brother.

That big brother and Leon overlapped with each other.

But, Marie thought.

(I wonder if big bro also reincarnate? —I hope he is happy if that's the case.)

She recalled her big brother who died young and lifted up her face to look at the sky. There the moon was pretty.

「Hey, what kind of place your home is?」

「It's a countryside. The place is quite and slow but, I like it.」

「You, I get the feeling that place like the capital isn't your favorite.」

「That's because I don't like how messy it is. I don't want to get busy and work.」

「Uwa, that's the line of hopeless person.」

(Big bro also said something like that before.)

Marie thought back of everything until now on Leon's back.

(Those times I talked to those four, I also wasn't really fired up. I'm not suitable with the prince and those four.)

She tried to aim at the four other than Julius together with Leon, but she didn't feel any feeling of 'this is it' from them.

Now she understood the reason for that.

(—Aa~, my interest in man is really bad. To think that I'll like someone who is like big bro, what a shocking truth for my second life.)

Marie thought such thing while making stupid talk with Leon.

.

Part 13

The end-of-term ceremony ended safely and the day to return home arrived.

Father came to pick me up at the port.

I'm waiting for Marie who doesn't arrive in time.

「That girl, she is late.」

Both Nix and Jena has already headed to the port.

Luxion is considering the reason of Marie's lateness.

『—Perhaps her preparation is taking time?』

「Woman is taking a lot of time for this kind of thing after all.」

『Or perhaps, she overslept.』

「That's possible.」

—But, my chest is feeling uneasy since this morning.

I can't calm down no matter what.

『Master, should we go pick her up?』

「Yeah. But, I can't enter the girl's dormitory.」

While we are making such talk, some girls wearing uniform passed in front of us.

But, their talk made me curious.

「That felt good.」

「It was because she was impudent. That felt refreshing.」

「It's her fault to stand out like that in the party.」

The mean looking trio of girls are followed by exclusive servants.

I got a bad premonition hearing their talk.

「Party? Refreshing? —Luxion, search for Marie.」

I started running. Luxion headed toward the girl's dormitory ahead of me.

—Don't tell me, something happened to that girl?

.

Part 14

Marie whose hair was still messy from sleeping was running while carrying a traveling bag.

「I OVERSLEPTT!」

She was nervous yesterday and couldn't sleep well.

She thought about meeting Leon's family, and she was also worried that her family would try something.

—Besides, she was feeling a bad premonition.

Thanks to that she slept really late yesterday.

And then, when she woke up there wasn't long until the meeting time.

「Hau!」

Marie prepared in a great hurry and rushed out of her room, but she collided with a female student when turning around the corner.

Marie fell but she immediately got up.

「Ouch ouch—ah, are you alright!? I'm sorry. I was in a hurry so—eh?」

When she offered her hand toward the girl she collided with, Marie got really scared seeing that girl's eyes.

The female student with the dark gaze was—Olivia.

Olivia stood up like nothing had happened and walked away while ignoring Marie.

Marie realized that she was breaking in cold sweat.

「Wha, what. What was that?」

—It was really scary.

Her image of Olivia was someone who was always smiling cheerfully, but just now she was expressionless with cloudy eyes.

It made Marie scared.

(What? She looks like she is hating everything—I have seen several girls making that kind of eyes but, did something happen?)

She considered chasing after Olivia, but her legs wouldn't move.

Her heart was beating loudly in her chest.

Then—.

『Oh, it seems you really overslept.』

「Fuwah! I, it's you Luxion. Don't surprise me like that.」

The uneasy Marie wiped her sweat and picked up her traveling bag.

『Master is worried. He thought that perhaps something happened.』

「I, I'm sorry. I couldn't sleep well yesterday and when I woke up the time was—」

While she was making excuse, Luxion moved his single eye in a nodding gesture.

『It's fine if there is no problem. Then, let us depart.』

「Ri, right.」

Marie who recalled what just happened was really concerned about Olivia.

But, thinking whether it was alright for her to call out to her when they weren't close at all, and with how Leon and his family were waiting for her—she didn't go after Olivia.

.

Part 15

「Are you a kid, oversleeping like that!」

「I, I'm sorry.」

I'm seriously relieved hearing that the reason Marie was late because she overslept.

I got a bad premonition, but in the first place my instinct isn't that accurate.

I'm glad my instinct was wrong.

Both of us hurried toward the port into the docking place for airships.

I talked with Marie while walking.

「Has the ship departed?」

It seems she is worried whether father's ship has departed or not.

「It's a private ship so it can be flexible. Though the port will complain at us.」

『It's fine even if we are left behind. My Partner can send the two of you there.』

「Partner will stand out. You made it too big.」

『It was because of master's instruction. It wasn't my fault.』

「Is that so? Yeah it is huh.」

I also made small talk with Luxion, but the strange bad premonition in my chest hasn't calmed down since some time ago.

「—Marie, did nothing really happen?」

I worriedly checked with Marie, but the person herself doesn't understand what I'm talking about.

「What do you mean?」

「That's why—no, as I thought forget it.」

「Wait! I got curious now so say it already!」

This girl will only laugh even if I told her I have this strange bad premonition.

I looked at Luxion.

「Luxion, did anything strange happen yesterday?」

『Does master think I'm grasping everything in this academy? I never received such order, so I'm not investigating anything.』

What an annoying guy.

Marie looked at Luxion and made a disappointed face.

「Even though I thought that an AI would be more amazing than this. Could it be, that you're a slightly hopeless child?」

Marie's words seem to lit fire under Luxion. He retorted back.

『I can't pretend to ignore that. The cause is because master didn't order me to collect information due to his disinterest with the matter of the academy. How can you expect result from me even though I wasn't even ordered for anything like that? In the first place, I'm not someone with nothing to do. My main body is working hard even now to build a workshop in master's home. Not doing anything needless is also the proof of excellence—』

Marie ignored the passionately talking Luxion and showed interest toward the topic of workshop.

『You have a workshop!? Eh, could it be you're rich!?』

『That's still in the future. It'll be better to have a lot of source of income after all.』

『How nice~』

Both I and Marie are losing interest at Luxion's explanation.

Luxion said.

『—Both of you have similar personality. The way you two ignored my explanation is also exactly the same.』

『How are we similar!?\』 『Where are we similar!?\』

My voice overlapped with Marie again.

It's embarrassing—and funny.

We laughed together.

『First I want to eat rice when we arrived at Leon's home. Also—rice cracker!』

「I'll prepare that but, how should I say it, your taste is subdued.」

「It's fine isn't it. You can eat it as it is with its crispy texture, but it's also tasty to eat it when it's slightly damp.」

「That's tasty but, there is something else than that.」

「Mochi?」

This girl, hoping for rice cracker or mochi—.

No, I understand her feeling though.

My bad premonition calmed down and I'm getting relaxed.

It seemed the bad premonition was just my imagination.

While we're getting heated up with our talk, a docking place for small airship came into view at the other side of the port.

It looks like the airship will depart from the dock with just a little bit more time.

「Oh, we come in a nice timing. Let's get on it.」

「I'm taking the window seat!」

Marie broke into a run. Seeing her I thought of how energetic she is while thinking that she is similar with my little sister.

Do I have some kind of destiny with little sister character whether it's in the previous life or in this life?

Suddenly something weighed my mind and I looked back.

There is this thing weighing my mind no matter what.

There was also the strange bad premonition this morning—I'm looking back wondering if it's alright like this.

『Master, is something the matter?』

「—It's nothing.」

Marie boarded the airship and waved her hand energetically at me.

「That girl is lively too today.」

It feels like I made some kind of mistake but—surely it's just my imagination.

Short Story - Marie Route The Second

Part 1

It was the second term of the academy.

Marie Fou Lafan who should be still a first year was, —was in a religious establishment that was called temple.

That place had the construction that reminded her of the church in her previous life. Marie was wearing a pure white dress in that place.

When she looked up at the stained glass through her veil, the sunlight that shined in through there was very pretty.

It was the wedding dress that she had never worn till the end in her previous life despite her yearning for it.

In addition, the relatives of her and her partner were in attendance inside the temple.

She was in the middle of a marriage ceremony. It was a dream of hers that didn't come true in her previous life.

(—Why did it turn out like this)

But, Marie's feeling was—the worst.

It hadn't been even one year since she enrolled into the academy.

And yet, she was going to marry like this.

It wasn't just an engagement, it was a marriage that would make her withdraw from the academy.

When she glanced at her family who was sitting on the bench, they were looking really delighted.

Her family in this life couldn't be called as good family even as flattery, but there was a reason why they were happy with Marie's marriage.

Her father in this life said.

「Our useless youngest daughter fetched a really good price.」

Her mother in this life was also looking happy.

「Indeed. With this the debt of our house will be gone.」

—Marie was sold off by her family.

(These guys are absolutely unforgivable!)

Marie gritted her teeth and trembled in fury. Her bridegroom was walking toward her.

Marie cursed in her heart seeing the appearance of that bridegroom.

(—This guy, I got a really bad feeling from him!)

He sighed seeing Marie's appearance and approached her side with a reluctant air.

The man's age had passed thirty years old. He looked unhealthy with fat body. The man took off his gaze from Marie.

「Why do I have to marry with this kind of pipsqueak. Even though my preference is a more glamorous woman.」

His attitude was full of discontent and in addition his words were like this.

Marie was seething with anger.

(It's you house that approached us with this marriageeeeeee!)

Setting aside Marie's mental age, if one looked at only her physical body then she was still 16 years old.

She was recognized as an adult in this world and could also marry.

But, from Marie's view—right now her enjoyable academy life was taken away from her and she was forcefully married to a man who she didn't even like.

Besides, her being sold by her family like this wasn't funny at all.

She couldn't agree with this marriage at all.

(Don't screw with me! Why do I have to go through this—this marriage without even any dream or hope in the world of "that otome game". I want to marry—properly with someone I love—)

Marie had continued living in hardship since she reincarnated into the world of that otome game.

Her only hope was enrolling into the academy one day and for that she polished her healing magic until now.

She trained so much that she sacrificed her body's growth thanks to that.

She trained her healing magic in secret because if her family learned it then surely they would make use of it as they pleased.

They were a really horrible bunch compared to her family in the previous life.

After all, their debt bloated up too much—that they sold Marie to a rich house in exchange of writing off their debts.

(How much hardship do you think I have gone through until now!? Even though I was finally able to enroll into the academy and have a quite enjoyable life even if it differed from my original plan!)

The priest—the equivalent of it in this world began the marriage ceremony where the two were standing.

「Well then, let's begin the marriage ceremony.」

The bridegroom looked like he wanted this ceremony to be over quickly.

He wasn't interested at all about Marie from the start.

What interested him—was only Marie's lineage.

The groom's house was so to speak an upstart house.

And then, the way they were climbing up to their current position was also peculiar. Other nobles held antipathy toward them.

Because it was that kind of house, they wanted noble blood no matter what.

It wasn't like it had to be Marie.

「End it quickly.」

What would happen to her if she married someone like this?

Marie could easily imagine it.

Surely a loveless marriage would be waiting for her.

In the worst case, she would be treated coldly after she gave birth to a child because they had no more need of her.

(I decided I will do my best this time—I want to be happy in my second life, and yet!)

Tears came out.

And then, Marie recalled her big brother in the previous life.

Looking back now, he was a very reliable big brother.

(—Save me, Onii-chan.)

Marie muttered in her heart, and then—she recalled how it became like this.

.

Part 2

Around the time when there were only several days of summer vacation remaining.

I, Leon Fou Bartfalt was spending my time relaxing in my home.

My partner Luxion is floating around my right shoulder, His single red lenses that served like an eye is watching Collin and—Marie running around the garden.

Marie is angrily chasing Collin around.

「WAIT YOU BRATTTTT!」

Collin is running while laughing.

「No way~」

Marie is chasing my little brother around, but the reason for that lies in Collin.

「They are quarreling again?」

I'm watching in exasperation. Luxion explained the situation to me.

『Yes. It was caused by master's little brother teasing Marie.』

It seems that Collin is thinking of Marie like a big sister who isn't that much older than him.

He would make fun of Marie who was acting as someone older and played with her.

It would be better if Marie ignored it, but Marie herself also became worked up so it needlessly amused Collin.

Then father came out from the mansion and dropped his fist on Collin's head.

「Ouch!」

「Collin, don't make fun of Marie-chan!」

Marie who was chasing Collin around is flustered by father's act.

「E, err, mister, you don't need to go that—」

Father looked apologetic toward Marie.

「Sorry, Marie-chan. It's not that Collin dislike you. I hope you won't hate him.」

「Ah, yes.」

Collin pressed his head with both hands and ran into the mansion. In exchange Nix—the second son came out.

He walked toward me and immediately talked to me.

「Collin was making fun of Marie-chan again?」

「That's right. The two of them won't get tired of it. They are like siblings who are close in age.」

I said that while laughing flippantly. Big bro shrugged.

「She is his sister-in-law after all, so it's not wrong.」

「—Eh?」

I'm looking shocked hearing that reply. Big bro also looked shocked.

「Eh?」

「No, because—eh? Why is Marie a sister-in-law?」

「—Yo, you, are you seriously saying that?」

I'm also troubled seeing big bro is seriously shocked.

「No, because—」

「None of that! You brought her home and live together with her for more than a month! From outside it looks no different than the two of you being married already!」

We aren't officially married but, from the surrounding's perspective, for a girl to spend her whole summer vacation in a boy's home is—certainly it might look like we are engaged.

「That's not the case! Marie is, you know—she can't return home.」

About Marie's home, it's a terrible family based from what I heard.

Because of that, Marie said that she doesn't want to go home during summer holiday, so I brought her to my home.

Naturally I never laid my hands on her.

There is my floating island near this home. It has hot spring and field—rice and some more things are cultivated there.

The most we did was only going into hot spring and eating Japanese food in delight after so long.

Marie is also a reincarnator like me.

We get along well because we have the same sense of values, but that's all there is to it.

In the first place, Marie love handsome man.

If I'm asked whether I'm handsome, that's not the case. I'm not that girl's preference.

And then I myself love big breasts.

Marie is flat like board so she is out of question.

—Both our preferences doesn't match each other to a lamentable degree.

Big bro is looking at me with a conflicted expression.

「There is no guarantee that you'll be able to find another good girl like that again. Besides father and mother are thinking that you and Marie-chan will marry.」

—Is that why my parents are strangely kind to Marie?

It feels like it will be a big trouble if this misunderstanding isn't dispelled.

Big bro sighed.

「You really have it good. You were able to immediately find a partner in the academy after all. Even though I have it hard because I can't find anyone.」

It looks like big bro is also suffering from the marriage hunting.

Unlike me he is enrolling into normal class, so I thought his marriage hunting would be easier but—it seems that's not the case.

「I thought that if it's big bro's class then you will be able to find a girl right away.」

Big bro scratched his head.

「Even the girls in normal class want to live in the capital. They are looking for someone with connection that can allow them to live in the capital or the main land at least. Someone like me isn't even their second or third pick.」

Looks like big bro also has it hard.

I want to help him somehow but—right now I have my hands full with my own situation so it's impossible.

「More importantly, Leon. You two will also return to the academy tomorrow right?」

「That's the plan.」

My mood got heavy when I thought of the marriage hunting waiting for me in the academy.

It's the same for big bro.

He sighed and made a very troubled face.

「I still cannot find a girl yet even though I'll graduate this year. If only I can be skillful like you.」

「—Big bro.」

「Oi, stop it. Don't look at me with pity. Being pitied by my little brother makes me want to cry.」

Really, I wonder why this world is so harsh toward men?

No, is it more like it's harsh toward mob?

Unlike us, the main character of that otome game Olivia-san and the boys who are the conquest targets must be enjoying their summer vacation right now without worrying about anything.

—I'm really jealous.

.

Part 3

Around that time.

In the academy's female dormitory, Olivia was sitting on her bed inside her ransacked room.

She was hugging her knees and trembling.

The room was dark with the curtain closed completely.

「I'm fine—I'm still fine.」

Olivia muttered to herself. There were dark circles under her eyes.

Her hand was holding a letter that was sent to her from her home town.

It was a letter from her family.

For Olivia this letter was the support of her heart.

Olivia was a scholarship student, but although she wasn't troubled about her living cost in the academy, it didn't mean she had any leeway monetarily.

That was why, she couldn't return home even though it was summer holiday.

She spent her summer holiday in the student dormitory and immersed herself in her study every day so that she could keep up

with her surrounding as much as possible—or that should be the case.

But, the reality was merciless.

Her room was knocked. Olivia twitched from that sound and she lifted up her face.

「Hih」

She almost screamed, so she covered her mouth with her hands. Then the voice of an academy staff called out.

『—Olivia-san, his highness is waiting for you in front of the dormitory. Please prepare immediately.』

The staff only said that and left.

Olivia buried her face into her knees.

「—Why won't he leave me alone」

In the summer holiday, the young noblemen including Julius frequently came to the girl's dormitory to invite Olivia.

Because the five of them invited her one after another, Olivia was unable to secure any time for studying.

This time when there were few female students in the academy was a precious time for Olivia.

But those five were taking that time away from her.

「Even though I want to study more」

But, with her standing, Olivia was unable to refuse the invitation from Julius.

At first she didn't know that Julius was the crown prince, but now she knew.

She was unable to refuse him, and if she accepted the invitation from Julius, she also couldn't refuse the invitation from the other boys—those young noblemen.

And when she got close with those five like that, she got resented by the girls in the academy.

「What should I do? Just what should I do.」

It would be nice if she could honestly tell them that they were a bother, but if she said such thing then Olivia would lose her place to belong.

The other party was his highness the crown prince—the next king of this country.

It wouldn't affect just herself. She didn't know what kind of harm it would cause to her birth place.

Olivia stood up and prepared herself for going out before heading out to meet Julius.

.

Part 4

When the second term started, even a mob will get really busy.

Even just speaking about the events of the academy alone, there are the academy festival and field trip in the schedule.

I'm thinking to do something in the academy festival, but there is bigger problem than that—.

「Marie-sama, please introduce girls to us too!」

—It's these boys from the poor baron group who are bowing toward Marie.

And then Marie is—.

「Oh? You aren't telling me to do it for free aren't you?」

—She is sitting on a chair while getting cocky.

She crossed her arms and legs with a composed smile.

I wanted to teach this girl the word humility.

The boy who acted as the leader negotiated with Marie, but behind him the boys were waiting with bloodcurling expression.

From first year to third year—almost everyone is here.

「Of course! We will do anything that we can! That's why—please introduce girls—wonderful girls to everyone!」

「What to do~」

Before Marie introduced girls who were a bit problematic to us.

If this is the previous world—Japan, they would be girls who are a bit problematic.

A shut-in girl, a lazy girl, a girl who is only interested to her hobby, those kinds of girls.

But, in this world a problem of that degree is the same like no problem at all.

Rather, they can be called as wonderful girls.

For heirs of poor baron houses like us, the girls who Marie introduced to us are goddesses.

No, is that too exaggerating? Anyway there is no doubt that they are excellent articles.

They are so excellent that they are girls who you will beg to go out with you even if you have to duel the others for it.

For example, it's fine even if the girl keeps shutting herself in her room and won't go out to classes or academy events.

It's also fine even if they spend their days doing nothing with the reason that it's troublesome.

A girl who has no interest at all to anything except her hobby and won't even remember people's name is also alright.

Just that much can simply be considered as their uniqueness because the normal girls are too horrible compared to them.

Marie who is close to such problematic—no, unique girls is asking for intermediation fee to the boys.

「Then—perhaps I'll ask for the student cafeteria's pudding every day. I want to eat pudding at lunch every day.」

「Eh!？」

It's just a pudding from student cafeteria but, this academy is a school for nobles.

Naturally, even the pudding that is sold in the cafeteria is really extravagant.

To speak in modern Japan's term, it's the cafeteria's famous sweets that is priced 1000 yen a piece.

By the way, fundamentally student can make use of the student cafeteria for free, but change of menu or ordering additional side menu will be charged with money.

I looked at Marie with exasperation.

「How can you ask for pudding just for introducing someone? What's more you're asking it for every day.」

As expected even Marie seemed to think that she was asking too much. She hesitated slightly.

「Be, because, I want to eat it. I, I get it. Then, I'll be fine with just three pudding per week.」

The male students opened their eyes wide in shock hearing that.

「Thre, three!?」

Marie is also surprised, and then she compromised.

「The, then—once per week」

The boys formed a circle and began discussing.

「Oi, do we really only need to prepare pudding? For some reason, her demand is gradually decreasing though!?!」

「Idiot! Surely it's some kind of code. If not—the compensation is too cheap.」

「Surely it's a trap isn't it? Co, could it be, there is no more girl remaining?」

From what I listened at the boys' talk, it seems that the compensation Marie demanded is too little that they are harboring doubt.

If I have to give an example—even though they thought that they would be asked to buy expensive bag or clothes from famous brand, they were instead asked to hand over pudding from mini market. Is that what they thought?

It seems they are uneasy because the compensation is too cheap.

I understand very well from this just how much a girl will normally demand from them.

—It's really sad to be a man.

The leader turned toward Marie.

「Marie-sama—forgive my ignorance but, is pudding some kind of secret jargon?」

Marie's smile is twitching.

「You guys, do you think I'll make some strange demands? I'm telling all of you to prepare pudding from the school cafeteria for me! What other meaning it can have!?」

「Eh!!」

The boys are seriously shocked.

.

Part 5

In the class.

It's the second term now. My friends Daniel and Raymond who I met after so long laughed.

「They misunderstood pudding as a secret jargon? Those seniors are really stupid.」

Daniel said that, but then Raymond chided him 「Don't make fun of them」 .

「That's just how desperate they are. More importantly, the freshmen this year are really lucky. We have Marie-san, so even us has the chance to encounter a girl.」

The problem children who rarely came out from the girl dormitory.

Without Marie, we couldn't possibly meet them.

When thinking that, Marie's existence is important for us.

I grumbled.

「I also want to be introduced to a girl.」

But, when I said that my surrounding's reaction became really complicated.

「—Leon, I've been thinking this from some time ago but, are you an idiot?」

「It's better for Leon to reflect on himself for real. If you don't reflect, then you better be careful when going back at night.」

Everyone will react like this.

「You guys, do you think that I'm going out with Marie?」

Daniel made an exasperated face.

「It'll be stranger if you aren't going out with her. You spent time together with Marie-san in your home during the summer vacation right? That's already like you two are betrothed.」

Raymond is nodding.

「You two haven't announced it publicly, so perhaps you two are still a step short of engagement? I'm really jealous.」

Daniel glared at Raymond who said such thing.

「Oi, Raymond. I heard that you are going out with a girl that was introduced to us before though? I don't want to believe it but, you aren't stealing a march on us aren't you?」

「Daniel—I'm sorry.」

Raymond apologized happily. Daniel grabbed his collar with his hands and lifted him up.

「SO YOU TOOOOO!」

What a noisy bunch.

Marie came to the classroom while I'm looking at them in exasperation.

Her hand is holding a leaflet.

「Listen, listen! About the academy festival, there will be contests at the third day! I heard that we can get prize money if we get high ranking in it!」

Her eyes shined really brightly. Marie looked very happy.

Her eyes are blinded by prize money.

This girl is really loyal to her own desire.

「You're going to participate?」

Marie shook her head when I asked her.

「Girl is no good. The athletes will be decided by social standing or influence. In the first place the number of contests that girls can participate in is few.」

The participants in the contest will mainly be boys.

The reason? It's for the marriage hunting.

The boys have to show their stuffs here no matter what.

The reason is—because this is an appeal time toward girls.

In that otome game, this is an event for the conquest targets to show their stuff.

Did the main character-sama also show her stuff in this event?

「—And so Leon, won't you try participate in this?」

The leaflet that Marie showed me contained the writing about the air bike race.

「Air bike race? That's impossible for me.」

「Why!? The prize money for this race is amazing see!」

「The boys will fight each other for the participant seat of a contest that popular. Just like how girls got a lot of baggage like social standing and so on, we also have it hard.」

The school caste in this world is the real deal, not like the made up school caste in the previous world.

In fact, a caste—a social class system is actually existing in this academy.

Social class doesn't only exist between the nobles and commoners, it also existed between nobles.

The standing of one's house also influenced how the participating athletes are decided.

It's useless only relying on one's skill.

Marie whispered into my ear.

「Look, it'll be possible for you to participate and even win if you use Luxion right?」

「—You, you don't get that guy.」

If it's that guy he will surely say something like 『Money? —I can prepare something like that no matter how much you want, so?』 .

While I'm thinking that, Luxion replied in a volume that can only be heard by the two of us.

『I've confirmed the requirements. Participation in the contest and obtaining overall victory, is that correct? Then starting from now I'll arrange so that the strong contenders will fall sick and the participating athletes in the day of contest will meet unfortunate accident—』

It surpassed my imagination.

Or rather, what do you mean unfortunate accident! /

It seems Marie also thought that it'll be dangerous to rely on Luxion and she looked at the leaflet in dejection.

「Even though I thought I'll be able to earn money here.」

「Why do you think that you will also get a share when it's me who'll participate? Are you stupid?」

「I'll at least give you some support if you participate! Forget that, please I beg you. I'm in a pinch this month! Cooperate with me」

「Ha? I gave you some allowance already though.」

She was too pitiful, so I gave her some spending money when the summer vacation was over.

Furthermore the amount was considerable. I can't imagine her running out of money immediately.

Marie wiped her tears.

「—It was gone because of my family's debt. The debt collectors marched to my place when they thought I have even a little bit of money. Even though it's not my debt, aren't they horrible!?」

「Uwaa」

Luxion analyzed the situation.

『They must be thinking that Marie who enrolled into the academy would earn some money as adventurer, so they came to collect the debt even if only slightly. Other than that, perhaps Marie's family also mentioned her name to the people who came to collect the debts?』

It's too horrible I can't find any word to say.

Marie started crying, so Daniel and Raymond who were watching glared at me.

They must be thinking that I'm making her cry.

「Anyway stop crying. That's right! There will be betting in the contests too, I'll earn a lot of money there.」

My words will sound stupid for those who listened from outside, but I have Luxion so I'll be able to win the bets easily.

But, Marie refused that with a strong will.

「That's no good.」

「—Eh?」

「I hate gambling! You too, if there is no need to gamble then absolutely don't do it.」

「Ri, right.」

—I think life is the same with gambling but, there won't be any meaning even if I said that so I stayed quiet.

Marie pressed her hands on her face and groaned.

「Now that it became like this I'll earn money through the academy festival in a honest way! I have to think something that can sell.」

This girl is actually really tough.

.

Part 6

The day of the school festival.

「Welcomeee!! It's cheap, please take a look!」

Marie is working as a salesperson of a stand. She raised her voice to attract customer.

We are doing a food stand for the academy festival.

It's selling donuts that are brightly colored with colorful toppings.

「I don't think I'll want to eat something like this.」

I'm frying donuts. Beside me Daniel and Raymond are working hard.

「Leon, work properly.」

「That's right. This will be for Marie-san's important living cost.」

The two of them are pitying Marie and helped out.

And then I'm continuing to make donuts.

Marie attracted customers and sold donuts one after another.

「—That girl, she is plainly amazing.」

Sometimes she will be forceful, sometimes with smooth talking, and then sometimes with sob story—she used every kind of method to sell a lot of donuts.

Luxion who is in hiding responded to my mutter.

『Shouldn't master learn from her too?』

「I'm rich so I don't want to work.」

『The worst.』

「I don't hate myself even though I'm the worst like this though.」

『Rather than that please take out the donuts from the oil.』

「Yes, yes.」

I took out the donuts like Luxion instructed. Certainly it seems that the donuts are cooked already.

『—Master, the second donut from the right doesn't fulfill our product standard. Please obey the recipe properly.』

「You are too nitpicky. I'll eat it at my break time so there won't be any problem right?」

Marie's voice is reverberating to the surrounding while I'm talking with Luxion.

「Welcomeee!!」

Part 7

Break time.

I left the stand and sat down on a bench with the failed donuts in hand.

It's a place where there isn't any academy festival activity, so there is few people here and I can calm down.

I came here alone in order to finish the failed donuts and also took lunch.

Marie? The donuts are popular and she can't stop laughing. She is continuing the sales even now.

I'm impressed by that girl's urge for manual labor.

「Donuts for lunch huh. I've made too many I don't want to eat them.」

『This is to dispose the failed products. They came from master's blunder so this is only natural.』

「You, you're hating me aren't you?」

『I don't like master but, I also don't hate master.』

「What's with that answer?」

I ate the donuts slowly.

The donuts were made based on the recipe that Luxion prepared. The quality was great for something made by students.

「Ah, it's really delicious.」

『That's good.』

I immediately finished eating the first donut and when I bit at the second—a girl passed in front of me.

That girl is walking with her gaze casted down. It looked like she is deep in her thought.

That girl suddenly pressed her hands on her stomach.

Perhaps because she smelled the donut's sweet fragrance while passing in front of me, her stomach cried 「Kuu~」 cutely.

That girl blushed red and looked at my face.

「Di, did you hear?」

Normally a gentleman like me will say 「What?」 and pretended that I didn't hear, but perhaps I got flustered seeing that girl and I nodded.

「Ah, yes—n, no, I didn't hear anything!」

Even though I corrected myself in panic it was too late. That girl, Angelica Rafa Redgrave went red and started making excuse.

「I, I was really busy that I didn't have the time to eat lunch. Be, besides—today the people who are usually with me aren't here, so—」

I don't understand what she wanted to say.

But, Angelica-san's gaze caught my donut and won't let go.

「Want some?」

When I offered her the remaining donuts, Angelica-san accepted even while looking embarrassed.

「I, is it fine?」

「Well, yes.」

「Sorry. I will pay you later with money.」

「Ah, those are failed products so there is no need.」

When I said that, Angelica-san is surprised after she took a bite with her small mouth.

「I, it's tasty. What do you mean by failure?」

「Like how the size is too big, or perhaps too small, that kind of failure.」

「I, is that so? It's delicious enough.」

Angelica-san sat beside me and ate the donuts with a delighted look.

「The people who accompany me won't let me eat something like this. It feels fresh.」

Angelica—the noble lady with villainess role in that otome game.

But, this girl doesn't look like a bad person.

Marie said it.

The main character who stole the fiancée of other person is far more of a bad person.

—But, that girl also tried to do the same thing wasn't she? Though she failed completely in the end.

When I looked at Angelica-san, she looked somewhat sad.

「What's the matter?」

「—No, it's nothing. The donuts are delicious. I'll take my leave Bartfalt-dono.」

Angelica-san stood up with a smile and left. She knew my name.

「I'm a famous person huh.」

Luxion responded to my mutter.

『—Master wasn't aware of that?』

.

Part 8

The second day of the festival ended.

Marie counted her earning from the stand.

「As expected from the academy where the rich people enrolled. The donuts are flying off the shelves even when we set the price of each one ridiculously high.」

If it was counted in Japanese yen, one donut was sold around 300 until 500 yen.

Even so the donuts were sold in great number and she was able to profit a lot.

Marie was in a good mood.

「If I have this money, I won't be worried for my living expenses tomorrow. Oops, the debt collectors will take this money away if I don't hide it.」

Marie stored the cash in her pocket so that they wouldn't be taken away this time.

There a female student came with her hangers-on in tow.

The girl braided her hair and to form rings at both sides. She brought a lot of demi-human slaves that were called exclusive servants with her.

Her cosmetic was thick and the smell of her perfumed stung the nose—that female student gave off a bad vibe.

「You are Marie of Lafan House aren't you?」

Marie was confused because someone who she usually didn't associate with was talking to her.

「Who, who are you?」

「Your attitude toward your superior is unacceptable. Do you intend to say that you don't know about the Count House of Offley?」

Marie recalled her game knowledge when she heard that name.

Yes—this girl's name came out in that otome game.

(No way!? Why is she picking on me!?)

Offley House, a house that took over a noble house and rose up from formerly being a merchant.

It was a house of evil noble that was connected with air pirate in that otome game.

That air pirate would be involved with an important event at the middle stage of the game. This girl was a character who would get involved with the main character whether she wanted it or not but—she was talking to Marie for some reason.

「Do, do you have some business with me?」

Marie talked modestly. The daughter of Offley House answered her.

「Haven't you heard anything? Your house and my house will be tied with marriage. My big brother and you are going to marry.」

「—Haa?」

Marie was astonished hearing that.

「I'm troubled even if you tell me so suddenly. I've never heard of any talk about that.」

But the girl showed an indifferent attitude.

「Your opinion doesn't matter. Your house said that they will make you marry. Also, it seems you are associating with the destitute nobles but, stop that from now. I don't want my reputation to also fall because of you.」

「—What do you mean by that huh.」

「It means exactly as it is. It looks like you are joining the group of destitute nobles and also close with that upstart Bartfalt aren't you? I'm telling you that's bothersome so stop it.」

What is this girl misunderstanding about?

Marie thought that, but the girl paid her no mind and continued talking.

「You're going to marry my big brother. —Too bad that you won't be able to marry Bartfalt.」

The young lady of Offley House sent her a ridiculing smile. Marie predicted what she was thinking.

(This girl, she is happy seeing other people's misfortune.)

From her attitude and the conversation, Marie judged that the girl was a type who liked to pointlessly put other down.

「I, I and that guy—Leon aren't like that.」

Marie said that and turned her face away. The young lady of count house scoffed.

「Good then. What I want to say is that other people will also look down on me if you're getting along with the countryside destitute nobles. Think about that properly if you're going to marry into our house. —I've warned you.」

Marie watched the girl left and thought.

(My second life—is over.)

.

Part 9

The third day of the academy festival.

I listened to Marie about her family situation around the time the contests are heating up.

「Marriage with Offley House? —You?」

I thought I've heard that name from somewhere and I recalled that it's a family name that appeared in that otome game.

—It should be a house that is connected with sky pirate.

Marie smiled powerlessly.

The passionate cheering that came from the venue of the contests—even I was a little interested to it until yesterday, but right now isn't the time for that.

「What a joke. Haha~, as expected I am really a sinful woman. Men are coming to me even without me doing anything.」

「—You can't refuse it?」

「You also understand right? Even like this I'm still a noble.」

No matter how poor her livelihood is, a noble is a noble.

I too once almost got married off for the house's sake.

「This Offley House, there wasn't any decent end for them in that otome game.」

However, in that otome game this name only appeared in the text. They had been dealt with in the background without appearing directly.

It's a house that one shouldn't get involved with.

If you considered the scenario of that otome game, one must not get involved with that house.

「Even I will run away if I can. But, it's not like I can live by myself.」

If she refused, it would become a problem between houses.

Lafan and Offley will search for Marie together.

Marie too would have to withdraw from the academy and live alone.

「Even though my family is in ruin but it's still a noble house after a fashion. It'll also affect the honor of the other house, so I will absolutely get discovered.」

Somewhere inside her, Marie has given up.

「Aa~a, I wanted to at least go to the field trip.」

「—You won't be able to join the field trip?」

She will be unable to participate in an event of the second term.
Does that mean she will withdraw from the academy right away?

Is there any need to hurry that much?

「The other house want the marriage to happen as quickly as possible. And then my family think that doing it right no won't be a problem seeing that I'll withdraw from the academy anyway. —The notice came just now.」

While we're talking, a loud cheers that split the eardrum rose up from the contest venue.

Surely someone has just put on a show, but I've no time to think about it.

「—Marie」

「Oops, don't think up anything strange okay?」

Marie stopped him when he is thinking to help her using Luxion.

「Even I was thinking of asking for help. I thought of it but—I want to avoid a clash with Offley House no matter what. After all this house will be overlooked even when they do something bad, besides—they will be involved with the event.」

Offley House is a house that will be involved with an important event at the mid stage of the game.

If we get involved with this house here, we'll become unable to predict the development of the future events.

Even considering the matter in real life perspective, this house is troublesome with how many bad rumors it has.

Even with all the bad deeds they are doing, the matters are covered up. That means the kingdom is overlooking them.

There should be someone with influence backing them up.

It will become troublesome if I carelessly get involved with them.

If I want to save Marie even then—I will need a considerable resolve.

Marie said.

「—I had fun.」

「Eh?」

「I'm saying, that I had more fun than expected. The prince and other boys wouldn't even look at me and I was unable to obtain a comfortable life with reverse harem but—I had fun living the academy life together with you.」

Marie looked down for a bit, and then when she lifted up her face—she had a smile on.

「Bye bye. Well, I can use healing magic, so I'll tenaciously survive when the event is over. Lend me some help at that time.」

She is already thinking about the future.

She looked like she has given up a lot of things.

「Are you fine with that huh? Because—you said that you want to redo your student life.」

「This is better than reaching game over. Because, we will really be in trouble if the main character doesn't play her role.」

「Bu, but still」

Marie turned her back toward me without pause and started walking.

「Thank you for everything. You too—do your best.」

Her back is really small and unreliable.

That retreating figure overlapped with the figure of my little sister from the previous life.

「—Ah」

My hand reached out, but I immediately lowered it.

.

Part 10

Night.

I'm lying down on my bed while still wearing uniform inside my room.

Luxion is hovering nearby, but his red lens is shining red because the room is dark.

『—Is this alright?』

「What is?」

『Master should already understand what I'm referring to. Is it alright to let Marie go like this?』

「I told you already before. There are a lot of reasons, like the game's event for example.」

『Master is really a good for nothing.』

「—Shut it.」

Then Luxion made a suggestion.

『If master give me the order, I will be able to erase Offley House right away. And that's including everyone lurking behind them.』

This AI is really dangerous.

—It's pathetic that I unconsciously considered agreeing with that suggestion.

「That will be pointless if it resulted in this otome game world perishing. The last boss is troublesome, so we're going to need the main character playing her role no matter what.」

『An enemy that even I cannot defeat is it? —Won't it be fine if we sink even this land too?』

「—Rejected. Or rather, you're always so extreme every time.」

『Then, is it alright even if Marie is marrying into that house like this?』

「Be quiet for a bit.」

Luxion doesn't say anything more to me.

But, his red lens keeps looking at me.

His gaze feels like it's condemning me.

While he's doing that, it's bothering me how my little sister's figure overlapped with Marie's back.

—It have been on my mind since some time ago.

But, there is no decisive proof.

Both me and Marie cannot remember our name in the previous life.

Even though we have memory of that otome game and also memory of our previous world—our name is the only thing that we can't remember.

It feels like there is something intentional about it.

But—the more I think about it, the more Marie feels similar with my little sister from the previous life.

Sometimes, I'm feeling annoyance, nostalgia—and comfort that I directed toward my little sister from her.

—Is that what Marie is to me?

Then, I—.

I lifted up my upper body and asked Luxion.

「—Luxion, can you carry out what I'm going to tell you? The conditions will be really harsh you know?」

Luxion showed confidence.

『Let's hear it.』

Part 11

—And then time returned to the wedding hall.

Marie recalled her big brother from the previous life.

(—Save me, Onii-chan!)

There was nothing in her big brother from the previous life that could be given perfect score even as flattery. Even so he was an existence that would save Marie when she was in a pinch.

He also had a side that would slightly go too far in his doing but, if he was alive then she felt like that he would save her even from her situation right now.

Yes, if he was alive.

(Even at my second life I kept relying on big bro.)

Behind her veil Marie was shedding tears while smiling.

Then, the large door of the hall was thrown open violently.

「Stop this marriage!」

There was a young man asking to stop the marriage like in a drama scene.

The gazes of everyone inside the hall gathered on the young man.

Marie also looked toward that figure from behind her veil but—the young man's appearance looked like her big brother from the previous life.

「Onii-chan?」

No one around Marie reacted to her small voice.

She hurriedly removed her veil and checked once again with her eyes. There she saw the one who interrupted the marriage was Leon.

「Yo, you, what did you come for!?」

Leon's appearance looked like her big brother from the previous life with the veil in the way.

Marie was shaken, even so when she saw Leon's appearance she pointed with her finger and yelled angrily.

Just now it felt like a scene from drama but, looking carefully Leon's appearance was boorish.

He was carrying a rifle and leading armed soldiers of Bartfalt House.

It seemed it wasn't his intention to rush in gallantly and took Marie's hand to escape from here.

Leon smiled thinly.

「I told you. Stop this marriage. No—cancel it.」

The one who protested those words of Leon were the people of Offley House and Rafan House whose event was interrupted like this.

「Who are you!?」

「What is the guards doing?」

「Throw out that man!」

The guests started making an uproar to throw out Leon right away.

But, Leon didn't move.

He showed several documents to them.

「Uh oh, don't move you all. I have the permission from the palace with me here. Justice is on my side no matter how much you guys are kicking up a fuss! That's how it is.」

It seemed Leon barged into the hall using the documents from the palace as his shield.

The people from both families are also surprised.

The man who would become Marie's husband—the bridegroom frowned.

「The palace you say? That's a downright lie.」

Leon gave a rebuttal with composure.

「It's not a lie. You can check it yourself.」

The people from both families were bewildered—even Marie was surprised.

「Palace? Eh, what have you done!?」

Leon started talking smoothly.

「Actually when I took a bit of time to exterminate a sky pirate, those guys mentioned the name of noble they have connection with. When I investigated, the name of Offley House actually came out. I informed the palace thinking that this cannot go on.」

The people of Offley House reacted when the word air pirate came out.

「—The palace wouldn't move just with that」

Leon narrowed his eyes.

「There were those who tried to crush this information when I notified the palace. It became a bit of dispute but, the talk was settled without any problem. —I never thought that your backer would actually be Marquis Frampton though.」

The people of Offley House were clearly flustered hearing that.

Because not only there was the matter of air pirate, even the name of Marquis Frampton who was their backer also came out here.

The face of Count Offley paled.

Leon raised his rifle and his expression turned serious. His air changed from just now.

The atmosphere wasn't one where joke could be made.

「Count Offley, I ask you to come with us. I ask for Viscount Lafan to come along too.」

Viscount Lafan—Marie's father was surprised.

「Me, me too!?」

Leon showed a proof.

「You have a secret agreement with Count Offley aren't you? There is the writing that you will cooperate with the matter of air pirate in exchange of having your debts taken care of. It seems you were planning to make a killing by working together with air pirate here.」

Marie looked at her father.

Then, her father fell down on his seat powerlessly. It seemed that the secret agreement was a fact.

The family members other than Marie were flustered. Perhaps they knew about it.

「—No way. To think all of you are this rotten」

Marie's father lifted up his face hearing those words.

「I see. You went this far to take back this girl—the, then, I'll allow you to marry this girl. That's why, overlook us in this matter」

It seemed he thought that Leon barged into this place was in order to take back Marie.

That meant, he knew about Marie and Leon's relationship but decided to separate them even then.

Marie felt irritated inside even while thinking that there was also misunderstanding there.

(What's with this guy? He is planning to get away from this by himself using me even after ruining my happiness?)

Seeing her pathetic father, Marie took a step forward to punch him. But then the bridegroom put his arm around Marie's neck.

「Do, don't move! If you move I won't guarantee what's going to happen to this woman! Take even a step and I'll break her neck!」

「What the hell are you doing you bastard!」

Even though Marie struggled, he was a man with bigger physique than her.

She couldn't get away even with her struggle.

The soldiers of Bartfalt House raised their rifles, but the bridegroom used Marie as shield and started negotiating with Leon.

「You've worked hard just to take back this woman. It's not like I'm interested with her. I'll give her if you want her. But—that's only if you let me go.」

It seemed the bridegroom thought that there was no way to escape and so he treated Marie like a negotiation material.

Leon looked at that bridegroom—and the captured Marie. He looked slightly irritated.

「My bad but, I'm ordered to capture everyone. Also, what are you doing is unforgivable, threatening a girl like that. I wonder what the boys in the academy will say if they learn this.」

He was replying indifferently but, he looked angry.

Marie recalled her brother from the previous life seeing Leon being quietly angry like that.

Leon and her brother from the previous life looked like the same person.

(No way!? Don't tell me Leon is really—)

The moment she thought that.

A thin light pierced the bridegroom's shoulder from the ceiling.

「Gah!」

The bridegroom's arm let go of Marie. He pressed his hand on his shoulder with a pained look.

「I, it hurts. So, someone help!」

Marie got away from the bridegroom who crouched and cried in pain. She ran toward Leon.

「Leon!」

Leon lowered his rifle's muzzle.

And then Marie was making an expression of exasperation that was also mixed with joy somewhere in it.

「You look happy that your marriage is wrecked like this. As expected, you couldn't accept it huh.」

「So, sorry.」

Luxion descended from the ceiling.

『Master, I moved the operation to the next stage.』

Leon put the rifle on his shoulder.

「Yosh, then we'll move quickly. We got to take over the territory of Offley House within today after all.」

Marie didn't understand what Leon was saying.

「Wait a second? Why is Offley House's territory is mentioned here?」

Leon showed a smile.

「No, from my negotiation with the palace, it's decided that Offley House and Lafan House will be crushed. Your house is in the main land so that will be the palace's share. But, the count's territory is on a floating island so the palace said that they don't need it.」

Just what is this guy talking about?

Marie tilted her head in confusion. Luxion then explained to her.

『The talk was settled by offering to take away the fortune that Offley House has amassed to be presented to the kingdom in exchange of receiving their territory. Currently master's father and big brother are attacking Offley House's territory.』

Leon explained further to her.

「By the way, the members of the poor nobles also lend a hand after I contacted them. They said it's because they are indebted to you. Aren't you glad?」

「U, uh huh. Huh?」

She was happy that they were helping but, Marie didn't understand what they were helping with and she could only tilt her head.

Luxion explained in detail.

『The boys in the group that master belonged to requested for help from their house. There are also other nobles who give their help too after we provided them with information. Well, around 200 airships are gathered as the result.』

A fleet that big attacked the territory of Offley House and Lafan House.

Count Offley and Viscount Lafan fainted while foaming in their mouth hearing that.

.

Part 12

The next day.

I talked with father, big bro—and the sleepy looking Collin in the office.

The talk is about the war yesterday.

Or rather than war, it was just sending airships toward Offley House and Lafan House.

There was skirmish but, things were taken care safely somehow.

After all, we had overwhelming number in our side.

As the result, the territory of Lafan House was erased from the map of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

It became a territory under the direct control of the palace, while the floating island that was the possession of Offley House became owned by Bartfalt House.

I was hesitating whether to let Offley House remaining or not in consideration of the future but—I got the feeling they'll only become trouble later, so I had them exit the stage here.

It was the result of deciding that getting involved only halfway would be the most dangerous thing to do.

But—my house that obtained the territory of the count house became slightly troubled.

「Why do I have to get independent and become an count! This is strange!」

It's not me who is making a ruckus.

It's the second son Nix.

Father is persuading him desperately.

「Stop protesting and accept it. This isn't the scale of having a branch house anymore but, dad too will be happy if you can go independent.」

The talk of the second son Nix inheriting the territory of former Offley House and becoming an count is progressing.

Shouldn't it be father who became the count?

I had such question and asked the reason. Father then answered 「It's impossible for me to manage the territory of a count house. Also, I want to hand it over to Nix and make him independent before Zola and Ludward arrive」 .

As a father, he must wish to make his dear second son to become independent splendidly.

If he is the one who become the count, he won't be able to let big bro become the one to inherit the title later.

If father is the one who become the count, Zola will see it as a good chance and tell father to give the title to Ludward—the first son.

When I asked about letting big bro to be the one who inherit this baron house, father replied 「—In that case Zola and Ludward will become the main house of Bartfalt House. They're going to make all of you work like their slave」 .

It will be a bother if the troublesome Zola and her children inherit the count status after we had gone through all the troubles to destroy the troublesome Offley House.

That's why, I too accepted big bro being the one to become the count.

It's not like I'm the one who become the count, which means there will be fewer trouble for me. I agree wholeheartedly.

However big bro won't agree.

「This is strange! Besides, is the position of count is something that you can receive just like that? Is it alright for me to be the one inheriting it!? Of course it's not alright!!」

Father made a smiling face saying that there's no problem.

「If it's about that, actually there is someone who is interested with you.」

「Eh?」

「A letter from Count Roseblade came—it said, I'm pleased with your guts to knock down Offley House that I don't like, so I'll give you my daughter.」

—It was me who settled the talk behind the scene though.

I heard that Roseblade House, a noted count house hated Offley House.

There were various reasons for that, like their differing faction.

Collin who is listening to our talk looked at big bro with an idolizing gaze.

「So Nix-niichan is going to become a count. Amazing!」

Big bro put both his hands on Collin's shoulders and shook him.

「I'm troubled if I'm suddenly told to become a count! Tha, that's right! Leon. You can just make Leon to be the count instead! Leon was the one who arranged everything this time!」

Even though this is his chance to achieve success in life, he wanted to concede it to his little brother instead. What a model big brother.

I wish that a great big brother like Nix can become happy.

That's why I told him with a smile.

「No way~. I think it'll be better if big bro is the one to receive the title along with all the troubles that come with it. Also, I've predicted big bro will complain so I brought the girl in question here. You two, I'll leave him to you!」

I called two women to come into the room. Even Deirdre-senpai also came. It seems she came as an escort for her big sister.

Deirdre-senpai is a third year student in the academy.

「Oh, the one who defeated that villain Offley is a timid gentleman it seems.」

Big bro was in a different class from Deirdre-senpai, but they were in the same grade.

It seems they knew each other's face.

「Deirdre-san? Could it be, the other party is Roseblade!」

That Deirdre-senpai is a young lady with blonde hair that is styled in ringlet curls.

Her big sister Dorothea-san—has a straight and long blonde hair. She is wearing a dress that showed her glamorous body style clearly.

She has a really beautiful form that contained coldness inside.

She has a queenly personality that surpassed even Deirdre-senpai!

Her age is twenty years old.

A beauty who'll look really fitting with a whip in hand.

I'm jealous with big bro.

「She is Dorothea-san. Big bro's marriage partner candidate.」

Big bro pointed at my face when I introduced her.

「Why are you laughing!」

I also felt envious when learning that this woman with big breasts will become big bro's wife, but I became able to sympathize when I learned about her personality.

Well, she is someone harsh just like her appearance suggested.

「You looks like you're having a lot of fun there while ignoring your wife.」

When Dorothea-san said that, big bro screamed 「Hii」 and backed away.

She already called herself his wife?

Well, the introduction today is actually a formal marriage interview though. The marriage is already 80% decided.

I have arranged it until that far.

Their father Count Roseblade was also eager.

「What's with that behavior even though you're going to become the husband of this me? Even though I've been looking forward to this after I heard that you defeated that villain Offley—this is a disappointment.」

Deirdre-senpai is also looking disappointed.

「Indeed. Father too, I can't understand why he is looking forward to this marriage.」

—I asked Luxion to investigate. It seems that two's father, Count Roseblade is worried whether Dorothea-san will be able to marry properly.

It seems he want to marry her off if there is a proper candidate.

Dorothea-san is looking down at big bro.

「Even though your little brother Leon raised an achievement as adventurer—it doesn't look like that you, his big brother has done anything. Are you two really sharing the same blood?」

She is speaking as she pleases.

Collin is hiding behind father.

Father too is muttering something horrible like 「Leon is the mutation in our family while Nix is the normal one」 .

Then—the trembling big bro lifted his face.

「Yeah, that's right! I'm an elder brother who is inferior to my little brother. So what!」

It seems he has something in mind and acted belligerently toward Dorothea-san.

Is this guy sane?

After thinking that, I realized big bro's plan.

「Big bro, don't tell me!」

「Shut up!」

It seems big bro is picking a fight with Dorothea-san in order to cancel this talk of marriage.

Apparently he is harboring a shallow thought that things will work out somehow if he can make Dorothea-san leave in anger.

「Big bro, you really don't know when to give up! Also calm down. You must not anger the other party!」

「Leon, I don't want to hear that from you! Now listen well, you selfish woman over there!」

Big bro pointed at Dorothea-san.

Dorothea-san said 「Sel, selfish woman you said!」 in indignation with a surprised face.

「Don't misunderstand. You aren't the one doing me a favor to marry me, I'm the one doing you a favor to marry you! If you don't like it then tough, go back home immediately!」

The two were both red faced in indignation.

Father said 「Nix, stop! You will cause war with Roseblade House next!」 with a face that looked like he wanted to cry.

—But.

The escort Deirdre-senpai is smiling.

「Onee-sama, I'm glad.」

—Hm?

Dorothea-san whose face is flushed red smiled and licked her lips bewitchingly.

Rather than saying that she is enraged, it looks like she excited.

「Good. You're the best. All of the men before this, every single one of them will become servile just from hearing the name Roseblade. I—have been waiting for a man like you who'll be worth it for me to discipline.」

Big bro is shocked.

「—Eh? Wh, why?」

Dorothea-san folded her arms and her eyes sparkled.

「No, rather both of us disciplining each other—a gentleman who will clash with me fiercely is what I prefer instead. I hate docile man. I finally—find my ideal man!」

Big bro broke into cold sweat.

Dorothea-san hugged big bro's arm into her breasts—and dragged her out from the room.

「You're the best.」

Big bro is dragged out. His hand reached out toward me when he is passing the door.

「He, help—」

I waved my hand with a smile.

「I'm happy for you, big bro!」

Both father and Collin are also waving their hand at big bro who is dragged away.

「I, it's fine like this isn't it?」

「Nix-niichan is dragged away.」

I managed to safely push the troublesome position of count to big bro.

I even found a marriage partner for big bro while I was at it. Is there a little brother as capable as me in this world?

When the door closed, we heard big bro's voice.

『Leon, I won't forget this you bastard!』

It seems he is crying in happiness.

Deirdre-senpai shrugged.

「I'm jealous with Onee-sama. I also wish to find a man with backbone.」

—I hope you can find a man like that. That's why please don't stare at me appraisingly like that.

Now then, let's take care of the remaining matters.

.

Part 13

Marie is crying when I returned to the academy.

「My house is gone, I'm not a noble anymore now!」

The reason she is crying is because her house is crushed and her status as noble is stripped away from her.

Now Marie lost her qualification to attend the academy.

「Would it be better if you married the heir of Offley House?」

「I, I don't want that.」

I confirmed with Marie.

There is one way for Marie sp she can stay as noble and attend the academy.

But, in order to do that, there is something that I need to confirm with her first no matter what.

Depending on the result, I—will have to find a partner for Marie.

「—Hey, I told you before that I had a little sister in the previous life didn't I?」

Marie also looked like she wanted to say something. She nodded before she averted her eyes from me and looked down.

「Ye, yeah.」

Marie too must have vaguely suspected it.

Bit by bit I talked about my little sister—the little sister from the previous life.

「I can't recall her name but, I have two parents and a little sister. It was a family of four.」

「—Me too.」

I should have noticed it quicker.

I thought that it's impossible but—I should have noticed that Marie is my little sister from the previous life quicker.

If I do that—then I wouldn't need to have this feeling.

「She was a really egoist little sister. She got a nice look, but she was good at playing innocent that my parents believed my little sister more than me.」

I talked to Marie about my previous life.

But, Marie who was nodding and listening tilted her head in the middle.

「—Wait a second? Your parents trusted the little sister more than the big brother?」

「That's right. That girl was good at feigning innocence after all.」

「Wait, that's strange then. Because, my parents trusted my big bro more.」

「Eh?」

It seems there is some discrepancy.

「No, wait. Because look! You too pushed that otome game to your big bro because you couldn't clear it right!?」

「Certainly I pushed that game to my big bro but, I requested him to do it. Also, I heard that my acquaintances also asked their male sibling for help. In the first place, I wasn't that horrible of a little sister.」

「My big bro was really scary when he got angered. He often went too far but he was fundamentally a type who I can easily control on the palm of my hand? How should I say it, he was a thickheaded type of person? Also, when I asked him for help he would happily do a lot of things for me.」

「Eh, you had that kind of big brother? Or rather, even though he was scary when angry, it's amazing that you can think of him as easily controlled.」

「Well, he was my own big brother after all. There was this line of how much he could be angered. I know just how much I could push it before crossing that line. Looking back now, I allowed myself to get spoiled too much as his little sister.」

—That big brother is completely different from me isn't it!

In the first place, my little sister from the previous life forced that otome game on me.

Besides, I'm never told that I'm someone scary when I get angry.

I also never go too far. And it's also impossible for me to be easily manipulated by my little sister.

—After all I'd properly take revenge on my little sister when she messed with me.

Also, I'm not thickheaded!

What's with that big brother who is like a light novel main character!

Besides, I had no intention of spoiling my little sister—so there is no way it was me!

「My little sister's personality was really horrible. You know, like someone whose face will completely change outside compared to when at home. She knew how to read the flow and did whatever she likes by hiding behind my parents' trust.」

「Then it wasn't me. Or rather, to think that there is really a woman like that. Surely that little sister wasn't a decent person.」

「Ye, yeah.」

Should I mention here about how my little sister had rotten hobby or how she forced those on me?

While I'm thinking that, Marie took a pose like a gravure idol in front of me.

「Also, I was a beauty in my previous life. Even though I look like this now, my style in the previous life was really amazing.」

—My little sister had good look but was her style nice? Certainly she was slim but, her style shouldn't be that good she could boast about it so much like this.

Too many of our information is mismatched with each other that somehow my feeling turned complicated.

I said to Marie.

「—Sorry, I thought that you might be my little sister.」

「Stop that! Do I look like someone that horrible? Isn't that horrible!?」

「N, no, my bad. But, you also thought that I'm your big brother from the previous life right? I'm not scary like your big brother.」

I'm a normal man that can be found anywhere.

「I, I'm introspecting! I just thought that maybe—but that's not the case just as I thought.」

In the first place both big brother and little sister got reincarnated to that otome game world together won't be funny at all.

I and Marie made a complicated expression but—we gradually got amused and started laughing.

「What. So both of us were misunderstanding.」

「Looks like it. It's just impossible.」

That's why I said to Marie.

「Aa, then there's no problem. Marie—come to our home.」

「—Eh?」

Marie's mouth closed and open in surprise. I scratched my cheek to hide my embarrassment.

「Even ruined you still have noble bloodline. Besides there is a talk in progress of entrusting you under my custody. It looks like they will give the permission, so if there is no problem—like this, you can—you know.」

I scratched my head and looked down. Drops of tears spilled down from Marie's eyes.

「Pre, prepare the mood more if you're going to confess.
Idiooottt!」

I'm panicked that I made her cry. But then Marie nodded even while sniffing.

「—I'll accept the confession so redo it. It's my dream to be confessed in a place where the night view is visible and receiving a ring.」

What a shameless woman.

However, I got the feeling that this much is fine.

Even a beauty is no good if it's someone like Dorothea-san.

I have learned a lot from big bro's marriage.

「I get it. I'll tell Luxion to prepare one.」

Luxion showed up from his hiding place when I muttered that.

『—Looks like master has finally resolved yourself.』

「Yo, you were listening!?」

I'm shocked. On the other hand Luxion seems to be in a good mood. Apparently he is happy.

『Yes. I will immediately find a location with the best night view and also start the creation of the ring. I will finish all the preparations if you two can wait for three hours.』

Marie complained when she heard that.

「I don't want something slapdash like that! Plan it more seriously!
Also make the ring properly! It's fine even if it's cheap!」

『The result won't change even if I spend more time on it you know?』

「Even so!」

Luxion reluctantly accepted it.

『It's troublesome. Also, please don't worry about the ring. I'll attach a large jewel on it. If you like, how about I prepare ring for all your fingers with different jewel for each finger?』

Marie is appalled by Luxion's sense.

「Have you never been told that you have a bad sense?」

『—There is a data that mention how female love precious metal though?』

「It doesn't mean that anything is fine.」

It seems Luxion cannot understand the sense in this kind of field.

「So even you have things that you aren't good at.」

Luxion turned his red lens toward me when I laughed at him.

『Why is master that happy?』

「Not really~」

Part 14

They returned to their usual daily life in the academy.

But, right now Marie—was standing in front of the airship's guest cabin while hitting the door relentlessly.

「OPEN THE DOOORRR!」

Marie was busy from the morning even though it was the field trip riding a luxury cruise ship.

Behind Marie, a petite girl hugging a book was being nervous.

「Ma, Marie-chan, the two of them won't wake up.」

The two girls that Marie was looking after wouldn't come out from their room even when it was time for breakfast.

This wouldn't be a problem if they were normal girl, but the girls that Marie was looking after had a lot of problem.

One was a lazy girl who wouldn't come out of her room and spend her time slacking off if she was left alone.

The other girl was a girl whose hobby was painting. When she was concentrating she would forget sleeping and eating and once she even fainted without anyone noticing.

Those two didn't wake up at the morning because they were put inside the same room.

(Why am I taking care of these girls? Even though it's finally the long awaited field trip, I've been doing nothing except taking care of the problem children.)

When she was trying to open the door somehow, the girl who is hugging a book sat on the floor and started reading.

「Why are you starting to read the book?」

「Eh? Be, because, they still haven't come out.」

Marie felt like crying hearing that reply.

「Don't sit on the floor reading! Also, don't bring book when we're going to have breakfast!」

「Eh!?」

The girl with book was making a seriously shocked expression.

(This girl's idiosyncrasy isn't losing to the other two too.)

She didn't know if it was in the previous world but, in this world these girls were greatly popular among boys even with this kind of personality.

Marie started hitting the door again.

「WAKE UPPPPP! THE BREAKFAST TIME WILL BE OVER LIKE THISSSS!」

The door next to such noisy cabin opened. A sullen young elf came out from there.

He seemed to be an exclusive servant but, he was a child no matter how she looked at him.

Marie stopped hitting the door.

(This kid, could he be—)

That young boy—Kyle made a snide remark toward Marie.

「I'm envious at how energetic you are since the morning. My master isn't feeling well, so can you be quiet?」

Marie's gaze wandered around.

(That means, the main character Olivia is also here? Thi, this is awkward. I don't really want to get involved, and I also want to avoid getting hated by her.)

The main character would become a saint in the future and also the queen of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

She wasn't someone that Marie wanted to oppose.

「I, I'm sorry! My friends won't leave their room.」

Kyle narrowed her eyes.

「How about borrowing a key for the room?」

「—I'll do that. E, err, sorry again.」

Marie took the girl who was hugging a book and left that place.

.

Part 15

The noisiness was gone.

Olivia was sitting on the bed. She looked at her exclusive servant Kyle who returned.

「—Did you send them away?」

Kyle spoke proudly.

「Yes, I persuaded them. It was easy.」

Her exclusive servant Kyle was a slave that Julius purchased for her.

Olivia didn't purchase him with her own money.

But, the problem was Kyle's living expense.

As his owner, Olivia had the duty to provide for him.

Because she had the duty to provide him with clothing, food, and shelter, the time she proactively challenged a dungeon to earn money increased just after summer vacation.

Olivia touched her forehead and checked that her fever still hadn't receded completely.

「Everyone around us is noble, so be careful with your wording okay?」

「I understand. But, goshujin-sama can just tell his highness Julius if they do something horrible.」

「That's no good!」

Olivia raised her voice. Kyle was surprised by that.

「I, I'm sorry. Kyle-kun, can you bring me water?」

「—Yes.」

Kyle was a clever and capable child.

But, his foul mouth stood out.

Perhaps because he was still a child, sometimes he would act spoiled with Olivia.

Olivia who didn't have any leeway sometimes would hold unpleasant thought toward such Kyle.

But, he was one her few supporters in the academy.

Her feeling was eased a lot just by having someone to talk with.

However, Kyle was thinking that Olivia should make use of her standing as much as she could.

Olivia was unable to accept that.

The feverish Olivia lay down once more and closed her eyes.

「Even though I want to study」

There were textbook, notes, and other things placed on the table inside the room.

She became unable to study because she got fever. Olivia was getting impatient.

Then, she heard the door getting knocked violently.

It wasn't Kyle.

They must be aiming for when Kyle wasn't here.

Olivia got up. She covered her face with both hands before standing up and walking toward the door unsteadily.

「What is it?」

There the girls of the academy were standing.

They were bringing exclusive servants with them.

「Oh, you're looking very disagreeable there. Even though we came to invite you to play.」

「—I'm not feeling good today, so please allow me to abstain.」

The girls forcefully dragged Olivia out of her room.

「Just come with us! This is a rare chance, so we'll teach you about gambling. The casino here has various games after all. We will be able to play a lot.」

The girls and the demi-human who were their exclusive servants were making a nasty smile.

Olivia couldn't focus with her feverish head.

(I wonder what are they going to do to me this time?)

.

Part 16

Inside the luxury cruise ship.

I'm dumbfounded seeing the sight in front me inside the casino there.

「—You're shitting me.」

The main character-sama—Olivia-san is continuing to lose in a card game.

Even though she has no more money to bet with, the girls surrounding her are forcefully making her continue.

It's not just with money.

They're starting to gamble various things, like penalty game when returning to the academy for example.

「You're really weak.」

「—」

Perhaps it's just my imagination, but Olivia-san's complexion is also bad.

Her breathing is also disordered. Her eyes aren't focusing.

Also—.

『Master, Olivia's opponent is cheating.』

—From Luxion's report, I understand that Olivia-san is being set up.

Marie approached my side.

「Hey, what's with this?」

Marie talked to me with a small voice. I can't answer her.

About this fieldtrip, students from all three grades participated in it together—and they are sent to three places.

Because of some kind of bad luck, Olivia-san is boarding this luxury cruise ship where none of the conquest targets is present.

To be more accurate, Julius and Jilk should be boarding this ship too.

But, the two suddenly had business to take care and they decided to meet up at the destination.

I discussed with Marie just what happened but we found no answer.

In the end we reached the conclusion that there shouldn't be any problem if they will meet up at the destination.

Because of that, currently—there is no one to protect Olivia-san.

「Hey, at this rate that girl will be in ruin.」

The amount of money isn't something she will be able to pay, in addition the content of the punishment games is horrible.

The smirking girls won't let Olivia-san get away.

Their exclusive servants are surrounding them so that there isn't any escape path.

—It's the worst.

I thought for a while—and then, I heard the conversation of the girls.

「Ah, that's right. You have no more things to bet with, so what if you bet with dropping out of school next?」

「Eh?」

Olivia-san lifted up her face. There the girls are getting heated up.

「That sounds good. We too won't get annoyed if you drop out on your own.」

「That's nice. Ah, but don't think that you can run away from the punishment game like that. And of course you'll need to pay your debt in full too.」

「Pay it even if you have to borrow money. —Do you know what'll happen to your family and hometown if you run away?」

Among the onlookers surrounding them, some are laughing while some are sympathizing.

But, many of the boys are only watching because they can't even make a retort to girl.

Also—it seems there are many students who think of the scholarship student as eyesore because of her closeness with the crown prince. They want her to vanish just like this.

—We'll be troubled if that happen!

「I'll take her place.」

「Eh?」

Marie grabbed my arm when I'm going to save Olivia-san.

「Wait a second. Gambling is bad.」

「I know. Besides, from the start I won't do something like gambling.」

「Bu, but」

「It's fine just watch. I'm—a man who won't gamble, but will fight a match that I can win.」

I pushed aside the onlookers and approached the table. There the exclusive servants of the girls glared at me.

I stood beside Olivia-san and put my hand on the table.

「Cheating isn't fair at all.」

Then one of the girls looked clearly flustered.

The other two are trying to hide their agitation.

「—Don't get involved. Are you this girl's ally?」

Olivia-san is looking down.

「That's right. I can't just stay quiet after being shown a gambling this horrible.」

One of them threw insult at me.

「You upstart. Don't get cocky.」

Certainly I'm an upstart.

That's why, I'm allowed to get cocky.

「What about it?」

「Wha, what do you say」

Normally even I won't act tough against a girl but—right now I have theoretically finished getting engaged with Marie.

That's why, I'm liberated from the marriage hunting.

In other words, right now I'm invincible!

「Hey, how about making a bet with me? As for the amount—how about this much?」

I took out a bag filled with coins from my pocket and spilled its content on the table.

The coins that fell on the table are the fantasy coins with higher value than even gold coins, platinum coins.

The color of the girls' eyes changed.

「I'll also take over the amount that Olivia-san lost. It will also be easier that way for you girls to collect the money right?」

After I said that, Olivia-san looked at me in surprise.

「U, um—why are you helping me?」

I said 「It will be fine now」 and returned my gaze to the girls.

One of the girls grinned.

It's the face of someone planning to defeat an upstart like me in gambling to make me lose face.

「Very well. But, don't try to make excuse that we are cheating when you lose.」

She talked as though they already win.

「—Of course. But, I'm not going to give any mercy if I find it out.」

「Hah! Sit down already.」

I exchanged place with Olivia-san and started the match.

Then Luxion told me.

『Master, the exclusive servants of the girls are giving them your card's information. Also, they are hiding cards in their sleeve.』

I looked back and pointed at the exclusive servants.

「And so, can you tell these guys with card hidden in their sleeve to move away? I found out already.」

The exclusive servants do their best to not show agitation, but Marie who is behind me grabbed the arm of one of them.

Then several cards fell from his sleeve.

「Ah, this guy is hiding cards!」

I watched the three girls looking clearly panicking while grinning widely.

「I don't have any intention to make a ruckus accusing you all as cheater so don't worry. —Now, let's begin.」

Though I can't imagine the girls in front of me winning when I'm using Luxion to cheat.

.

Part 17

The casino of the luxury cruise ship.

Olivia could only feel surprised at the sight before her.

The three girls who were tormenting her just now were looking at their cards while crying.

They were apologizing many times over to Leon.

「Please forgive us. We don't have anything else to bet.」

Leon would see it through if they cheated. And when it came to a match the girls would lose.

The girls couldn't even run away. In front of Leon, the amount the three lost was climbing even higher than the amount Olivia lost.

Leon was laughing.

「You said it to her just now didn't you? Pay it even if you have to borrow money, was it? You said it yourself. You will do the same if you lose won't you? Come on, show your cards.」

When they showed their cards, it was Leon's victory again.

Leon had been winning continuously since some time ago.

The surrounding were examining carefully for any proof of cheating but—no proof could be found.

In contrast, the cheating attempts of the girls were all seen through.

「It's my win! —Now then, what should I have you girls betting next?」

The girls stood up from their seat to run away, but Leon threatened with a low voice.

「I will collect the debt from your houses if you run away. —I'm going to erase your houses from the map of the kingdom like Offley and Lafan.」

Bartfalt House destroyed Offley House and Lafan House not long ago.

Leon's threat didn't sound like a bluff to the girls. They returned to their seat and cried with an unsightly look.

「We're sorry. We won't do this anymore. We apologize for the cheating too, so please forgive us.」

The girls apologized to Leon while crying.

Even then Leon was merciless toward the girls.

「No good. We'll continue this game until you girls understand who it is you should apologize to. I wonder how much more you will lose until you realize.」

Hearing that, the three girls looked at Olivia beside Leon and apologized while crying.

「We're sorry. We won't do it anymore.」

「Please forgive us. I'm begging you.」

「Please forgive us already. We can't—pay this much money.」

Olivia was bewildered seeing the girls bowing at her.

「Eh—ah—」

She couldn't understand.

Nobles were bowing to a commoner like her.

She also couldn't understand Leon who helped her.

Leon put down his cards and stood up.

「—I'll put your lost on hold for now. The next time you do something to the scholarship student, I'll seriously come to collect

the debt so you better resolve yourself before doing anything like that.]

It seemed Leon had no intention to rip off the three from their money.

Olivia called out to Leon who was leaving.

「U, um, why did you help me?」

This was her first time—seeing this kind of noble.

It felt like she found a bit of light from Leon's attitude that was different even from Julius and others.

Leon turned her back toward Olivia and scratched his head.

「—I just feel like it? If something happen again don't be reserved and consult me.」

Seeing Leon leaving, Olivia thought.

(So there is also noble like that.)

.

Part 18

The field trip destination is a Japanese style floating island.

In that otome game, this is a place where player can obtain a really important item.

At the festival that is hold in that island at night, there will be a man wearing fox mask. The items he is selling—his charms has very good ability. I want to obtain it no matter what.

That's why, I and Marie are—.

「DON'T RUN AWAYYYYYY!」

「SELL THE CHARMS TO USSSSSSS!」

—Chasing around the charm seller man who is wearing a fox mask and yukata.

「SOMEONE HELPPPPP!」

The charm that this guy is selling had good ability in the game, on top of that it's also important for the character's status growth so we want to obtain it no matter what.

But, we cannot take a look at the inside of the charms that this guy is selling.

Because there are many types of charms, the possibility that the charm we are aiming for appearing is low.

If this is a game, we can just save and load repeatedly.

However, there is no save or load function in real life.

—Is there really none? Even though it'll be great if they exist.

Now then, the rule is that one person can only buy one charm. The luck of the draw is decided with just a single chance.

In order to solve that problem, we are trying to buy up all the charms.

But, this fox masked man said 「Bu, buying all of them isn't allowed. There are other people who are looking forward to this!」 and he won't sell to us.

—That's unforgivable.

「We have money here! We'll buy it with ten times the original price! Even a hundred times is alright!」

When I said that, the fox masked man refused while running away.

「No!」

Marie is also pursuing in desperation in order to buy the item.

「Then sell us one at the very least!」

The fox masked man asked in confirmation.

「It'll really be just one per person okay? Just one!」

I yelled at the obstinate fox masked man.

「I got it, so stop running!」

The fox masked man stopped running and looked at us fearfully.

I handed the money to the man.

I and Marie are breathing hard with heaving shoulders while sweating. Then we chose a charm from among the merchandises of the man.

But, the charms are put inside white paper bags so we can't see the inside.

「Come on—ah!」

Inside the bag that I chose is a white ball with red string attached.

Marie also bought one. Then the fox masked man ran away to escape.

「Hit the jackpot. Hit—come-!」

What came out from Marie's bag is a decoration of sword and shield that is shining silver.

We both looked at each other's item.

Marie held out the decoration of sword and shield to me.

「I don't need this, so give me that one.」

「It'll be better that way. Even so I'm tired.」

「I'm sweaty. I want to take a rest. —Ah!」

After we exchanged the item with each other, a loud sound resounded in the sky.

We looked up. Fireworks are rising to the night sky one after another and shined beautifully.

We moved our tired body to sit down in a nearby bench.

Marie stared at the firework while looking at the charm she got from me.

The white ball is about as big as a marble. If my memory is right it should be an item that heighten the holder's magic power and raised their aptitude for healing magic.

It's perfect for Marie.

「—Thank you.」

Marie thanked me. I guessed she is thanking me for the charm and replied.

「I also got the charm that I wanted so it's alright.」

Then Marie looked at me and pointed with her finger.

Her finger pressed on my nose.

「You are really thickheaded. I'm not referring to the charm.」

「No, how can I know that. Say it clearly with words.」

I complained at her. Marie looked embarrassed hearing that.

She sat down on the bench with her legs dangling back and forth.

「Tha, that's why—I mean about my family, or about Offley House—tha, thanks for a lot of things!」

「Are you trying to put all those under the bridge with just a single thank you?」

「I hadn't said my thanks properly, so I expressed it with words, that's all!」

「Yes, yes, I see.」

This girl is really similar with my little sister from the previous life.

Marie herself is muttering something like 「You're the same like my big brother from the previous life in this kind of thing」 .

We watched the firework while continuing our conversation.

Marie is worried if it'll be alright for Offley House to leave the stage this early.

「Hey, what are we going to do about the sky pirate event?」

「You mean about the saint's necklace? Don't worry. I'm keeping it right now. Well, I'll give it to the main character-sama when the time comes.」

「You retrieved it!?」

「Obviously.」

「Hey, show it to me.」

「I don't have it with me right now so I can't. I'll show it to you when we return to the academy.」

「It's a promise!」

Actually the sky pirate that worked together with Offley House possessed an important item of that otome game.

It was the saint's necklace.

It's an item that will display an amazing power when it's in the main character's possession.

「But, will it be okay? An event is gone with this.」

「It'll be fine. Besides I'll also get involved if war breaks out.」

「Eh?」

Marie made a surprised face at the same time when an exceptionally big firework expanded in the night sky.

「Why are you shocked?」

「Be, because, you said you're going to get involved in the war.」

「Recall how that otome game went. The students also participated in the war.」

「Tha, that's true but」

She looked like she can't accept it.

「I have Luxion so it'll be fine.」

「Ri, right. Leon won't lose if you have him.」

「That's how it is.」

We spent time together like that until the firework ended.

.

Part 19

After the field trip is over, we returned to our irreplaceable ordinary days.

I invited Marie to tea party. We are talking along with Luxion.

The topic is—regarding the saint's necklace.

Luxion talked to Marie who is staring at the saint's necklace.

『This is the saint's necklace. Though in my eye it only look like a necklace. It was also considered as a symbol of authority but, it's containing energy inside. There is no doubt that it has some kind of effect.』

Marie tried putting it on her neck.

「That's nice. —How do I look like?」

Marie wore the saint's necklace and showed it to me.

「It doesn't suit you.」

Marie got angry when I laughed at her.

「What's with that! It shouldn't be a problem even if you praise me!」

I looked at Marie while taking a sip of tea.

「And? Do you feel any strange effect?」

Marie looked at her hands.

And then, she closed her eyes. Perhaps she is trying to sense power flowing from the necklace. She stayed quiet like that for a while.

When she opened her eyes—.

「—No good. Perhaps there is a little bit of effect? Or perhaps it's just my imagination. As I thought, perhaps it won't show any effect unless all three items are together?」

—Looks like nothing happened.

「That's unfortunate. But, it has a bit of an effect right?」

「I think so. Perhaps it's better than nothing?」

Hearing that I entrusted the saint's necklace to Marie.

「Then you hold on it. I didn't feel any effect even when I used it.」

「Eh!? Is that alright? What if it gets stolen!?」

Luxion reassured Marie.

『A transmitter has been installed in the necklace. Also, I'm deploying drones at Marie's surrounding so I will immediately detect any movement around you.』

「—So I have no privacy?」

Marie looked really conflicted knowing that she is constantly under observation.

『Marie's privacy isn't exposed to anyone other than me. I'm keeping it confidential even from master. On the other hand I also won't talk about master's secret.』

『Wait, by that you mean you won't tell me even if Leon cheat on me?』

『Yes. I'm going to keep master's secret.』

Why is this girl thinking that I'm going to cheat?

Isn't that horrible?

『You guys, don't speak like I'm an unfaithful person.』

Marie sat on the chair and dangled her legs back and forth with a timid look.

『I don't have any faith in man's baser instinct.』

『Is that so. Well, setting that aside, it'll be fine even if you have that necklace with you so don't worry.』

Marie is still looking uneasy.

『Is it really alright?』

Then Luxion—said something unnecessary.

『Master is worried about Marie. If that thing has any effect even if only slightly, he want you to carry it.』

Marie looked a bit surprised hearing that. She looked at me and started grinning.

『Hee~, hmm~, I see~』

This girl is getting cocky because that damn Luxion is speaking unnecessarily.

I averted my face. Then Marie ate the sweets on the table.

「Leaving that aside~, I wonder what'll happen after this?」

I immediately guessed what she wanted to say.

She must be referring to the story of that otome game.

Both of us were playing that game a long time ago, so there are a lot of parts we can't remember.

「There were a lot of events in the second term, but there wasn't anything in the third term wasn't it? More importantly, what are we going to do at the winter vacation?」

「Winter vacation? Aren't we going to go home?」

「The madam and elder brother—ah, I mean father's legal wife Zola and the eldest son Ludward. Those guys are being annoying. It seems they are storming in and yelling to hand over the territory of former Offley House to Ludward.」

「Aa~, that legal wife? Leon's family also has it hard huh. Eh? Could there be any possibility of them snatching away the territory?」

Ludward snatching away big bro's territory?

That's impossible.

「No problem. After all I joined hand with Roseblade House so they can act as backer for this kind of case. Count Roseblade also took a liking to big bro so there isn't any need to worry.」

What do you think the count said when he heard about big bro and Dorothea-san's meeting?

Apparently big bro said 「I won't be able to meet your expectation!」, but the count smiled and said 「You have met my expectation enough」 —that was how it went.

If I have to interpret the count's true feeling, is it something like 「I won't let you get away by yourself」 ?

Big bro was the best person to be the husband of his willful daughter.

Surely the count will protect big bro's territory because of that.

It felt like I was selling out my big brother but, it looks like my arrangement wasn't mistaken.

Marie's gaze toward me is cold.

「Leon-s big brother—Nix-san said 『You're the only one I won't forgive』 didn't he?」

「We are siblings. He was embarrassed to speak his gratitude to me.」

「His eyes were seriously filled with grudge you know?」

「One day he will surely understand. That it's all thanks to his little brother.」

From other people's perspective, big bro is even more of a successful person than me.

He suddenly obtained the rank of count and even obtained a young lady from an influential noble as his wife.

He is a winner in life.

A~a, I'm jealous! —Though I'm thinking that, but his marriage partner is Dorothea-san.

In addition, he got a territory of a count forced on him. I'm thinking that perhaps big bro is a little pitiful?

And so, I intended to have Luxion give him a follow up.

「The tea is delicious too today.」

Marie said to me after I murmured that.

「One day you're going to meet a painful experience.」

.

Part 20

The night of that day.

Marie was sleeping on a bed with the blanket kicked away and her stomach exposed.

She was sleeping with a happy look.

「Onii—cha—kuu~」

Then, a suspicious shadow reached out toward Marie from the saint's necklace that was on the bedside table.

It was the form of a person.

A hand reached out to Marie and spoke.

(—Found her. My blood relative—my descendant)

And then when the black shadow touched Marie, it became bewildered.

(Wha, what!? I can't possess her?)

The black shadow's objective was to possess Marie's body.

(Then, I'll interfere with her mind deeply!)

The black shadow interfered with the innermost part of Marie's mind.

Marie was sleeping so the shadow was able to enter inside her heart easily.

When he infiltrated inside her heart, Marie was in a defenseless state.

With this the black shadow could easily possess the body, but by doing that his strength would be exhausted so he wanted to avoid it.

But, this wasn't the time where he could be picky.

He infiltrated into Marie's heart and found a door.

It was locked.

The black shadow forcefully opened it and entered inside.

(—What? Is this a room in foreign country?)

The room looked like a girl's room—but it had a somewhat different atmosphere with this world.

There were a lot of things he was unfamiliar with. There were also a lot of tools inside the room that he didn't understand how to use.

The black shadow looked at the girl sleeping on the bed inside the room.

Marie was sleeping.

(This girl, she is also sleeping in her dream!? Besides her appearance is different. Is this the form of her ideal self? Oi, wake up!)

Marie's appearance wasn't like her real self. It was the appearance from her previous life.

The room was the room in her home in her previous life.

「What. Don't be noisy~」

The Marie inside her heart—her honest feeling woke up. She rubbed her eyes sleepily and looked at the black shadow.

「—Who are you?」

Marie was still half-asleep. The black shadow began his action to take over the body.

First he introduced himself.

(Me? I am—)

Marie yawned and dozed off immediately.

(Don't sleep!)

Marie lifted her face in surprise. She wiped her mouth and said to the black shadow.

「I, I'm not sleeping. That's a big lie to accuse me sleeping like that.」

She was saying incomprehensible thing.

(This girl is too hopeless. Setting that aside, I have a proposal for you. Do you want my power? I'm the power that is residing in the saint's necklace. I'll lend you more strength if you accept me. Do you want the saint's power?)

Marie hugged her pillow while looking at the black shadow with messy hair.

Her eyes looked doubtful. It seemed she was holding a big misgiving.
(Do, don't you want power?)

In most case, the majority of people would wish for power when he asked them this inside their heart.

Everyone wished for power.

He had tested this many times in the past.

But, because everyone before this wasn't the black shadow's descendant—his blood relative, he couldn't go as far as taking over their body.

And so, the saint's necklace—slipped out of the temple's management. It changed hands and got stolen by various people, searching for a body.

This was the reason why an important tool like the saint's necklace slipped out of the temple's management.

Marie snorted in response to the serious black shadow.

(What's with that reaction?)

「—You're, somewhat suspicious. That's why, I don't need the saint's power.」

(What do you mean suspicious? I'm saying that I'm going to give you power you know?)

「That's suspicious. Saying you'll lend me power without asking anything in return—it's too suspicious that you must be planning something.」

(Tha, that's not true!)

「You're lying. I'll do the same thing when tricking someone if it's me.」

(—Eh?)

The black shadow thought.

This girl, did she just announce that she was a bad person?

But, she had seen girls of this level many times before.

(Fuh, it can't be helped if you saw through me. Actually—)

He was going to try cajoling her next, but Marie lay down on her bed with her elbow and grinned. The black shadow was irritated by her impudent attitude.

The black shadow felt disgusted when he thought that this girl was his descendant.

「Stop lying. You have the same smell with me.」

(Don't lump me together with you!)

「I can sense it. Woman is sensitive to a woman's dirty part. My woman instinct is telling me that you're dangerous.」

(Thi, this girl!)

The black shadow gave up cajoling Marie and leaped at her to forcefully possess her body.

Then a barrier that could be called as the wall of Marie's heart blocked the shadow.

(What!?)

The black shadow desperately reached out toward Marie, but he couldn't reach her because an unseen wall blocked him.

Marie yawned.

「It's pointless. Deep down I don't trust anyone.」

(This black hearted womannnnn!)

The black shadow's yell hurt Marie's mood.

「Haa? What's with that attitude after what you tried to do to me? In the first place this room is my important personal space. So to speak, it's a space that is only for me. You're obviously not a decent existence by the time you entered here as you pleased.」

Annoyingly he was unable to possess Marie.

In the first place, Marie didn't trust people.

She had no opening in her heart in a bad sense.

Because Marie was—an unpleasant woman, her heart was locked and he was unable to take her over.

(Then at the very least, I'll deal a wound in your heart that won't heal—)

The black shadow was going to rampage in this heart as revenge. Marie's eyes opened wide.

Her long hair squirmed like living things.

Her eyes shined mysteriously. It became unclear which one of them was the monster here.

「You—you want to rampage in my room. I'll never forgive you. I'll curse you. I'LL HAUNT YOUYOU'RE YOUR DESCENDANTS FOREVERRRRR!」

(Yo, you're saying that!? In the first place I'm your ancestor so you're my descendant—)

Marie's action was already the action that a monster would take.

「This place is inside my heart. I'll summon the strongest existence to kick you out. Onii-chan, helpppp! This guy is bullying meee~」

Marie let out a voice of a spoiled child. Then the door's room opened with a click.

Entering from there was a young man with black aura drifting from him and eyes that shined red.

His hand was holding a metal bat.

「—I'll crush you」

The young man only muttered that before swing down the metal bat to the black shadow without asking anything.

(Wha-!?)

The strongest existence that Marie created inside her heart.

It seemed that existence was her big brother.

The big brother Marie created beat up the black shadow to kick it out from her heart.

「Onii-chan, let him have it! Beat up that guy!」

Marie cheered her big brother.

The black shadow was helpless in front of Marie's strength of heart—this detestable strength.

(You, to materialize a big brother that you created yourself in this room—you must be a ^{brother complex} brocon !)

Marie smiled while watching the black shadow running around.

「That's right, so? I lo~ve Onii-chan.」

The Marie inside this place was honest.

She showed no shame at all.

「Come on, get out of this room quickly.」

Marie lost interest toward the black shadow and yawned. She went back to sleep.

(So, someone like this is my descendaantttt!)

The black shadow was hit by the big brother's full swing. He was thrown out from Marie's room.

(DAMN YOUUUUU!)

—When he noticed, the black shadow had been chased out of Marie's heart.

The black shadow muttered in exhaustion.

(What a horrible person)

He couldn't steal the body of Marie who was sleeping without any care.

Even though this was his best chance, Marie's heart was showing a defense that could be called as an iron wall. He couldn't do a thing.

(Shit! Now what. Even though my descendant finally got her hand on the tool that is containing my thought! The long awaited chance is—there's no way I'll let myself get crushed by a black hearted woman like this)

The saint's necklace was containing the thought of a certain person.

It tried to possess Marie but failed. It was vexing.

Instead the table got turned on him and he was beaten up badly.

(This, this girl, could it be my blood in her is thin? No, there is no way that's the case. Her strength is the real deal. She also has the qualification. But, her personality—it's the worst that I can't take her body!)

While the black shadow was getting irritated at Marie, he noticed a sphere floating at the corner of the room.

(Wha, what's this?)

The black shadow was watching the sphere.

He tried to escape, but at the window there were several other spheres—the spheres with single eye were floating while looking at the black shadow.

It was like they were investigating something.

(Shi, shit! Then I'll return to the necklace—eh?)

When he turned around, the necklace where he was residing wasn't there anymore.

The black shadow was nervous.

He looked around. There he found a slightly larger sphere floating.

The saint's necklace was floating under it.

『Is this what you're looking for?』

(It's talking? So there is something like this too in this era)

Luxion spoke to the surprised black shadow.

『I was right to be wary. Even so, this is a very interesting phenomenon. Let's capture you as a sample.』

(The, there's no way I can allow myself to be captured here!)

The black shadow tried to escape. But the room was already surrounded.

When he tried to slip out from the crack of the door, he got sucked in by something and captured.

(Le, let go!)

『—No. There are many things I want to ask you.』

The black shadow looked at the red eye and shrunk in fear.

(Sto, stop. I have an objective—something that I have to accomplish!)

『I will listen to it too slowly.』

Luxion protected Marie.

But, the person in question was sleeping happily with while drooling and exposing her stomach.

「Onii—I can't eat anymore」

She must be having a dream of eating delicious food.

The black shadow cursed Marie.

(DAMN YOU LITTLE GIRLLLLL!)

.

Part 21

The next day.

I invited Marie to a tea party and checked her condition.

From Luxion's report, it doesn't look like there is any problem, but apparently something tried to possess her.

But—.

「This sweets is the best!」

—Marie is eating cake one after another. She look no different from usual.

It's unthinkable that something had just tried to possess her.

The person herself is really carefree because she don't know about it.

「—I'm jealous how you look like you don't have a care in the world.」

I said that while pouring tea into her cup. Then Marie protested with cream sticking on a corner of her lips.

「Even I have worry!」

「Hee~, what kind?」

I asked her with a flippant laugh. Marie's gaze wandered around while answering.

「Li, like the next test, or the living expense—」

Luxion replied to Marie's worry while floating in the air.

『It doesn't look like that this academy is putting that much importance in test results though. As for living expenses, Master is taking care of them isn't it?』

Marie put her fork into her mouth with an embarrassed look.

「—Like my height or my chest」

I burst out laughing hearing that.

「What's that」

Marie got agitated and spoke loudly because I laughed at her.

「Shut up! Even I am concerned. What's with this. My growth is stopping because I worked too hard, that's just too much. Even though I had confidence in my body at my previous life—」

This girl is starting to boast about her previous life again.

「Nothing can be done about it so give up. Or perhaps, you want to ask Luxion to do something about it?」

If it's Luxion then it feels like he can do even something like plastic surgery easily.

Marie lifted up her face and looked at Luxion with sparkling eyes.

「Luxion, give me height and breast!」

Toward such Marie, Luxion's reply was—.

『I refuse.』

—Refusal.

「—Eh?」

Marie's smile convulsed.

Luxion explained the reason of his refusal doing plastic surgery.

『To begin with there is no need to tamper with your external appearance. Certainly there is lack in physical growth but, Marie is healthy enough.』

Marie cried.

「It's not alright! Please, just a little!」

『No.』

「Stingy!」

I asked Marie while they are doing this childish conversation.

「Why do you want bigger breast and to be taller? Before didn't you say that you're fine like this because you're a beauty already?」

Then Marie averted her gaze from me.

「—Because, you got a pervy look when you looked at Olivia」

「Ha? When did I look at Olivia-san with a pervy look!?」

I retorted back that I never do anything like that. But then Luxion displayed a projection.

It's a scene at the field trip.

There I was looking at Olivia-san's chest.

『Master's gaze moved toward the chest many times. It doesn't look like a coincidence.』

「—It's not what you think. You know, this is already an instinct. It's not something that man can control. A man's gaze will lock on to breast no matter what.」

All men have high performance lock on device.

Marie threw her fork at me who is making excuse.

「So you really looked! Do you like breast that much, you stupid bastard!」

「I like it so it can't be helped! Or what? Do I have to live while lying that I hate it? I'm not so clever that I can live while lying to myself!」

「Why are you looking like you have said something wise? Are you stupid? Aren't you ashamed exposing your fetish like that?」

Marie is angrier than usual.

「I can't lie to my—self?」

I felt a strange discomfort in my chest.

It felt like my heart is constricted. My hand naturally pressed on my chest.

Marie's face peered on my face seeing that I'm acting strange.

「What's wrong? You don't look good.」

Luxion also looked at me.

『—Master's heart rate is going up. He is also sweating—master, please calm down a little.』

I put my hand on the table and shook my head.

「No, I'm fine.」

Marie is worrying for me.

「Re, really? Ah, I'm good with healing magic, so I'll give you an examination.」

Marie grabbed my hand.

Her hand is warm.

I also grabbed Marie's small hand.

「—Leon, really, what's wrong with you?」

「I don't know. There shouldn't be anything.」

For a moment—I felt a really bad premonition.

Just what in the world was it?

Marie looked around inside the room. So I asked her curiously.

「What's wrong?」

「H~m, there is this strange feeling. Do, don't tell me, this room is haunted!? I'm sensitive to something like that!」

—I never imagined such words will come from the woman who was sleeping so soundly yesterday night when something was trying to possess her.

.

Part 22

Around that time, Olivia came to a dungeon alone.

The luggage on her back was stuffed with things like magic stone or metal.

It was very heavy.

But, she wouldn't be able to live if she didn't earn money, so Olivia was working hard.

「Heave, ho」

She challenged the dungeon until deep inside. Magic stone with high purity could be obtained from there. They would fetch good price if she could bring them back.

She had obtained an amount that would make her not worried for her living cost for a while.

「I overdid it today.」

She was walking inside the dungeon with a wry smile. Then silhouettes rushed out from a side path.

—They were girls with exclusive servants in tow.

They stood on Olivia's way.

「Eh, err?」

She tried to run, but the path behind her was also blocked.

「How careless of you to come to this kind of place alone.」

The female student said that. Then she made the servants to carry Olivia on their shoulder.

「Let go! Please let go!」

The female students laughed.

「It's your fault for getting carried away.」

「We caught Bartfalt's eye because of you!」

Olivia was taken to a place with a sign that said it was forbidden to enter.

There was a deep hole there.

The hole was really big. It was dark and the bottom couldn't be seen.

It was a hole that was clearly dangerous if one fell into it.

The female students said.

「——Sometimes even student of academy die in dungeon. It happen perhaps once every few years.」

Olivia guessed what the girls wanted to say.

「Wa, wait!」

「Bye bye」

The female students were laughing.

「It's your fault. You get carried away even though you're just a commoner.」

「Approaching his highness and others without knowing your place, then acting all high and mighty.」

「It's your fault for letting your guard down. —You guys, throw her there.」

The servants threw Olivia into the hole.

Olivia's hand reached out while she was falling.

Why did this happen to her?

Because Julius took a liking to her?

Because she was in the academy?

Olivia shed tears.

「I, I——！」

Then a huge monster approached from deep inside the hole with its mouth wide open.

When she thought that she would be eaten like this, something launched a round light toward that monster. The light pierced the monster and changed it into black smoke.

Olivia was surprised within the dispersing black smoke, then something wrapped around her left arm.

A bracelet was winding around her left arm.

The bracelet shined, then her falling speed gradually slowed down.

When she landed on the ground, she was able to land without getting wounded.

「What is, this thing?」

Was this the thing that protected her?

She thought that it was a mysterious bracelet and peered into it, but then the bracelet shined faintly.

Olivia's eyes lost its light.

Then a female figure appeared from the bracelet.

The female had no flesh body. It looked like an apparition. She peered into Olivia's dazed face.

『—Found you.』

Olivia couldn't resist.

「U, um」

『—You're descended from my blood. You have the qualification to inherit my power—my feeling, and my will, all of them!』

That woman was really beautiful—and scary.

The woman cupped Olivia's face with both hands—but, because she didn't have physical body Olivia didn't feel like she was being touched. But, she felt a very cold sensation.

『Pitiful child. You were discarded into a hole this dark.』

「—E, err」

『And you are also—a very kind child.』

The woman peering into her face was like a specter—a ghostly existence.

But, Olivia was unable to escape.

That female ghost said.

『You are very honest and kind—someone very easy to possess!』

Olivia's eyes opened wide. The woman embraced her body tightly and vanished.

But, Olivia shined faintly—and then she pressed her hands on her head in pain.

「Sto, stop—」

She felt a terrible headache.

While Olivia was in pain, inside her body—she could hear the voice of her heart.

(You hate them right? Those people who dropped you into this kind of place?)

「Stop!」

(You hate them right? Those who enrolled you into this academy—the nobles who irresponsibly left you here?)

「That's why, stop it!」

(Hate more! Resent more! Who is responsible for your situation?
—That's right, it's those guys. Those men! Hate the nobles! Resent
the “descendant” of those people!)

The faces of Julius and others surfaced in her mind.

Olivia held her head in pain, but the voice didn't show any sign of
stopping.

(More—hate more. Hate the nobles—this country!)

「Get out. Get out from me! Who in the world—are you!?!」

She yelled for help from someone.

What came to mind—was the noble who saved her at the field trip.

Then—the voice talked about herself.

(—I am, a woman who was once called the “saint” in this country.)

「Eh?」

(The one who all of you are worshipping as saint—is me.)

Olivia was bewildered. Her headache was gradually worsening
and—she let go of her consciousness.

She collapsed for a while before she slowly stood up.

Olivia—no, the saint got on her feet and looked at her body. She
laughed with eyes that lost their light.

「Finally」

The saint who took over Olivia's body stretched her body and
enjoyed the sensation of physical body after so long.

「It has been so long. It was really long. But, I finally obtain a physical body. With this—I can take revenge to the kingdom! I can take revenge to those trashes who took away everything from me and “Lia”! Aha, ahahaha!!」

Olivia—the saint laughed at the bottom of the dark hole. The laugh continued on.

.

Part 23

The next day.

Olivia was discovered unconscious in the dungeon and she got brought to hospital.

The boys starting from Julius heard that news and rushed to the hospital room.

「Olivia, I was really worried.」

「Thank you, Julius.」

Olivia smiled seeing Julius's relieved face, but Kyle was confused seeing her face.

「Goshujin-sama, it feels like your atmosphere has changed.」

Olivia gently stroked Kyle's head.

「Many things happened. —Many things.」

And then Julius scolded Olivia for entering the dungeon alone.

「More importantly. Olivia, why did you do something so reckless? It's not sane to challenge the dungeon alone.」

The other boys also nodded.

Everyone—they were worried for Olivia from their heart.

Seeing them, Olivia—the saint was laughing inside her heart.

(Hohlfahrt, Marmoreal, Arclight, Field, and Seberg—the descendants of those guys, every last one of them are here. This is convenient. I'll make all of you to be of use to me as much as possible.)

Olivia looked down and covered her face with both hands—and began to cry.

「—I'm sorry」

「Wha, what's the matter Olivia!? Pe, perhaps I was saying too much, but it's not something to cry about.」

When Julius was panicking, Olivia was laughing behind her hands.

「The truth is I was tricked. Some female students in my grade and their exclusive servants, they—caused this to me.」

「What did you say!?」

Olivia talked about the people who dropped her into the hole. She explained it in a way that was convenient for her.

「Even though I actually didn't plan to go too deep, I met them in the dungeon and they dragged me. And then—they said that they don't like seeing me getting along with Julius and everyone.」

Julius and everyone who heard that clenched their hands. Anger was seeping out from them.

Olivia thought.

(That's right, dance. Dance on the palm of my hand.)

Julius placed his hand on Olivia's shoulder.

「I'm sorry. I was wrong to get angry at you without knowing that. Olivia, we will make those female students atone for this.」

Olivia lifted up her face and wiped her tear with her finger while smiling toward Julius.

「Thank you Julius. As I thought, Julius is really reliable.」

When she emphasized Julius's name, the person rejoiced—while the other boys made a slightly anxious face.

With this surely they would also do their best to attract Olivia's feeling toward them.

「Olivia, we have caused you to go through a bitter experience. But, I will immediately take care of this.」

Julius clasped her hand.

Olivia gently wrapped that hand with both her hands.

「I believe in you, Julius.」

(Yes, I believe in you—Julius. You will ruin yourself for me.)

Julius's face reddened slightly. Olivia made a shy face seeing that.

The other boys were harboring jealousy seeing the two's expression. Olivia didn't miss that.

(That's right. Be more jealous. Compete more in order to receive my favor. Work for my sake.)

Just as Olivia schemed, Julius and others started taking action that day.

.

Part 24

—Angelica was bewildered.

「His highness expelled three female students from the academy?」

The report from one of her hangers-on mentioned that Julius forcefully expelled three female students.

The girl who reported to her was anxious.

「It's not just his highness. His foster brother Jilk-dono and even other heirs of prestigious families are taking action. —They are looking for students who are bullying that scholarship student.」

Five people with influence in the academy are searching around for the culprits who bullied Olivia.

Angelica narrowed her eyes.

(His highness is too engrossed with that woman.)

Bullying wasn't good, but Angelica was also able to understand the dissatisfaction of the other students.

Originally the other noble students also wanted to become close with Julius and others.

And yet, they only had eyes on the scholarship student. That irritated them.

From Angelica's perspective, she wished that they would interact with a lot of students to make allies for the sake of their future.

But, right now Julius was too obsessed with Olivia that he couldn't see around him.

It wouldn't be strange if there was a student whose dissatisfaction exploded and caused a scene.

And then—from Angelica’s perspective, Olivia was a woman who seduced Julius.

(She should know her place)

「What had the expelled students done?」

The girl answered.

「I haven’t asked from them directly but, apparently they tried to leave the scholarship student alone in a dungeon’s forbidden area.」

「—Those fools」

Hohlfahrt Kingdom respected adventurer. The act of forsaking party’s comrade was scorned here.

Those who deserted their party member to die would find their life over not only as an adventurer but also as a noble.

Even Angelica would be unable to defend those girls.

The girl looked uneasy.

「Angelica-sama, his highness and others declared that they are searching for the culprits regardless of the degree of the bullying and they will punish them. —Everyone is scared.」

That was just how many the students who had bullied Olivia.

If they were seriously searching for the culprits, a lot of students would get punished.

The students who got scared by that—were relying on Angelica.

Angelica was Julius’s fiancée. She was the one acting as the leader among the first year.

Angelica was also the only one with the standing to admonish Julius.

(Even the foster sibling Jilk is searching for the culprits. I thought that he is a more capable man than this.)

Normally Jilk should be the one admonishing Julius in this case.

Angelica lowered her evaluation of Jilk because he was unable to do that.

(If only his highness is more—no, I should be firm here.)

The other students would be uneasy if she kept overlooking the action of Julius and others.

That wouldn't bring any good for Julius too.

Angelica made that conclusion and decided to speak with Julius.

「I will talk with his highness. Putting aside the three who are expelled, this is overdoing it no matter what.」

.

Part 25

Olivia left the girl dormitory and made use of a house that was prepared inside the academy.

She earnestly requested Julius saying that the students around her couldn't be trusted and he prepared this house especially for her.

Olivia was sitting with Julius on a sofa there.

Their shoulder was touching each other.

「Julius, are you busy recently?」

「Hm? Aa, it became busy from before the field trip. Bartfalt—you know, there was this young man who discovered a Lost Item right?」

That guy and his house went to war with other nobles of the kingdom.]

Julius could only participate in the field trip from the middle was because of Leon.

「—My, how scary. Something like war is wrong.]

Even though she said it was scary, Olivia didn't think so at all in her heart.

(Is he an upstart? There is always energetic person like that no matter the era.)

She talked with Julius while collecting information of domestic and foreign situation.

Julius would happily talk incessantly if she flattered him just a little.

「He is an extreme guy. It will be dangerous to let him do as he please, but Duke Redgrave protected him.]

「Why did the duke do such thing?]」

「—Offley House that was in quarrel with Bartfalt House was also problematic, but factional strife played a bigger role. The duke is at conflict with Marquis Frampton you see.]」

Julius was saying things like 「I was told to join the meeting because it will be useful for my future. Even though I wanted to enjoy the field trip with you rather than watching the dirty strife in the palace」 .

Olivia was laughing inside her heart.

(You don't realize the duke's goodwill to you at all. You are really a fool.)

Based from what she heard, apparently the duke deposed dirty nobles who colluded with sky pirate while supporting nobles with power.

In other words, it was for increasing the power of Julius and his faction in the future.

It was unclear whether it was for Julius's sake or for his own sake—but in any case, there was no doubt that it was an action that also considered Julius's welfare.

It made it easier for Olivia to act if Julius didn't notice that.

「So the duke is someone who will do anything unreasonable without care if it's for the sake of his faction.」

Julius talked to Olivia with a kind voice when she pretended to feel sad.

「Don't worry. I won't let the duke do as he pleases. Even if he is the father of my fiancée, I won't let him use me to do whatever he likes.」

Olivia looked down and grinned hearing Julius's words.

And then she lifted her face.

「You're really reliable, Julius.」

「Olivia. As long as I have you」

Olivia was smiling at Julius while thinking of something different in her heart.

(Even so Marquis Frampton is it—he can be of use)

Muddy emotions whirled inside Olivia's heart.

Credits

Translation Group [bakapervert](#) & [2Slow2Late Machine Translations](#)

EPUB is done by JLN

Download all your fav Light Novels at

Just Light Novels